

Frontispiece to Vol. I.

See this Vol. p. 23



A. Walker Del. et Sculp.

Frontispiece to Vol. I.

See this Vol. p. 23



A. Walker Del. et Sculp.

A NEW
HISTORY
O F
ENGLAND,

From the Time of its
First Invasion by the *Romans*,
Fifty-four Years before the Birth of CHRIST,
To the PRESENT TIME.

C O M P R E H E N D I N G
Its Ancient State under the *Britons, Romans, Saxons, and Danes.*

With a particular Account of each Reign, from the
Norman Conquest in 1066, to the Year 1756.

The Whole divided into NINE PARTS, containing
the Grand Periods of the HISTORY.

By an ENGLISHMAN.
In FOUR VOLUMES.

V O L. I.

L O N D O N:

Printed for J. NEWBERY, in St. Paul's Church-Yard;
and W. OWEN, at Temple-Bar.

M,DCC,LVII.

YESTERDAY
YESTERDAY

YESTERDAY



A NEW
H I S T O R Y
O F
E N G L A N D.

VOL. I.

The FIRST PART.

From the Origin of *Britain*, to the Conquest of the greatest Part of it by the *Romans, Saxons, Danes, and Normans*, down to the Year 1066.



Література та мистецтво
в Україні та світі
заснована на фундації
Івана Франка та Івана
Котляревського

TO THE

R E A D E R.

THIS WORK will fully shew the *fundamental Powers* of the *Constitution of ENGLAND*, and the grand Sources of its *Liberties*; the Extent of the Regal Prerogative, and the Privileges of the People; so as to contain every Thing that is essential for an *Englishman* to form a perfect Knowledge of the History of his own Country. The different *Forms of Religion*; with the *Actions and Characters* of the *English MONARCHS, STATESMEN, and WARRIORS*, are impartially represented. The Alterations in the System of Government have been carefully traced through all their serpentine Courses, till they were brought into one regular Channel; and the Stream of Liberty has been followed from its Fountain-Head, to point out every Obstruction, till it began to flow easy, pure, and undisturbed. Therefore, this may be more properly called a **CONSTITUTIONAL HISTORY**.

To the READER.

TORY than any that has yet appeared; being the Result of many Years Study and Observation upon all the various Authors who have applied their Labour and Ingenuity upon that intricate and interesting Subject.

The Author has also compared the Actions of the most illustrious Personages, and the State of principal Events, with correspondent Characters, and similar Passages, among the Ancients, particularly the *Greeks* and *Romans*. Besides, he has attempted to lead his Readers into one Path which has never been trod before, by embellishing the *Narration of HISTORY* with the more animating *Dictio[n] of POETRY*: For, at the End of each remarkable Period, through the *British*, *Roman*, *Saxon*, and *Danish* Governments, he has made a *Poetical SUMMARY* of the principal Events: And, from the *Norman Conquest*, he has closed every Reign, with a Recapitulation of the principal Actions, and the Characters of each Prince, in the Language of the Muses: Which he flatters himself will be equally entertaining to those of riper Years, and instructive to the younger Sort of Readers.

16 MA 64

A

B R I T A N N I A

Or a Map of BRITAIN as divided by the Romans, and described



A R O M A N A;

cribed by Cæsar, Tacitus, Ptolomæus, Antoninus, &c. with the Military Ways.



A N E W
H I S T O R Y
O F
E N G L A N D.

V O L. I.

*The State of BRITAIN, from its Origin, to the
Times it was invaded, conquered, and abandoned
by the ROMANS.*

THE Constitution of every Country is best learnt from its History ; particularly that of *England*, which was originally a Monarchy under the primitive Britons ; then a Province subordinate to the Romans ; after that an heptarchial Government under the Saxons ; next a Kingdom subject to the Danes ; after them to the Normans ; and now a Monarchy again under the English, the Descendants of such heterogeneous Ancestors.

THE Laws of *England* are the best Foundation of that Liberty which has, through so many Ages, distinguished its Inhabitants from the rest of Mankind : For *Englishmen* have always valued themselves on the Polity of their Constitution, which is so well calculated both for the Honour of the Prince, and the Happiness of the People, that no King of *England* ever pretended to except against

A NEW HISTORY

its Laws, when he was asked the Question at his Coronation, whether he would observe them? And these Laws are so good, that the Subject can desire only their Continuance and Confirmation.

IN all States, there should be some certain Rule of governing, and true Measures of obeying, for the Preservation of Peace and Order in the Community, which is the End of all Government: but the most perfect of human Institutions are defective: ambitious and designing Men have raised Phantoms of Powers and Laws which never had Existence in *England*; while imaginary Constructions have been put upon those which were sufficiently plain and intelligible: So that it is not surprizing, if mistaken Principles sometimes misled King and People, where both might mean well enough; or, if they did not, that either King or People might at other Times have a Latitude of construing them perversely. Therefore Experience convinces us, that some Times have been better than others, and that *England* has been happier under some Princes than others, which Happiness was found under those Princes whose Conduct and Government have agreed best with the Laws and Constitutions of the Country,

As there is no Nation that is unwilling to secure itself from foreign Violences when it is infirm, or to render its Condition more glorious by Conquests when it is powerful: As there is no State but ought to assure its Repose by the Constitution of a good Government, and the Tranquillity of Conscience by the Sentiments of Religion: So there is no Historian but ought to be instructed in all these different Interests, when he undertakes their History; but ought to make known what renders Men unhappy, to the End that it may be avoided, or what constitutes their Happiness, that it may be procured: For *Comines* says, that wise Counsellors ought to admit of no Measures, but what are either precedented, or at least approved and recommended by History: Therefore, *Britons* can never be too well acquainted with that of their own Country; which makes the following concise History of *England* necessary to be read by every *Englishman*.

THE

THE general Deluge happened in the Year 1656 from the Creation of the World; after which, the three Sons of Noah, repaired the Loss of Mankind, by furnishing the Earth with new Inhabitants. *Shem* possessed *Asia*; *Japhet* was Master of all *Europe*; and *Ham* obtained the Possession of *Africa*; from whom all the Nations of the World are descended.

GOMER, the eldest Son of *Japhet*, and his Offspring, who peopled all the Western and Northern Climates, after cultivating *Gaul*, planted a Colony in the Island of *Great-Britain*; which, by the Ancients was accounted the greatest Island of the known World, and is still apprehended to be so, notwithstanding the later Discoveries of *Madagascar*, the *Indian Islands*, and *Japan*. The whole Island is situated between 50 and 59 Degrees of North Latitude; being, at present divided into North and South *Britain*; or, more properly, *England* and *Scotland*.

ENGLAND is of a triangular Figure; bounded by *Scotland* on the North; by the *German Sea* on the East; by the *English Chanel*, which divides it from *France*, on the South; and by *St. George's*, or the *Irish Chanel*, on the West. It comprehends *England* and *Wales*, in which are 52 Counties, 26 Cities, 207 Borough Towns, 803 Market Towns, 2 Archbishopricks, and 9284 Parishes; being 380 Miles long, and 300 broad, containing about 8 Millions of Inhabitants.

THE whole Island was anciently called *Albion*, which seems to have been softened from *Alpion*; because the Word *Alp*, in some of the original Western Languages, generally signifies very high Lands, or Hills, as this Isle appears to those who approach it from the Continent: It was likewise called *Olbion*, which in the *Greek Language* signifies happy; but of those Times there is no Certainty in History, more than that it had the Denomination, and was very little known to the rest of the World: So that what *Strabo* says of the *Massagetae* may be applied to the ancient Inhabitants of this Island, that no Author had gi-

A NEW HISTORY

ven a true Account of them, and that Historians had found little Credit in relating their Affairs; which was due to their Folly; for observing those who wrote Fables professedly were held in Esteem, these Men imagined they should render their Writings more agreeable, if under the Appearance and Pretence of true History, they related what they had neither seen nor heard from Persons able to give them true Information; and that accordingly their only Aim had been to dress up pleasing and marvelous Relations.

IT is with the Original of People, as with the Genealogies of private Persons, they cannot bear with low and obscure Beginnings: These are purely imaginary, those shew themselves in Fables; for Men are naturally defective in many Things, and naturally vain: Among whom, the Founders of States, Legislators, and Conquerors, being little satisfied with their human Condition, of whose Defects and Infirmities they were sensible, have frequently made Enquiries after the Causes of their Merits; from whence the Ancients held themselves obliged to some Deity or other, either on account of descending from it, or because they acknowledged a particular Care and Protection from its tutelary Virtue: But it has been more frequent, that some Nations, to make themselves honoured, and through a Spirit of Gratitude to those who had rendered them some very important Services, have given occasion for these fabulous Inventions. Even the Romans were not exempt from this Vanity: They were not contented with their Relation to *Venus* by *Æneas*, who led the *Trojans* into *Italy*; but they have refreshed their Alliance with the Gods by the fabulous Nativity of *Romulus*, whom they supposed to be the Son of *Mars*, and whom they deified after his Death.

THUS some of the ancient British Writers, would have this Island to have been originally colonized by *Samothes* or *Dis*, one of the Sons of *Japhet*, about 200 Years after the Flood; they even pretend, that he called the Island *Samothaea*; though this is no more to be credited than what has been reported of *Albion*, or the Daughters of *Dioclesian*: But those who have drawn the whole

Whole Progeny of *British* Princes from the Time of *Brutus* to the Entrance of *Julius Cæsar*, seem to have laid a much better Foundation for their Assertions, which, according to *Milton*, have been defended by many, denied utterly by few; for in this, they attempted not only to bring the *Britons* from some noble Ancestry, but endeavoured to make them of one Original with the *Romans*; as they represented *Brutus* to be the Grandson of *Ascanius*, whose Father was *Æneas*.

THE Greeks and others, corrupting the Story of the Creation, and mingling their Fables with them, supposed that after Ages would take those Discourses of God and Nature for the Invention of Philosophers and Poets: But as skilful Chemists can extract healthful Medicines out of Poison, and Poison out of salubrious Herbs; so much Truth may be discovered in those Fables, which were afterwards in all Nations applied to great Advantage by the Priests, and particularly by the Druids in *Britain*, who imposed great Absurdities on the Ignorance and Superstition of the People, concerning the Originals of Religions and Governments, their Institutions and Rites, their Laws and Customs: However, as *Livy* has justly observed, Antiquity may be pardoned, if by intermingling Falsities and Truths, human Matters and divine together, it makes the Originals of Nations more nob'e, sacred, and majestic: For as *Pliny* also remarks, even fally to claim and challenge Descents from illustrious Personages, implies a Love of Virtue: Which Opinion is also confirmed by *Varro*, who says, that such noble Derivations are profitable; because brave Men may believe, though untruly, that they are descended from the Gods; whereby the Mind of Man, being persuaded of some divine Race, may presume more boldly to undertake great Matters, act the same more resolutely, and perform all more happily.

BUT our great Antiquary, *Camden*, was of Opinion that the Descendants of *Gomer*, who had spread themselves abundantly throughout *Germany* and *Gaul*, were the first Inhabitants of *Britain*, who called themselves *Kumero*, or *Cymro*, and their Language *Kumerreg* or *Cymraeg*, which

Names are still retained by the *Welsh*, who are the lineal Descendants of the primitive *Britons*; in which Opinion both *Cæsar* and *Tacitus* concurred; especially from the Similarity of the Language, Government, Customs, Religion, Laws, and Manners of the ancient *Gauls* and *Britons*.

THE Name of *Britain*, besides what has been said of *Albion*, has been liable to as many Derivations as the Origin of the *Britons*. Some Authors have thought it was so denominated from *Brito* the Centaur, or from *Bretanus* mentioned by *Parthenius*: Others confidently deduce it from the *British* Word *Prideain*; from the *Danish* Word *Bridania*, or free *Dania*; from *Prutenia*, a Part of *Germany*; or from the *Brutii*, a People of *Italy*: While there are those who derive it from the *Spanish* Word *Bretta*, or *Earth*; from *Britbin*, a Sort of Drink used by the *Germans*; or from *Brittan* the Son of *Fergus* an *Irish* Prince: but these are all Trifles, in regard to what has been said by *Somner*, *Bochart*, *Camden*, and others. Mr. *Somner* derives the Word *Britain* from *Brydio*, which in the *British* Language, signifies a *Raging* or *Boiling*, like the violent Motion of the *British* Sea. Monsieur *Bochart*, who asserts that the *Phenicians* traded to this Island for Tin, derives the Name of it from the *Phenician* Word *Baratanack* or *Bratanack*, which signifies a *Land of Tin*: Monsieur *le Clerc* says that the *Phenicians* called the *British Isles* *Brithon externæ outer*, or *Islands in the outer Sea*, in Opposition to those in the *Mediterranean*, which they called the *inner Sea*. It is certain that People were known by their Names, before Countries and Places, which received their Denominations of the People; from whence the *Greeks* and *Romans*, by wresting them to the Analogy of their own Speech, imposed their meliorating Names upon all such Countries; which induced Mr. *Camden* to give us the best Derivation of the Word *Britain*; for as the ancient *Britons* painted their naked Bodies and small Shields with Woad of an azure blue Colour, which by them was called *Britb*; on this account, the Inhabitants received the common Name of *Britbs*, from the Strangers who came into the Island to traffic from the Coasts of *Gaul* or *Germany*;

many; to which the *Greeks*, by adding the word *Tania*, or *Country*, formed *Britbtania*, or the *Country of painted Men*; and the *Romans* afterwards called it *Britannia*: For it may be observed that the *Romans* were extremely fond of giving their own Terminations to many uncivilized Countries, and of forming easy and pleasant Sounds out of the harshest and most offensive, to such elegant Tongues and Ears as their own.

THE Accounts that are giveu of this Island, before the *Roman Invasion*, are so very imperfect and uncertain, that no Dependence is to be laid upon them: For though *Milton* has given a Catalogue of 71 of their Princes from the Landing of *Brutus*, 1200 Years after the Flood, to the Invasion of *Cæsar*; he observes, that he leaned only on the Credit of *Geoffry of Monmouth*, and his Afferters; whereto he neither obliged the Belief of other Persons, nor over hastily subscribed his own. However, it is certain that the ancient *Britons* were a brave generous People. Though they were idolatrous in their Religion, and uncivilized in their Manners; this was no peculiar Unhappines, as it was no more common to them, than to the Inhabitants of the adjacent Countries. Of all these Neighbours, they chiefly resembled the *Gauls*: But as *Tacitus* has preferred the Genius of the *Britons* to that of the *Gauls*; so has *Diodorus* preferred their Integrity to that of the *Romans*. The Bodies of the Men were generally tall, and well proportioned: The Women were of fair Complexions and of delicate Features. They were remarkable for their yellow Hair; and their Constitutions were so strong, that *Plutarch* says, many of them have lived a hundred and twenty Years.

THE *Britons* had the Happiness to be situated in a pleasant and fertile Country; surrounded by the Sea, well watered with Rivers, and abounding with all the Necesfaries of Life.

THEIR Government, like that of the ancient *Gauls*, consisted of several small Nations, under several petty Princes, which seem the original Governments of the World, deduced from the natural Force, and Right of paternal Dominion: Such were the Hords among the

Names are still retained by the *Welch*, who are the lineal Descendants of the primitive *Britons*; in which Opinion both *Cæsar* and *Tacitus* concurred; especially from the Similarity of the Language, Government, Customs, Religion, Laws, and Manners of the ancient *Gauls* and *Britons*.

THE Name of *Britain*, besides what has been said of *Albion*, has been liable to as many Derivations as the Origin of the *Britons*. Some Authors have thought it was so denominated from *Brito* the Centaur, or from *Bretanus* mentioned by *Parthenius*: Others confidently deduce it from the *British* Word *Prideain*; from the *Danish* Word *Bridania*, or free *Dania*; from *Prutenia*, a Part of *Germany*; or from the *Brutii*, a People of *Italy*: While there are those who derive it from the *Spanish* Word *Bretta*, or *Earth*; from *Britbin*, a Sort of Drink used by the *Germans*; or from *Brittan* the Son of *Fergus* an *Irish* Prince: but these are all Trifles, in regard to what has been said by *Somner*, *Bochart*, *Camden*, and others. Mr. *Somner* derives the Word *Britain* from *Brydio*, which in the *British* Language, signifies a *Raging* or *Boiling*, like the violent Motion of the *British* Sea. Monsieur *Bochart*, who asserts that the *Phenicians* traded to this Island for Tin, derives the Name of it from the *Phenician* Word *Baratanack* or *Bratanack*, which signifies a *Land of Tin*: Monsieur *le Clerc* says that the *Phenicians* called the *British Isles* *Brithon externæ outer*, or *Islands in the outer Sea*, in Opposition to those in the *Mediterranean*, which they called the *inner Sea*. It is certain that People were known by their Names, before Countries and Places, which received their Denominations of the People; from whence the *Greeks* and *Romans*, by wresting them to the Analogy of their own Speech, imposed their meliorating Names upon all such Countries; which induced Mr. *Camden* to give us the best Derivation of the Word *Britain*; for as the ancient *Britons* painted their naked Bodies and small Shields with Woad of an azure blue Colour, which by them was called *Brith*; on this account, the Inhabitants received the common Name of *Britbs*, from the Strangers who came into the Island to traffic from the Coasts of *Gaul* or *Germany*;

many; to which the *Greeks*, by adding the word *Tania*, or *Country*, formed *Brittania*, or the *Country of painted Men*; and the *Romans* afterwards called it *Britannia*: For it may be observed that the *Romans* were extremely fond of giving their own Terminations to many uncivilized Countries, and of forming easy and pleasant Sounds out of the harshest and most offensive, to such elegant Tongues and Ears as their own.

THE Accounts that are giveu of this Island, before the *Roman Invasion*, are so very imperfect and uncertain, that no Dependence is to be laid upon them: For though *Milton* has given a Catalogue of 71 of their Princes from the Landing of *Brutus*, 1200 Years after the Flood, to the Invasion of *Cæsar*; he observes, that he leaned only on the Credit of *Geoffry of Monmouth*, and his Asserters; whereto he neither obliged the Belief of other Persons, nor over hastily subscribed his own. However, it is certain that the ancient *Britons* were a brave generous People. Though they were idolatrous in their Religion, and uncivilized in their Manners; this was no peculiar Unhappiness, as it was no more common to them, than to the Inhabitants of the adjacent Countries. Of all these Neighbours, they chiefly resembled the *Gauls*: But as *Tacitus* has preferred the Genius of the *Britons* to that of the *Gauls*; so has *Diodorus* preferred their Integrity to that of the *Romans*. The Bodies of the Men were generally tall, and well proportioned: The Women were of fair Complexions and of delicate Features. They were remarkable for their yellow Hair; and their Constitutions were so strong, that *Plutarch* says, many of them have lived a hundred and twenty Years.

THE *Britons* had the Happiness to be situated in a pleasant and fertile Country; surrounded by the Sea, well watered with Rivers, and abounding with all the Neces-saries of Life.

THEIR Government, like that of the ancient *Gauls*, consisted of several small Nations, under several petty Princes, which seem the original Governments of the World, deduced from the natural Force, and Right of paternal Dominion: Such were the Hords among the

Goths, the Clans in *Scotland*, and the Septs in *Ireland*: But whether these small *British* Principalities descended by Succession, or were elective by the Advantages of Age, Wisdom, or Valour in the Families of the Princes, is uncertain: However, upon great or common Dangers, the chief Commander of all their Forces was chosen by common Consent in general Assemblies.

THEIR Language, Customs, and Religion, were generally the same with those of the *Gauls*, before the *Roman* Conquests in that Province, which were much earlier than in *Britain*: But in their Religion and Laws they were entirely governed by their *Druuids*, *Bardi*, and *Eubates*.

THE *Druuids* were held in such Veneration by the People, that their Authority was almost absolute: No publick Affairs were transacted without their Approbation: Not so much as a Malefactor could be put to death without their Consent: So that Religion not only afforded them a Pretence to concern themselves in Government, but authorised them, as they pretended, to intermeddle in private Affairs. The *Bardi*, or *Bards*, were Priests of an inferior Order to the *Druuids*: Their Business being to celebrate the Praises of their Heroes in Verses and Songs, which they adapted to Music, and sang to their Harps. And the *Eubates* were a third Sort of Priests, who applied themselves to the Study of Philosophy. The Lives of these Priests were simple and innocent; being spent in Woods, Caves, and hollow Trees; their Food consisted of Acorns, Berries, or other Maff; their Drink was Water: Which made them respected and admired, not only for knowing more than other Men, but for despising what all others valued and pursued; so that, by their great Virtue and Temperance, they were patiently suffered to reprove and correct such Vices and Crimes as they were thought to be free from themselves; which arose principally from a Belief, that Men would never submit to the Loss of their Liberties, unless they apprehended it was inflicted upon them by a divine Authority.

CÆSAR was of Opinion, that the *Gauls* received their Religion from *Britain*; because such *Gauls* as were desirous

desirous to have a thorough Knowledge of this Religion, came to study it in *Britain*; and the following were some of the most remarkable Tenets among the *Druids*.

Every thing derives its Origin from Heaven.

Great Care is to be taken of the Education of Children.
Souls are immortal.

The Soul after Death goes into other Bodies.

If the World is destroyed, it will be by Fire or Water.

All Commerce with Strangers must be prohibited,
*He that comes last to the Assembly of the States ought to
be punished with Death.*

*Children are to be brought up a Part from their Parents,
till they are fourteen Years of Age.*

*There is another World, and they who kill themselves to
accompany their Friends thither, will live with them
there.*

*All Masters of Families are Kings in their own Houses ;
they have a Power of Life and Death over their
Wives, Children, and Slaves.*

DIS and *Samothes* were Deities equally worshipped by the *Britons* and *Gauls*; but the *Britons* had a very particular Veneration for *Andate* or *Andrasfe*, the Goddess of Victory, to whom they sacrificed their Prisoners of War; they also worshipped *Taramis* as their *Jupiter*; *Teutates* as their *Mercury*; *Hesus* or *Camulus*, as their *Mars*; *Belinus* as their *Apollo*; and *Arduenna* as their *Diana*.

THE whole Country was filled with infinite Numbers of People, abounding in all Sorts of Cattle both wild and tame: But their Houses were poorly built, and scattered all over the Country, without Observance of Order or Distance, by which Villages are composed: For among the *Britons*, every Man was situated according to his Pleasure, either at smaller or greater Distances, as they were invited by the Fertility of the Soil, or the Convenience of Wood and Water. They wore the Hair of their Head long; but shaved all the Face, except the upper Lip. They lived chiefly on Milk, or Flesh which they got by Hunting; but they held Corn in little Esteem.

10 A NEW HISTORY

However, they had some Inland Towns, and others upon their Coasts: The former were only thick Woods, surrounded and fenced about with a Ditch and Rampier: The latter were much more convenient, being founded for the Advantage of Commerce with such Strangers as had Recourse from the Continent to traffic with those of the Island; the *Britons* bartering with them Tin and Hides for their foreign Commodities: Though this was expressly against one of the *Druidical* Tenets. The Inhabitants of the maritime Towns were much more civilized than those of the inland Country, by the Commerce and Frequentation of other Nations; particularly the *Gauls*, who had long before been civilized by the *Roman* Colonies; but those who lived in the interior Parts of the Country were usually covered with the Skins of Beasts; some of them were quite naked; others only over their Arms, Legs, and Thighs; what was naked being painted of a Sky-Colour with the Juice of Woad; which was done by making Incisions in their Bodies in the Shape of Flowers, Trees, Stars, or Animals, either for Ornament among themselves, or by Way of Terror to their Adversaries; or else to distinguish them from all their Friends or Neighbours that came among them.

THE *Britons* being so uncivilized, differed from other Nations in several of their Customs; particularly in having a Society of Wives, and by common Consent; for though every Man married a single Woman, who was always after and alone esteemed his Wife; yet it was usual for five or six, ten or twelve, to have all their Wives in common; especially, according to *Cæsar*, Brethren with Brethren, and Parents with Children: And also in another Custom; which was, that if a Wife was found accessory to the Death of her Husband, she was proceeded against by Fire. As to the former, though it is a Custom not to be found in any other Nation, either civil or barbarous; yet it was not more extravagant than the unlimited Number of Wives and Concubines in the Eastern Countries, or the Marriage of Sisters among the ancient *Egyptians* and *Athenians*: Especially, as the Children of every Woman were attributed to him who married

ried her; though all were employed in the Care and Defence of the Society, since no Man knew which was his own: Besides, it was some Excuse, that by such a Custom, they avoided the common Mischiefs of Jealousy, the Injuries of Adultery, the Confinement of single Marriages, the Luxury and Expence of many Wives or Concubines, and the Partiality of Parents in the Education of their own Children; some of which are Considerations that were regarded by *Lycurgus* the Spartan Law-giver, and all of them have fallen under the Care of other Legislators: But the best Excuse was made, upon this Occasion, by a British Lady to *Julia Augusta* and other Ladies belonging to the Court of the Emperor *Severus*; for this Lady was reproached on account of this Custom among the *Britons*, as infamous in the Women, and barbarous in the Men; but being familiar at Court, and having observed the Obscenity of the degenerating *Romans*, she answered coldly, *We do that openly with the best of our Men, which you do privately with the worst of yours.* As for the later Custom mentioned by *Selden*, it is to this that the Lord Chief Justice *Coke* refers the Original of that Part of the present *English* Law, which orders a Woman to be burnt who has killed her Husband.

As the *British* Governments were confined to certain Bounds and Limits; so were the Inhabitants divided and distinguished by their several Denominations. From the *Chanel* to the *Tyne*, the Country was possessed by the *Britons*, and divided into seventeen petty States, or Kingdoms. From the *Tyne* to the utmost Bounds of the North, the *Picts* inhabited the Eastern Parts over against *Germany*; and the *Scots* the Western Parts opposite to *Ireland*, from which they were separated by a very narrow *Chanel*. But the *Britons*, or Inhabitants of what is now called *England* and *Wales*, consisted of the following ancient States, comprehending the following Counties; many of which are erroneously recited in *Howel's Medulla Historiae Anglicanae*.

STATES,

However, they had some Inland Towns, and others upon their Coasts: The former were only thick Woods, surrounded and fenced about with a Ditch and Rampier: The latter were much more convenient, being founded for the Advantage of Commerce with such Strangers as had Recourse from the Continent to traffic with those of the Island; the *Britons* bartering with them Tin and Hides for their foreign Commodities: Though this was expressly against one of the *Druidical* Tenets. The Inhabitants of the maritime Towns were much more civilized than those of the inland Country, by the Commerce and Frequentation of other Nations; particularly the *Gauls*, who had long before been civilized by the *Roman* Colonies; but those who lived in the interior Parts of the Country were usually covered with the Skins of Beasts; some of them were quite naked; others only over their Arms, Legs, and Thighs; what was naked being painted of a Sky-Colour with the Juice of Woad; which was done by making Incisions in their Bodies in the Shape of Flowers, Trees, Stars, or Animals, either for Ornament among themselves, or by Way of Terror to their Adversaries; or else to distinguish them from all their Friends or Neighbours that came among them.

THE *Britons* being so uncivilized, differed from other Nations in several of their Customs; particularly in having a Society of Wives, and by common Consent; for though every Man married a single Woman, who was always after and alone esteemed his Wife; yet it was usual for five or six, ten or twelve, to have all their Wives in common; especially, according to *Cæsar*, Brethren with Brethren, and Parents with Children: And also in another Custom; which was, that if a Wife was found accessory to the Death of her Husband, she was proceeded against by Fire. As to the former, though it is a Custom not to be found in any other Nation, either civil or barbarous; yet it was not more extravagant than the unlimited Number of Wives and Concubines in the Eastern Countries, or the Marriage of Sisters among the ancient *Egyptians* and *Athenians*: Especially, as the Children of every Woman were attributed to him who married

ried her; though all were employed in the Care and Defence of the Society, since no Man knew which was his own: Besides, it was some Excuse, that by such a Custom, they avoided the common Mischiefs of Jealousy, the Injuries of Adultery, the Confinement of single Marriages, the Luxury and Expence of many Wives or Concubines, and the Partiality of Parents in the Education of their own Children; some of which are Considerations that were regarded by *Lycurgus* the Spartan Law-giver, and all of them have fallen under the Care of other Legislators: But the best Excuse was made, upon this Occasion, by a British Lady to *Julia Augusta* and other Ladies belonging to the Court of the Emperor *Severus*; for this Lady was reproached on account of this Custom among the *Britons*, as infamous in the Women, and barbarous in the Men; but being familiar at Court, and having observed the Obscenity of the degenerating *Romans*, she answered coldly, *We do that openly with the best of our Men, which you do privately with the worst of yours.* As for the later Custom mentioned by *Selden*, it is to this that the Lord Chief Justice *Coke* refers the Original of that Part of the present English Law, which orders a Woman to be burnt who has killed her Husband.

As the British Governments were confined to certain Bounds and Limits; so were the Inhabitants divided and distinguished by their several Denominations. From the *Chanel* to the *Tyne*, the Country was possessed by the *Britons*, and divided into seventeen petty States, or Kingdoms. From the *Tyne* to the utmost Bounds of the North, the *Picts* inhabited the Eastern Parts over against *Germany*; and the *Scots* the Western Parts opposite to *Ireland*, from which they were separated by a very narrow *Chanel*. But the *Britons*, or Inhabitants of what is now called *England* and *Wales*, consisted of the following ancient States, comprehending the following Counties; many of which are erroneously recited in *Howel's Medulla Historiae Anglicanae*.

STATES.	COUNTIES.
1. <i>Danmonii</i> , — — —	<i>Cornwall</i> and <i>Devon</i> .
2. <i>Durotriges</i> , — — —	<i>Dorset</i> .
3. <i>Belgæ</i> , — — —	{ <i>Somerset</i> , <i>Wilts</i> , and the North Part of <i>Hants</i> .
4. <i>Attrebatii</i> , — — —	<i>Berks</i> .
5. <i>Regni</i> , — — —	{ <i>Surry</i> , <i>Suffex</i> ; and the South Part of <i>Hants</i> ,
6. <i>Cantii</i> , — — —	<i>Kent</i> .
7. <i>Trinobantes</i> , — — —	<i>Middlesex</i> , and <i>Essex</i> .
8. <i>Iceni</i> , — — —	{ <i>Suffolk</i> , <i>Norfolk</i> , <i>Cambridge</i> , and <i>Huntingdon</i> .
9. <i>Catueuhkani</i> , — — —	<i>Bucks</i> and <i>Bedford</i> .
10. <i>Dobuni</i> , — — —	<i>Gloucester</i> and <i>Oxford</i> .
11. <i>Silures</i> , — — —	{ <i>Hereford</i> , <i>Monmouth</i> , <i>Radnor</i> , <i>Brecon</i> , and <i>Glamorgan</i> .
12. <i>Diameta</i> , — — —	{ <i>Carmarthen</i> , <i>Pembroke</i> , and <i>Cardigan</i> .
13. <i>Ordovices</i> , — — —	{ <i>Flint</i> , <i>Denbigb</i> , <i>Merioneth</i> , <i>Montgomery</i> , and <i>Carnarvon</i> .
14. <i>Cornavii</i> , — — —	{ <i>Chester</i> , <i>Salop</i> , <i>Stafford</i> , <i>Warwick</i> , and <i>Worcester</i> .
15. <i>Coritani</i> , — — —	{ <i>Lincoln</i> , <i>Nottingham</i> , <i>Derby</i> , <i>Leicester</i> , <i>Rutland</i> , and <i>Northampton</i> .
16. <i>Brigantes</i> , — — —	{ <i>York</i> , <i>Lancaster</i> , <i>Westmoreland</i> , <i>Cumberland</i> , and <i>Durham</i> .
17. <i>Ottudini</i> , — — —	<i>Northumberland</i> .

SUCH was the State of the ancient Britons, about the Year of the World 3950, when Julius Cæsar invaded their Country: From the first Entrance of whose triumphant Arms, we have some constant Light in the British History: For, according to Milton, by this Time, like one who had set out on his Way by Night, and travelled through a Region of smooth or idle Dreams, our History now arrives on the Confines, where Daylight and Truth meet.

meet us with a clear Dawn; representing to our View,
though at a Distance, true Colours and Shapes.

By Heav'n, a World within itself ordain'd,
BRITANNIA rose, divided from the Land :
From *Bryth*, or Paint, the Britons took their Name;
A People great and glorious in their Fame :
Fond of that Freedom which the Brave admire,
They shew'd the Hero's, and the Patriot's Fire :
In Virtue rigid ; and of Soul so great,
They scorn'd ev'n Life to save the dying State.
Happy they liv'd, till wild Ambition came,
And envious *Cæsar* damp'd the *British* Flame.



AFTER

AFTER the Pen of *Cæsar* had penetrated the Gloom which had for many Ages enveloped the British History, the Light which was continued to be thrown upon it was frequently very weak and uncertain, from the Obscurity of those barbarous Nations, who afterwards invaded the Northern Parts of the Island; and from the Ignorance of those illiterate Ages, that passed from the Decay to the Restoration of the Greek and Roman Languages and Learning in the Western Parts of Europe: However, having once found the End of the Thread, it will be easy to wind off the Bottom.

WORTHY Deeds are not often destitute of worthy Relators; for, by a certain Fate, great Acts and great Eloquence have most commonly gone hand in hand, equalising and honouring each other in the same Ages; Greece saw this in *Xenophon*, Rome found it verified in *Cæsar*.

ROME was now in the Meridian of all her Glory, and *Caius Julius Cæsar* the noblest Name in her List of Heroes; when *Britain* was thought an Object worthy of the Acquisition of that formidable State, and the Conquest of that illustrious Commander. The Romans considered *Britain* as a separate World by itself; they were so much unacquainted with its Situation, that they knew not whether it was an Island, or whether it was annexed to the Continent; and they were intirely ignorant of the Strength of its Inhabitants: But almost all *Europe*, the best Part of *Africa*, and the richest Countries of *Asia*, being subjected to *Rome*; and the greatest Part of *Gaul* having been reduced by *Cæsar*; this Leader, whose Ambition was equal to his Glory, meditated the Reduction of *Britain*; which had hitherto preserved her Liberty more by her Situation than by her Strength.

THE Roman Provinces were divided under the Command of three great Competitors for Power and Glory. *Crassus* commanded in *Asia*, *Pompey* in *Spain*, and *Cæsar* in *Gaul*: But the Fortune of the latter was superior to the others: He formed the Design of becoming Master of the World; for which, he first sought to make *Britains* tribus.

tributary, and then threw the Chains of Slavery over his own Country.

THE Britons were connected with the Gauls by the Ties of Blood, Alliance, commercial Intercourse, and a Concern for their own Fate after they beheld what Destruction Cæsar had made among the Gauls and Germans; for among the former, he not only slew all the Senate of the Veneti, and sold the People for Slaves; but he likewise exterminated the very Name and Nation of the Nervii, of whom he had lately slain so many in one Battle, or caused so many as escaped to be drowned at the Confluence of the Maeuse and Rhine, that the Number amounted to 430,000 according to Cæsar's own Account; who also informs us, in the third Chapter of the third Book of his *Commentaries*, that the Veneti had the greatest Authority of all the Maritime Nations in Gaul, on account of their Shipping, with which they traded into Britain: So that the Britons, particularly those on the Coasts, must have been well acquainted with the Character of Cæsar, before he invaded their Country.

CÆSAR had astonished the Gauls, in erecting a Bridge over the Rhine, chastising the Sicambri, and setting the Ubii at Liberty: But this was not sufficient for so enterprizing a Genius; the Continent was too narrow for his Views; and though he neglected to pursue the Suevi, he was determined, notwithstanding the Summer was far spent, to carry his Arms into Britain, because, as he tells us himself in the eighth Chapter of the fourth Book of his *Commentaries*, he understood that the Gauls, in all their Wars, had received most of their Supplies from that Country; though, he pretends, that his present Design was not to finish the Conquest of the Island; but to view the Country, to understand the Quality of the Inhabitants, with the Nature of their Coast, and the Situation of their Ports; of which the Gauls were ignorant.

THE Forces which Cæsar collected for this Expedition, were two of his best Veteran Legions, consisting of about 12,000 Foot and 800 Horse, besides some Germans, Batavians, and Gauls; in all about 30,000 Men; which he assembled in the Country of the Morini, now the Province of Artois in the French Netherlands; being

being the shortest Passage into *Britain*, as it is now between *Calais* and *Dover*: For which Purpose *Cæsar* had prepared 98 Transports.

SUETONIUS, in his Life of *Cæsar*, says, that this Commander would never undertake any Expedition, without first receiving true Intelligence of the particular Situation and Nature of the Country, as also of the Manners and Quality of the People. The Merchants of *Gaul* either could not, or would not give him this Information; which occasioned *Cæsar* to send *Caius Volusenus* in a Galley before him, to make some Discovery of what he thought so necessary to be known.

In the mean Time, the Merchants of *Gaul* informed the *Britons* of the Preparations made by *Cæsar* for invading their Country; who sent Ambassadors to him, with Offers of Obedience, to divert him from his Purpose. *Cæsar* exhorted them to persist in their Resolution; and sent with them *Comius*, whom he had lately appointed King of the *Atrebates* who inhabited the Country about *Arras* in *Artois*, with Instructions to persuade the *Britons* to make Alliance with the *Romans*: But when *Comius* arrived in *Britain*, the Natives committed him to Prison, and loaded him with Irons.

Before *VOLUSENUS* having returned from coasting the Southern Parts of *Britain*, *Cæsar* embarked with his Legionary Foot on board 80 Transports, leaving the Horse to follow him in 18 others stationed at an adjacent Port. The *Britons* expected *Cæsar*; they were prepared to receive, and determined to oppose him. The first Blow at British Liberty was struck on the 26th of *August* in the Year of the World 3950, of *Rome* 699, and 54 Years before the Christian *Era*: On which Day *Cæsar* brought up his Fleet in view of the *Cantii*, or the Inhabitants of *Kent*; who, with the rest of the British States, covered the Hills with their Troops, to prevent their Enemy from Landing; which *Cæsar* would have attempted about the Cliffs of *Dover*, if the *Britons* had not made so formidable an Appearance: Therefore, *Cæsar* bore down about eight Miles farther, either to *Richborough*, or *Deal* in *Kent*, where he was resolved to land.

THE

Before
Christ
54.

THE undisciplined *Britons* were now to encounter the disciplined *Romans*: The one a bold, but naked Enemy; the other the bravest Army of the bravest People, the best able to make Offence and Defence, that ever the World beheld. The *British* Forces consisted chiefly in their Foot; though they could draw great Numbers of Horse into the Field upon Occasion: They likewise used Chariots in Fight, which, with short Scythes fastened to the Ends of the Axle-Trees, gave ghastly Wounds, and great Terror; made fierce Charges upon the Ranks of their Enemies, and were of much force to break or disorder them: Their common Arms were small Shields, and short Spears; the latter having a round Bell of Brass fastened to the lower End, which the Soldiers at the beginning of a Fight shook with great Courage to dismay their Enemy; but their Swords were large; which expressed more desire of wounding their Enemies than defending themselves. In the beginning of a Battle they fought in Chariots, in the Management of which they were very expert: But when they were mixed with their Enemies they fought on foot, retiring upon Occasion to their Chariots, which while they encountered on foot were drawn all together. The *Romans* were much better armed, especially the Legionary Soldiers, whose Swords were like the present *Turkish* Scymitars; their Shields were of Wood, joined together with little Plates of Iron, covered with a Bull's Hide, and four Feet in length: Their Spears were long; and their Bodies were securely covered with Armour. No wonder then, that the *Britons* should be incapable of repelling the *Romans*: Though these fought only for that Honour which they had long acquired, those for that Liberty which they were always unwilling to lose. No wonder if the Discipline of the one was superior to the Spirit of the other; especially as *Cæsar* says of his Soldiers who fought against the *Nervii*, that by their Experience in former Battles, they could as well prescribe to themselves what was to be done, as any other Commander could teach them; and these were the same Soldiers which attended *Cæsar* into *Britain*.

18 A NEW HISTORY

Before Christ 54. In the first Times of the *Roman Republick*, the *Romans* were strangely furious for Liberty, and the public Good; the Affection they bore to their Country, leaving no Obligation to the Motion of Nature: The Zeal of the Citizen robbed the Man of himself; and the Genius of the People was as rustical as it was wild: Though these old *Romans*, as much uncivilized then as the *Britons* were in the Time of *Cæsar*, have been erroneously taken for the most considerable Persons of the World; because their Posterity consecrated the very least Particular of their Actions; which was occasioned either by the People naturally respecting the Beginners of great Actions; or by their Posterity, glorious throughout, being desirous that their Ancestors should be Masters of Virtues, when they were not of Greatness. The Spirit of Liberty was as much predominant among the *Britons*; they scorned Subjection even to the *Romans*; because they considered the Pretext of Alliance only as a politer Term for Slavery.

THOUGH the *British* States were independent of each other; yet in Times of imminent Danger their particular Interests were consolidated; and their Forces united, under one Commander elected for the Preservation of the whole. This was now the Case: The *Britons* perceived the Intention of *Cæsar* to land about Richborough, which was a plain and open Shore; they sent their Chariots and Horse before; who made so strong an Opposition, that nothing but the invincible Spirit of *Cæsar* could have surmounted the Difficulties which his Troops met with from the *Britons*. *Cæsar* says that his Soldiers were terrified, and lost their usual Courage: Indeed, the *Britons* were brave and vigilant; nor would the *Romans* have succeeded if it had not been for their Gallies, to which the *Britons* were Strangers, and from whence they were severely annoyed by the *Roman* Slings, Engines, and Arrows. The *Romans* were safe in their Armour; the *Britons* were naked, and compelled to retire, when the *Roman* Standard Bearer cast himself into the Sea, which exhorted the Soldiers to follow his Example, more for fear of the greatest Dishonour which could happen to them

them by losing their Eagle, than out of Alacrity to engage the *Britons*, whose Love of Liberty inspired them with a Courage equal to Despair: So that the *Romans* were greatly annoyed in Landing, till they formed their Ranks about Five in the Afternoon; when their regular Disposition obliged the *Britons* to retreat; though without being pursued; which *Cæsar* attributes to the Want of his Horse, who were not yet arrived from *Gaul*.

Before
Christ
54.

THE *Britons*, soon after their Flight, recovered from their Consternation, and dispatched Deputies to *Cæsar*, intreating for Peace, offering Hostages, and promising Obedience to whatever he commanded; they also released *Comius* of *Arras*, and sent him back to *Cæsar*, imploring Pardon for the Offence, which they threw upon the Populace: Whereupon Peace was concluded, some Hostages sent to *Cæsar*, and others promised: After which his Ambition must have been highly gratified, when, in a general Assembly, the *British* Princes recommended their States to his Protection; though they were determined to renounce it; to grant that Protection themselves from the Ravages of Ambition, and to recover their Liberties on the first favourable Occasion.

ACCORDINGLY, this Occasion happened in four Days after; when a terrible Storm arose, which drove some of the Transports with the *Roman* Horse on board back again to *Gaul*, and sunk the rest: while a Spring Tide wrecked and damaged several of the Ships and Gallies with *Cæsar*. These Accidents struck a Panick into the whole Body of the *Romans*, who, notwithstanding the Peace, looked upon themselves in an Enemy's Country, without Magazines to support them there, or Shipping to carry them back again. The *British* Princes rejoiced at so favourable an Opportunity of shaking off the *Roman* Yoke, and deterring the *Romans* from any future Invasion; they deserted from the *Roman* Camp, collected their Men together, prevented the *Romans* from getting Provisions, and were resolved either to make an advantageous Attack upon them, or to defer any further Negotiations of Peace till the Winter, when they expected more friendly Conditions: For it is with great Difficulty that a People

who

Before who have long enjoyed the Blessings of Liberty; or been
Christ governed by Commanders of their own Election, are
54. subjected even to the golden Chain of Bondage, or the
Obedience of the most illustrious Strangers. As Men
are inclined to Society; so, as the chief End of it, they
desire a free Disposition of themselves and their Posses-
sions: Therefore, in the Government of a conquered
State, any Loss or Disadvantage which happens to the
Victor, the conquered People esteem it as a Part of their
Adversary's Overthrow; conceiving, on those Occasions,
such Spirits as answer the Greatness of their Hope, and
are suitable to the Strength of their Will, which makes
every Thing seem easy to be accomplished that it desires:
And this was the Reason why the *Britons* altered their
Resolution of Peace, upon the Loss which the *Romans*
had received in their Shipping; especially as the *Britons*
esteemed *Cæsar* the greater Aggressor, by invading their
Country after they had promised to send him Hostages
for their Loyalty, and signified their Readiness to enter
into Alliance with the *Romans* before *Cæsar* set sail from
Gaul: The *Romans* invaded *Britain* for the Aggrandize-
ment of their Empire, or in hopes of Plunder: The
Britons acted only upon Principles of natural Equity; for
what they were undertaking was only their Duty to their
Country, and to their Posterity.

CÆSAR suspected the Intentions of the *Britons*, and
he made the necessary Preparations to circumvent them,
by gathering Corn, repairing his Navy, and procuring
for his Army those Necessaries which the Continent af-
forded: But as the seventh Legion were foraging for
Corn, the *Britons* attacked them so furiously from the
Woods, that the *Romans* were preparing for Flight,
when *Cæsar* appeared, who brought them a Reinforce-
ment, revived their Courage, and caused them to retreat
with Safety to their Camp. The *Britons* intended only to
harrass the Enemy, and weary them out; not to bring on
a general Engagement. *Cæsar* appears here not to have
been attended with his usual Fortune: He, who had al-
ways been victoriously decisive in fifty different Battles,
was now obliged to seek for Security in Retreat: He has
not

not mentioned so much himself, but his Countrymen ^{Before Christ} have done it; and it is plain that *Cæsar* had a great Opinion of the *Britons* military Worth, because, upon 54. this Occasion, he says, that in all their Engagements they performed the nimble Motion of Horsemen, and the firm Stability of Footmen.

THE Weather for some Days prevented the *Britons* from attempting any Thing against the *Romans*; but their Army being now very numerous, they dropt their former Resolution, and were determined to attack the *Roman* Camp, supposed to be on *Barham* Downs, before which *Cæsar* drew out his Army, and a Battle ensued. The *Roman* Discipline prevailed over *British* Courage: The *Britons* fled; the *Romans* pursued; burnt several Towns, and ravaged the Country.

THE same Day, the *Britons* sent Deputies to *Cæsar* for a Renewal of the Peace; to which he readily consented; as he found himself under a Necessity of returning to *Gaul*; however, he ordered them to double the Number of their Hostages; But the *Britons* never complied with this Demand, which carried more the Air of an absolute Conqueror, than the Civility of a pretended Ally. *Cæsar*, impatient of returning to *Gaul*, set Sail from *Britain* the same Night; which was the 26th of September; being attended with a prosperous Passage, and after having been in *Britain* about twenty-five Days; for which the Senate decreed him a Procession of twenty Days, because, they imagined he had discovered, and led them to the Conquest of a new World; though it brought no Benefit either to him, or the Commonwealth. But as the *Britons* neglected to send their Hostages to *Gaul*, or acknowledge their Submission to *Rome*, *Cæsar* was resolved to re-invade their Country; for which purpose he caused Ships to be built of a particular Structure, and made such other necessary Preparations, as strongly denoted that his Heart was entirely set upon the Reduction of this Island.

SUETONIUS imputes the Desire which *Cæsar* had ^{Before Christ} for reducing *Britain* more to his Avarice than Ambition; because *Cæsar* thought the *British* Pearls a precious Commodity. 53.

^{Before Christ} 53. modity. However, having caused *Dumnorix* to be slain in *Gaul*, and leaving that Province under the Government of *Labienus*, he prepared for his second Invasion of *Britain*. For this Purpose he had assembled six hundred low flat-bottom'd Vessels fit for Oars, with twenty-eight Gallies, at *Portius Itius*, which was either the present *Boulogne*, or *Calais*; for *Cæsar*, being deprived of his Horse before, was now resolved to proceed with all his Forces together. On board of this Fleet he embarked five Legions, consisting of 30,000 Foot and 2000 Horse, besides some provincial Auxiliaries; which arrived safely on the *British* Coast, and landed about Noon, in the Month of *May*, without any Interruption, on the Eastern Coast of *Kent*.

THE *Britons* saw this Cloud, while it was gathering in *Gaul*; and they endeavoured to secure themselves from Danger, when it was ready to break. The Confederate States assembled their Forces under the Command of *Cassibelan*, King of the *Cassi*, a Part of the *Catueuchlani*, who had also been invested with the Government of the *Trinobantes*, whose King *Immanuentius* was slain in a Dispute about this Pre-eminence among the *British* Princes, and whose Son *Mandubratius* fled to *Cæsar* in *Gaul*, where, putting himself under his Protection, he sacrificed his Duty to his Resentment; which afterwards disunited the *British* Confederacy, and left the *Britons* to be subdued more by the Policy of *Cæsar* than the Arms of *Rome*. *Cassibelan* had a formidable Army; but, seeing such a numerous Fleet, which *Cæsar* says was now augmented to eight hundred Vessels, and dreading the additional Forces they might well be apprehended to contain, the *British* Prince thought proper to leave the Shore unguarded, to draw his Forces somewhat further up the Country, and vigilantly to attend every Advantage that might be offered either from the Ignorance or Security of the Invaders.

CÆSAR, finding no Opposition, formed an Encampment on *Barbam* Downs, and, about Midnight, set out with the main Body of his Army to attack the *Britons*, who were advantageously posted, about twelve Miles

North-

Northwards from the *Roman* Camp, upon a rising Ground, Before
the River *Stour* in their Front, and a Wood in their Rear; Christ
their Army consisting of Horse and Chariots. An Ac- 53.
tion ensued; but, as *Cassibelan* had no Intention of coming
to a general Engagement, the *Roman* Horse forced their
Way over the River, and the *Britons* retreated to the
Wood which was well fortified both by Art and Nature;
all the Entrances being strongly barricaded with large
Trees felled for that Purpose. The *Romans* pursued the
Britons, who repulsed their Cavalry as they attempted to
force a Passage into the Wood; but the seventh Legion,
having raised a Mound, and forming themselves into the
Testudo, by joining all their Shields together, and thereby
forming a kind of Shell or Penthouse above their
Heads, they violently assaulted the *British* Intrenchments,
and obliged the *Britons* to retire: Though the *Romans*
never attempted to interrupt their Retreat.

IN the mean Time, a violent Storm had greatly damaged the *Roman* Fleet; which obliged *Cæsar* the next Morning to return to his Camp, where he had left *Quintus Atrius* with ten Cohorts, or 500 Foot and 300 Horse, to protect the Ships from any Attack of the *Britons*. He spent ten Days in repairing his Ships, and drawing them on Shore, where he inclosed them within the Fortification of his Camp; after which he returned to the Wood upon the *Stour*, where the *Britons*, who had rallied and augmented their Forces, were re-assembled under *Cassibelan*, who greatly harrassed the *Romans* in their March, and attacked them while they were forming their Encampment near the Wood; in which attack the *Roman* advanced Guard was defeated, and the Tribune *Quintus Laberius Durus* was slain.

THE next Day, *Cæsar* sent out three Legions and all his Cavalry to forage, under the Command of *Caius Trebonius*; who, being attacked by the *Britons*, obliged them to retreat with great Loss; after which, *Cassibelan* found himself deserted by his Confederates, and left only with his own Forces to oppose *Cæsar*, who had brought *Mandubratius* with him into Britain, and prevailed upon the *Trinobantes* to acknowledge him for their Sovereign.

This

Before This Defection from the common Cause, by the *Trinobantes*, induced others to follow their Example: That 53. Confederacy was dissolved, which only could have given Protection to the *Britons*: While the brave *Cassibelan*, thus ignobly deserted by his Countrymen, resolved to shew *Cæsar* the true Spirit of a *Briton*: But, incapable of opposing him in the Field, and determining to act upon the defensive, he retreated to preserve his own Territory, which *Cæsar* was preparing to invade.

CÆSAR, to preferve the Country of his new Friends the *Trinobantes* from the Calamities of War, led his Army on the South Side of the *Thames*, near *Walton in Surry*, where the River was fordable for him to enter the Country of *Cassibelan*, who had posted his Forces on the Banks of the opposite Side of the River, defended the Banks with sharpened Stakes, and others of the same Nature were fixed in its Bed under the Surface of the Water. However, the *Romans* passed the River, attacked and dispersed the *Britons*: After which, *Cassibelan*, finding it in vain to resist the Fortune of *Cæsar*, or, as *Cæsar* says himself, having no Courage to contend any longer, dismissed all his Forces, except four thousand Chariots, with which he greatly harrassed the *Romans*, who penetrated into the Country, and sacked the capital Town belonging to *Cassibelan*, which is supposed to be *Verulam*, or the present *St. Albans*.

WHILE *Cæsar* was so far distant from the Camp wherein he had inclosed his Fleet, *Cassibelan* formed a Plan for its Destruction; and, as General of the Confederacy, sent Orders to *Cingetorix*, *Carvilius*, *Taximagulus*, and *Senogax*, four Princes of the *Cantii*, or *Kent*, to attack the *Roman* Camp. These Princes, who retained their Fidelity to *Cassibelan*, obeyed his Orders, by assembling their Forces, and attempting to storm the naval Entrenchments of the *Romans*: But, as *Cæsar* had provided Fortifications sufficient to defeat all such Attempts, the *Britons* were repulsed by *Quintus Atrius*, and defeated by a Sally which the *Romans* made upon them, wherein many *Britons* were slain, and *Cingetorix* taken Prisoner.

DISAP-

DISAPPOINTED in his View, struck with the Desolation of his Country, and the treacherous Conduct of his Countrymen, *Cassibelan* was obliged to treat with *Cæsar* ^{Before Christ} 53. for Peace, who expressly says, that *Cassibelan* was induced to it by the Revolt of the *Britons*. *Comius of Arras* solicited this Peace in behalf of *Cassibelan*; and, as *Cæsar* was desirous of returning into *Gaul*, a Treaty of Pacification was concluded; whereby *Cassibelan* engaged to give no Disturbance to *Mandubratius* in his Government of the *Trinobantes*, the *Britons* were to give Hostages for the due Performance of the Treaty, and to pay a Tribute to the *Romans*, which was designed as an Acknowledgement of Superiority, rather than a Matter of Advantage, or the Badge of Submission; for the *Britons* never paid this Tribute, nor was it ever demanded by *Cæsar*; though the *Romans* afterwards made the Pretence of this Tribute the Handle for their Invasions, even so late as the Time of *Arthur* in the Year 516. *Cæsar* could not exact any pecuniary Tribute; for he tells us, that the *Britons* had no Coin, but that they made use of Brafs, or Rings of Iron, of a determined Weight, instead of Money.

ALL Hostilities ceased immediately upon the Conclusion of this Treaty, when *Cæsar* returned to his Camp in *Kent*, got his Navy ready for sailing, and finally left *Britain* in the Month of *September*, making a late Arrival in *Gaul*; though without accomplishing what he originally intended; for *Dion Cassius* positively asserts, that his first Resolution was to conquer *Britain*, and reduce the whole Island to a *Roman Province*; but *Tacitus* says, that *Britain* was rather discovered than subdued by *Cæsar*; and even *Horace* and *Tibullus* intimated that in their Days the *Britons* were not considered as a conquered Nation. However *Cæsar* on his Return to *Rome*, as a lasting Monument of his *British* Expedition, dedicated to the *Venus* of his Family a Corset embroidered with *British* Pearls; possibly, says an *English* Historian, as a Tribute due to that Goddess from the Spoils of a People, who, by Tradition, derived their Origin from her in common with himself." But if *Cæsar* had discovered such an Opinion among the *Britons*, it is strange that this great

Before Man, who was remarkable for his Sagacity in all Things, Christ neglected to turn it to his Advantage, by flattering the

53. Britons with their Consanguinity : For though it is certain that the Julian Family boasted their Pedigree from Julius the Son of Æneas ; it is not apparent that the Britons at this Time imagined they were descended from Brutus the Grandson of Julius or Ascanius ; or that Cæsar should think so ; because, in the Fifth Chapter of the Fifth Book of his *Commentaries*, he implies, that the Britons held it by Tradition that they were the *Aborigines* of the Island, and that their Ancestors sprung from the Earth of their own Country.

NOTHING but the civil Dissentions among the Britons could have rendered them a Prey to the Romans : But their Governments being independent, their Princes jealous of each other, and, instead of consulting or confederating in common, warring with one another, this gave them up one by one a Conquest to the Romans.

CÆSAR, who had put to the Sword a Million and ninety-six Thousand Persons, afterwards subdued Pompey, became the sole Master of the Roman Empire, and subverted the Liberty of his own Country, after ineffectually attempting to destroy that of Britain : But he died for his Ambition in the forty-second Year before the Christian Era : While Cassibelan reigned happily ten Years after the Departure of the Romans, without seeing his Country ravaged again by their Return. The Roman Empire was so embroiled by civil Wars after the Death of Cæsar, that the British Tribute was not demanded for twenty Years ; and though Augustus afterwards attempted to exact it, when he was peaceably invested with the Imperial Diadem, he thought it Policy to restrain the infinite Desire of enlarging the Roman Empire, and to leave the Britons unmolested ; which Example was followed by his Successor Tiberius : For, in both of their Reigns, the Britons were esteemed rather as the Friends than the Enemies of Rome ; and, instead of paying a servile Tribute, they were allowed to establish a Treaty of Commerce with Augustus, whereby they were to pay certain Duties

upon

upon those Commodities which they either exported to, or imported from *Gaul*.

CALIGULA, who succeeded *Tiberius*, intended to invade *Britain*, which was so well guarded that he relinquished his Design, after a vain and ostentatious Parade in *Gaul* and *Belgium*; for, having drawn his Forces up along the Coast opposite to *Norfolk*, he went on board a Galley; and launching a little way into the Sea, as if intending for *Britain*, he returned with all the Pomp of Victory; ordering his Soldiers to fill their Helmets with Cockle-Shells, which he sent to *Rome* as Trophies of his Conquest, and for which he shamefully demanded the Senate to grant him a Triumph.

WHAT *Rome* could not effect by Conquest, she accomplished by Policy. The Intercourse between the *Britons* and *Gauls*, made the former very familiar with the *Romans*, to whom the latter were subject: The *Britons* were no longer unanimous in the Defence of Liberty; they made Improvements in the civil Arts by the Example of the *Romans*; but their Spirit was dwindling away, till they had almost lost all Sense of their Ancestors Virtue and Independency. *Claudius*, the Successor of *Caligula*, perceived this Degeneracy among the *Britons*; he formally demanded the Tribute imposed by *Julius Cæsar*; the *Britons* refused to pay this Tribute; and *Claudius* ordered *Aulus Plautius* to invade their Country; who, after some Difficulties embarked his Legions from the different Ports in *Gaul*, and landed about *Rickeborough* in *Kent*, without any Opposition.

TOGODUMNUS and *Caractacus*, the Sons of *Cyno-* A. D. *beline*, at this Time governed the *Trinobantians*, and were at the Head of the *British* Confederacy to oppose the *Romans*; but, receiving Advice of a Mutiny among the Legions in *Gaul*, they neglected to guard the Coast, scattered themselves into different Bodies, and by separate Defeats, were subdued by the *Roman* General, who followed such as afterwards united together, through the Heart of the Country, upon the Borders of the *Silures*.

A. D. THE *Britons* were carelessly encamped on the Western
43. Side of the River *Severn*, when the *Romans* appeared,
and passed the River; whereupon a general Battle ensued,
in which the *Britons* greatly signalized their Bravery, but
were at last obliged to retreat.

IT was necessary for the *Britons*, on several Accounts,
to remove the Seat of War as frequently, and as remote
as possible. They now begun their March through the
Country of the *Dobuni*, which had submitted to the *Romans*; they continued their Rout through the Countries
of the *Attrebatii*, *Catueuchlani*, and the *Trinobantes*, when
they made a Stand towards the Mouth of the *Thames*,
among the Fens and Marshes, occasioned by the Over-
flowings of that River, upon the Coast of *Essex*: But
they were followed by the *Romans*, surrounded on all
Sides, and great Numbers of them put to the Sword.

A. D. *PLAUTIUS* being attended with such Succels, sent
44. for the Emperor *Claudius* to reap the Honour of termin-
inating the War, who embarked at *Boulogne* with a great
Army, and arrived in *Kent*; where he headed his Army,
compelled the *Britons* to a Battle, and obtained the Vic-
tory: After which, he took *Camelodunum* the Capital of
the *Trinobantes*, now *Malden* in *Essex*.

THE *Romans* had now the most formidable Army that
had ever been seen in *Britain*; some Countries had sub-
mitted, in others they had built Fortresses, and the *Brit-
ons*, who retained the Courage without the Ability of
Cassibelan, had nothing but their naked Valour to defend
them against a well-armed and well-disciplined Enemy:
So that many of the *British* States submitted and others,
were over-awed; whereby the War was ended, and
Claudius returned to *Rome*; leaving the *Britons* in the Pos-
session of their Properties, and *Plautius* in the Govern-
ment to prevent them from recovering the Enjoyment of
their Liberties: While the Emperor saw his new Vassals
adore him as a God in *Britain*; and his old Subjects
shew him the greatest Profusion of Honours on his Re-
turn to *Rome*; the Senate also decreeing to himself and
his Family the Surname of *Britannicus*.

It was a sagacious Point of Policy in the *Romans* to A. D. establish Colonies of their own People in the conquered 44. Provinces; as it not only created a Familiarity and a Friendship between them, but introduced the *Roman* Language, Arts, and Manners among the provincial People: The surest Way of rivetting the Shackles of Slavery. This Policy was now exerted in *Britain*; a military Colony was established at *Camelodunum*; and this Part of the Island was then reduced to a Province; after which, *Plautius* returned to *Rome*, and was succeeded in his Command by *Ostorius*.

THE *Roman* Colony was too severe a Curb upon the ^{A. D.} *Britons* not to be sensibly felt, and heartily lamented: 49. The *Roman* Government was in Confusion at home; and the *Britons*, fond of retrieving their Freedom, were continually quarrelling with the *Roman* Colonists: So that, when *Ostorius* arrived, he found Affairs in great Disorder: But he immediately assembled his Army, defeated such of the *Britons* as made any Opposition, dispersed others, and reduced the whole to Submission as far as the *Severn*: After which, he erected a Chain of Forts between the *Avon* and the *Severn*, to prevent the Incursions of the *Silures*, made *London* a trading Colony, and reduced all that Part of the Island lying between the *Thames* and the Sea into the Form of a Province, which he called *Bri-tannia Prima*. By these Measures, *Ostorius* so far intimidated the *British* States, that the Southern Coasts, with most of the inland Parts thereto adjacent, were entirely subdued; while the rest seemed at a Gaze, and to promise Submission at first, rather than any Disturbances, to the Progress of the *Roman* Arms; till, provoked by the Oppression of some of the *Praetors*, and their corrupt Officers, the *Britons* appeared in Arms towards the North and West, particularly the *Iceni*, *Brigantes*, and *Silures*; the two former of whom were soon reduced by *Ostorius*: But the *Silures*, the bravest, and most powerful State in *Britain*, could not be tamed, either by Clemency or Severity.

CARACTACUS, or *Caradoc*, was King of the *Silures*: The *Britons* esteemed him as another *Cassibelan*; 50.

A. D. and the other States, who were determined to oppose
50. the Romans elected him their Commander in Chief; for
his Abilities had been sufficiently conspicuous; because
nine Years together, he not only made a brave Defence
against the Romans, but threatened some fatal Dangers
to the Roman Colonies: Which made Ostorius regard him
as a very formidable Enemy, and worthy of his greatest
Attention.

THE Roman General bent all his Forces against the royal Briton; who, having the inferior Force, endeavoured to supply the want of Strength in his Soldiers, by exerting all the great Qualities of a General. The Country of the Ordovices was more inaccessible than his own: Thither he transferred the Seat of War, and determined to expect the Romans. He chose an advantageous Situation, on the West Borders of Shropshire, near the Influx of the Rivers Clune and Teme, which to this Day retains the Name of Caer Caradoc, where he strongly fortified himself; when Ostorius, who could not restrain the Ardour of his Soldiers, came on to the Battle. The Roman Leaders animated their Men: The British Princes incited theirs to act bravely from all the Considerations attending the Hopes of Liberty, and the Despair of Slavery; Caractacus, riding up and down, telling them, " This was " the Day that would give them either the one or the " other; bidding them to call to Mind the Glory of their " Ancestors, who drove Cæsar out of Britain, and freed " their Country from the Dominion of the Romans." The British Soldiers lifted their Acclamations to the Sky; declaring they were ready to shed the last Drop of their Blood in Defence of their Liberty: The Resolution that appeared in their Looks startled the Roman General, who found his Enemy drawn up on the Side of a steep Hill, of difficult Access, with a little River at the Bottom, and a Mountain behind, where all the Passes were blocked up by Stones, and lined by the best Troops among the Britons: However, the Romans rushed forwards the Moment the Signal of Battle was given; they passed the River; but, in approaching the British Camp, many of them were slain by a Shower of Darts and Javelins. The

Romans

Romans formed the Testudo, and advanced up to the A. D. Ramparts, which the *Britons* bravely defended; though, ^{so.} being built of uncemented Stones, the *Romans* soon threw them down, and entered the Entrenchments, where it was not possible for the naked *Britons* to defend themselves long against the Swords and Spears of the Legionary Soldiers, who completed their Victory by the Captivity of the Wife and Daughter of *Caractacus*, and the Surrender of his Brothers; though *Caractacus* himself, who had escaped for Protection to *Cartimandua*, Queen of the *Brigantes*, was afterwards treacherously delivered up to *Ostorius*, who sent them all Prisoners to *Rome*; where the Conquest of *Caractacus* was declared equal to those of *Scipio* over *Syphax*, and *Paulus Emilius* over *Perseus*.

CARACTACUS, his Family, and Attendants, were led in a Sort of triumphal Procession before the Emperor *Claudius*, who was seated on his Throne, surrounded by the People: The unhappy *British* Prince struck even the Emperor and all the *Romans* with Awe and Compassion: He walked with a settled Countenance, without holding down his Head, or appearing too much dejected at his Misfortune; and, when he approached the Emperor, according to *Tacitus*, he accosted him in the following eloquent Speech. “ Had my Moderation in Prosperity been adequate to my Family and Fortune, then had I entered this City rather as a Friend than a Captive: Nor would you, Sir, have disdained an Alliance with a Prince descended from illustrious Ancestors, and the Chief of many Nations. My present Condition, to me dishonourable, to you is glorious. I was Master of Horses, Men, Arms, and Riches; no wonder, then, if I was unwilling to lose them! For though your Ambition is Universal, does it follow that all Mankind is to submit to the Yoke? Had I been sooner betrayed, I had neither been distinguished by Misfortune, nor you by Glory; and had I fallen, Oblivion had been the immediate Consequence of my Fate: But, if you now preserve me, I shall live the eternal Monument of your Clemency.” Which bold and

- A. D. pathetick Address so much affected *Claudius*, that he
so, immediately pardoned his royal Captive, his Wife, and Family.
- A. D. THE Britons, especially the *Silures*, fired with Indig-
nation at the Fate of *Caractacus*, resolutely and success-
fully opposed the *Romans*: But they now began to shew
as much Caution as Courage; so that the War was shi-
vered into small Encounters; Skirmishes were frequent
and universal over the whole Face of the Country; some-
times, not unlike so many Robberies, in Woods or at
Waters, among Mountains or Fens, as Chance or Ad-
vice, Valour or Temerity, led them on, commanded or
without Command; wherein the *Britons* were so suc-
cessful that *Ostorius*, finding all his Laurels perishing away,
died with Vexation for being unable to reduce the *Si-*
- A. D. *lures*; who were happy to find that their Policy could
53. break the Heart of that General, whom *Caractacus* could
not conquer with his Sword.
- A. D. *AULUS DIDIUS* succeeded *Ostorius*; and *Venutius*
54. commanded the *Britons*: The latter of whom was Hus-
band to *Cartismandua*, Queen of the *Brigantes*, who re-
lying on the *Roman* Favour for her infamous Surrender
of *Caractacus*, renounced *Venutius* for her Husband; taking
Velocad, one of his menial Servants, to her Bed, and
making him Partner of her Throne. *Venutius* was Prince
of a State independent of the *Brigantes*: Some other
Princes espoused his Cause, and *Cartismandua* was obliged
to seek Protection from the *Romans*, who arrogantly in-
terposed to support the Rebellion of an Adulteress against
her Husband.
- A. D. *CLAUDIUS* being dead, *Nero* was at the Head of
56. the *Roman* Empire; who found that the Blood and Tre-
sure necessary for maintaining the *Roman* Conquests in
Britain, exceeded both the Profit and the Glory they af-
forded; which made him desirous of evacuating the
Island: though he was prevailed upon to continue his
Forces there for the Protection of *Cartismandua*; who,
notwithstanding, was obliged to submit to *Venutius*; all
that the *Romans* could obtain in her Favour, being only
the Preservation of her Life.

VERANIUS

VERANIUS succeeded *Didius* in the Command over A.D. A. the *Romans* in *Britain*, who died without undertaking ^{60. d.} any Thing considerable against the *Britons*, and was succeeded by *Paulinus Suetonius*, who was an excellent Commander; and, being desirous of increasing his Glory, he suppressed the Incursions of the *Silures*, stationed his Army among the *Ordovinces*, and was determined to invade the Isle of *Anglesea*, called *Mona* by the *Romans*. This Island was the principal Seat of the *British Druids*; it was well inhabited; and the *Britons* so far endeavoured to defend their consecrated Groves, that a Company of frantic Women and Priests appeared at the Head of the *British* Troops, animating them to fight in defence of their Religion, and pouring out dreadful Imprecations against the *Romans*; who were at first astonished at so unusual a Sight; but, soon recollecting themselves, they made a great Slaughter among the *Britons*, destroyed their Temples, and bridled the Island with a Garrison: But, while the *Roman General* was reducing this remote Part of *Britain*, the *Britons* were preparing to exterminate the very Name of the *Romans* in their Island.

A constant Intercourse between the *Romans* and the ^{A. D.} tributary *Britons*, had so much emasculated the latter, ^{61.} that they patiently submitted to all the Exactions of the former: The *Romans*, it is true, polished the *Britons* in the *Roman Arts*; but they depraved them in their Sentiments of *British Freedom*: They not only subjected them to provincial Taxes, but carried off the Natives as Recruits to foreign Services: Some free *Britons* secretly murmured at these Impositions, especially the latter; because they thought it unworthy of a *Briton* to die for any Country but his own. These Impositions were augmented; an imperial Exchequer was erected in *Britain*; and *Catus Decianus* was appointed Superintendant of the Finances, who committed the most intolerable Oppressions upon the *Britons*; which, at last, spirited them up to a very formidable Insurrection; and this was increased by another concurring Accident.

THE *Iceni*, on whose Confines the Colony of *Camelo-dunum* had been established, were now under the Protec-

A.D. ^{62.} tition of the *Romans*, but governed by a British Prince, whose Name was *Praefutagus*. This Prince was very opulent; and, to preserve his Wealth in his Family, appointed the Emperor *Nero* Coheir, with his two Daughters, whom he left under the Guardianship of their Mother *Boadicea*, a Woman of royal Extraction, and of a Spirit superior to the highest Eminence of Fortune. *Praefutagus* died: But, under Colour of securing what he had devised to *Nero*, *Catus* took Possession of the whole; the Domainions of *Praefutagus* became a Prey to the *Roman* Centurions, and his House to rapacious Officers; his Wife *Boadicea* was most dishonourably violated with Stripes; and his Daughters most infamously ravished by the Soldiers; the Estates of his wealthiest Subjects were confiscated by this unhappy Devise, and all his Family made little better than Slaves. Thus provoked by the heaviest Grievances, and thus invited by favourable Opportunities in the Absence of *Suetonius*, the *Icenians* gather Spirit, and rise up in Arms, under the Conduct of the brave and much injured *Boadicea*: Their Example was followed by the *Trinobantes*, and some other States whose Inhabitants had the Virtue to despise the State of Servitude, however qualified under any other Appellation, and Bravery to recover their Freedom however suppressed under the Weight of the most potent Enemy. The War was collected from many different Channels, and it burst forth in a terrible Inundation, sweeping before it every Thing that made Resistance, till the Torrent was checked by a mighty Opponent.

The *Britons* thought it was less perilous to execute, than to be discovered in concerting their Revolt: *Venutius* joined in the general Cause; but *Boadicea* was at the Head of the united Forces, which consisted of 120,000 Men, who were assembled in the Isle of *Ely*. *Boadicea*, after publickly addressing her Army, pointing out their Grievances, and encouraging her Troops to recover their Liberty, led them on against the Colonists of *Camalodulum*, which was weakly fortified; because the *Roman* Veterans seated themselves there with a View of living pleasantly, rather than defensively. The City was taken and

and burnt, the Temple of *Claudius* destroyed, and all A.D.
the *Romans* that could be found were put to the Sword. 62.

SUETONIUS had left the ninth Legion to awe the Country, under the Command of *Petilius Cerealis*, who was advancing with his Troops to the Assistance of *Camalodunum*: But he was met by the *Britons*, who cut all his Foot to Pieces, and obliged their Commander to fly with his Horse to the Camp, which he made shift to keep by Means of its Fortifications: While the infamous *Catus* fled to *Gaul* for Security. The Colony of *Verulam* underwent the same Fate with that of *Camalodunum*; all the Places belonging to the *Romans* were depopulated, pillaged, and destroyed: *London*, at that Time remarkable for its great Trade and Plenty, was sacked; and 70,000 *Romans*, or their Friends, perished in this general Massacre, wherein none were spared, none ransomed; but all of them tasted either a present or a lingering Death; no Cruelty, that either the Resentment of *Boadicea*, or the Insolence of Success among her exasperated Troops, being left unacted: For the *Britons*, to retaliate the Disgrace which the *Romans* had inflicted on their Heroine and her Daughters, caused the Wives and Daughters of the *Romans* to be hung up naked, their Breasts to be cut off, and sowed to their Mouths; that, in the Agony of Death, they might seem to eat their own Flesh: While the *Britons* made the greatest Festivities in the Temple of *Andate*, their Goddess of Victory.

SUETONIUS, being informed of this Revolution, immediately quitted his Conquests in the Isle of *Mona*, marched through the *British* States, and arrived at *London* with his Army, consisting of only 10,000 Men; which he had Courage enough to lead against the numerous Army of *Britons*, who advanced to meet him, so confident of Victory, that they brought their Wives and Children into the Field in the Waggons that lined their Intrenchments, to be Witnesses of their Prowess, and the Destruction of their Enemies.

GREAT Men frequently find Means to extricate themselves out of the greatest Difficulties, by their Courage and Experience; in which the *Roman* General, at this Time,

A. D. Time, was not more resolute, than he was successful.

61. The *Britons* were in the Neighbourhood of *London*; near that Place the Fate of *Britain* was to be determined, and there is Reason to believe that the Battle was fought in the Valley between the *Thames* and the Hills of *Highgate* and *Hampstead*. *Suetonius* pitched upon a narrow Piece of Ground for the Field of Battle, with a Forest behind that secured him from any Ambuscade in the Rear, and a large Plain before, where the *Britons* were encamped: He drew up his legionary Troops close together in the Center; the light-armed were placed round them, and the Horse made the two Wings: So that it is probable his Army now amounted to 20,000 Men; because the *Romans*, while they were in *Britain*, for every Legion or Cohort, had always an equal Number of light-armed Auxiliaries. The *Britons* swarmed about the Plain in Squadrons and Battalions, exulting in their Numbers, and secure of Victory; being animated by *Boadicea*, who told them that, Woman as she was, her fixed Resolve was to conquer or die; but the Men, if they pleased, might live and be Slaves.

HITHERTO what we have heard of *Cassibelan*, *Carac-tacus*, and *Venutius*, has been full of Magnanimity, Prudence, and martial Judgment: But, on this Occasion, the *Britons* seem to have lost their Character; they observed no Rule, or Precaution; regarded no Experience, or Estimation, either of themselves, or of their Enemies; who took Advantage of their Disorder and Confusion; the legionary Soldiers burst out like a violent Wedge, and overbore all Opposition: The *Britons* had no Leaders to rally them, they placed all their Safety in Flight, and even that was retarded by their own Waggonns: The *Romans* committed a terrible Slaughter; they spared neither Age nor Sex; Men and Horses, Women and Children, were heaped along the Field in so bloody a Scene, that upwards of 80,000 *Britons* were slain on the Spot; while the *Romans* had only 400 Men killed, and as many wounded. *Boadicea* escaped; but, touched with a deep Sense of her Shame and Loss, she poisoned herself: So that here ended the *British* Liberties, and the very Hopes

too which *Britons* might have entertained of any considerable Attempts ever to recover them.

As there are but few Revolutions where Men stop at Terms of Moderation; a happy and an honest State is frequently changed into a miserable and unworthy Condition. The *Britons* who had escaped by Flight from the Fury of the *Romans*, were now to perish by Famine among themselves: *Suetonius* had his Army recruited by 10,000 Men from *Germany*, who ravaged all the Country; and the *Britons* were so far from being able to make any Resistance, that the *Romans* would have completed the Conquest of *Britain*, if it had not been for Dissensions among themselves.

ROME was now declining in her Glory, and wanting in her Virtue: The Forces of the Empire no more regarded Strangers; the Power of the Emperor was felt by the Natives; and oppressed *Romans* held the Place of subdued Nations. *Suetonius* was recalled, and succeeded by *Petronius Turpilianus*: But the *Romans* undertook no thing further considerable in *Britain* till the Reign of *Vespasian*, when *Julius Agricola* was appointed Commander in Chief against the *Britons*, who, since the Defeat of *Boadicea*, had made some head under *Venutius*. *Agricola* immediately reduced the *Ordovices*, and the Isle of *Mona*: The next Year he made some Conquests in the North, and afterwards endeavoured to subdue the *Britons* by winning their Affections, more than humbling them by his Arms: In which he so far succeeded, that the *Britons* imitated the Customs of the *Romans*; and it was now fashionable for the *British* Nobles to speak the *Latin* Tongue, and wear the *Roman* Dress, to which they were before utterly averse. The *Britons* readily perceived the Difference of their State under *Agricola*, from what it had been under his Predecessors: Their Confidence in his Faith, grew as great as the Terror of his Army: Therefore several independent States submitted to *Agricola*, received his Garrisons, and suffered him to erect Forts in their Territories: Which soon gave him an Opportunity of extending his Conquests beyond what any of his Predecessors had been able to discover.

THE

A. D. 83. THE Roman Arms were now carried into the Country of the *Caledonians*, or *Scotland*; where *Agricola* bounded his Conquest on the North, by erecting a Chain of Forts along the Peninsula which extends from the Frith of *Forth* to the Frith of *Clyde*; whereby the *Caledonians* seemed shut up in another Island, and the next Year were defeated by *Agricola*, who ordered his Ships to sail round *Britain*, which he first discovered to be an Island; but, after all his glorious Actions, he was recalled, and privately poisoned by the Emperor *Domitian*, to whom great Virtue was as punishable as open Vice.

AFTER these Establishments, the *Romans* called all that Part of the Island lying Northward from the two Friths, *Caledonia*; leaving the Name of *Britannia* to the Rest which was reduced to their Obedience, and from that Time remained a *Roman* Province, enduring all those Hardships, which are the usual Lot of the vanquished: The *Roman* Legions were recruited by *Britons*, whereby the Island was drained of its native Strength, and the *Britons* disabled from revolting: However, several of them chose to relinquish their Possessions, and retire into the North among the *Picts* and *Scots*, rather than live in Subjection to the *Roman* Yoke; with whom they made continual War against the *Romans*, in Maintenance of that precious Liberty, which was lost to their unhappy Country; and thereby rendered themselves so formidable to the *Romans*, that several of their Emperors were obliged to come over in Person, and oppose the Efforts of their invincible Courage.

A. D. 117. FROM the Departure of *Agricola*, nothing material happened in *Britain* till the Reign of *Adrian*, when the *Caledonians* made an Irruption into the *Roman* Province; A. D. 120. which occasioned the Emperor to come over in Person, to subdue these fierce and troublesome People; but, finding it impossible, he left all the Country between *Agricola's Wall* and the *Tyne* to the *Caledonians*, in hopes by thus enlarging their Bounds to keep them quiet; for which Purpose, he caused a Rampart of Earth to be thrown up, from the Mouth of the *Tyne* to *Solway* Frith about eighty Miles long; after which, he returned

to

~~to Rome, and was honoured with the Title of Restorer of A. D.~~
~~Britain.~~

120.

FROM this Time, the Southern Britons were daily Romanizing themselves, and were now made Denizens of *Rome*; which made the Northern Britons consider them as much their Enemies as the *Romans* were; so that they made several Irruptions into the *Roman Provinces*, till the Emperor *Antoninus* sent *Lollius Urbicus* to suppress their In-^{A. D.} vaitions, who raised another Rampart on the Neck of ^{138.} Land between the two Friths where *Agricola* had formerly built his Fortresses; whereby the *Caledonians* were compelled to remain peaceably in their Country till the Reign of the Emperor *Commodus*: But, under the Reign of Mar-^{A. D.} *Aurelius*, the Christian Religion was embraced by ^{165.} *Lucius*, King of one of the *British* independent States, whose Example soon made it general.

THE *Caledonians* renewed their Incursions; which ob-^{A. D.} liged *Commodus* to send over *Ulpian Marcellus*, a General ^{181.} of great Reputation, who had the Success to put an End to a dangerous War: Though, under the Emperor *Severus*, the *Caledonians* invaded the *Roman Province* again; which occasioned the Emperor to come over in Person, ac-^{A. D.} companied by his Sons *Caracalla* and *Geta*, with a nu- ^{205.} merous Army, intending to put an End to the continual Commotions in *Britain* by the entire Conquest of the North. *Severus* penetrated into the Country of the *Caledonians*, and defeated them in some Engagements: But, finding himself unable to reduce them, after losing 50,000 Men, he confined himself, in Imitation of *Adrian*, by erecting a new Wall, in the Place where that Emperor threw up his Rampart; which the *Britons* called *Mursever*, or *Severus's Wall*; but the *English* afterwards called it the *Picts* Wall, because it divided the *Picts* from the *Britons*. *Severus*, on Account of this Expedition, assumed the Title of *Britannicus Maximus*, and died at *York*; being succeeded by his two Sons, who concluded a Peace with the *Caledonians*, and returned to *Rome*: After which, nothing considerable happened in *Britain* for a great Number of Years; except that the Emperor *Probus*, after subduing the *Vandals* and *Burgundians*, sent great Num-

120.

A. D. Numbers of them here, who are thought to have settled
276. themselves among the *Iceni*, in Cambridgeshire.

UPON the Divisions in the *Roman Empire*, which was grown a Prey to their Armies, several Aspirers to the imperial Purple, decided their Battles in Gaul. *Constantius*, Emperor of the West, having *Britain* in his Division,

A. D. came over to appease some Commotions among the Northern People, who were now distinguished by the Names of *Deucaledonians* and *Vecturions*: But this Emperor died at *York* in the Beginning of his Expedition; being succeeded by *Constantine* his Son, who was born in *Britain*, and is reported to have had *Helena* Daughter of *Coel*, a British Prince, for his Mother.

THE *Roman Empire* was re-united under *Constantine*, during whose Reign the *Britons* lived in profound Tranquility. Before this Time, *Britain* was divided into two Provinces only: But this Emperor divided it into three. The first was called *Britannia Prima*, because first conquered; containing all the Country South of the *Thames*, and having *London* for its Capital, which was now very considerable for its Commerce. The second, named *Britannia Secunda*, because next subdued, contained all the Country West of the *Severn* to the *Irish Sea*, now called *Wales*, which had *Ista* or *Caer Leon* for its Capital. The third Province was distinguished by the Name of *Maxima Cæsarjensis*; containing all the Country lying Northward of the *Thames*, and Eastward of the *Severn*; having *York* for its Capital: But this Province was afterwards subdivided into two Parts; the Southern Part retaining the old Name of *Maxima Cæsariensis*; and the other, more Northward, being called *Flavia Cæsariensis*. In these Provinces were twenty-eight large Cities, which in Time became the Seats of so many Bishops.

AFTER the Natives of the Country were draughted into the legionary or auxiliary Troops, and *Britain* had entirely submitted to the *Roman Yoke*, a great Number of foreign Families were transplanted there, who had so far intermixed with the Natives, that they became one People, governed by *Roman Officers*: So that they all deserved the Name of *Britons*; because, the *Romans*, and other Foreigners,

Foreigners, as well as the Natives, had the same Interest A. D. to defend *Britain*, which became their common Country. 307.

The *Roman Empire*, under *Constantine*, was divided into four large Praefectures: *Britain*, which before was governed by the Emperor's Proprætor, or Lieutenant, now became a Province subject to the Praefect of *Gaul*, and governed by his Deputy, who, with several inferior Officers, managed all civil and criminal Matters, according to the *Roman Laws*: But the military Government after the Reign of *Constantine* was under the Command of three General Officers, called the Duke of *Britain*, who was to protect the Northern Parts, from the Irruptions of the *Picts* and *Scots*; the Count of *Britain*, who was to preserve Peace in the inland Parts, on the Western Coasts; and the Count of the *Saxon* Coasts, who was to guard the Eastern and Southern Coasts from the frequent Inroads of the *Saxon* Pirates: All these Generals having a Body of Troops, consisting of about 20,000 Foot, and 2000 Horse.

BRITAIN affords nothing remarkable from the Death A. D. of *Constantine* to the Reign of *Valentinian* the First; but it 364. was subject to many Extortions from the *Roman Officers*, and frequently invaded by the *Caledonians*, who were now denominated *Picts*, *Scots*, and *Atacots*. These, assisted by the *Franks* and *Saxons*, broke through the *Roman Pretentures*, and committed great Ravages in the Northern Province: Upon which, *Valentinian* sent over his Lieutenant *Theodosius*, with a numerous Army, to suppress the Invasion; who defeated his Enemies, refortified A. D. 367. the Pretentures, and enlarged the *Roman Territories* with a great Tract of Land belonging to the *Picts*, which he erected into a fifth Province, calling it *Valencia*, in honour of *Valentinian*.

FROM this Time, the *Britons* sunk into the lowest Degree of Degeneracy: The *Romans* had long held them in a State of Servitude; but all the Protection they met with from the Arms of their Masters was owing to Advantages arising from their servile Duties: They were without any Idea of Liberty; nor had they any other Possession of Property than what they held by a precarious

Tenure

A. D. Tenure from their insolent Inmates: They were become
367. a Race of Slaves, sunk to a State of Impotence, not
only reproachful to them as *Britons*, but unworthy of
them as Men: So that they were incapable of defending
themselves, and were soon to be deprived of any Protec-
tion from the *Romans*.

As the *Roman Forces* decreased in *Britain*, occasioned
by the Disputes between the several Competitors for the
Empire; the *Picts* and *Scots* still the more boldly infested
the Northern Parts, crossing the Friths, and hovering
about the Coasts, in little Boats of Wicker, covered with
Leather; filling all where they came with Spoil and
Slaughter; till repelled, by what remained of the *Roman*
Forces, they retired still into their Northern Nest, watch-
ing for the next Occasion of Invasion, and Revenge upon
the neighbouring *Britons*, whenever the *Romans* were
drawn away into remoter Parts of the Island. These En-
terprizes were often repeated, and as often repressed, for

A. D.
403. some Time; till, in the Reign of *Honorius*, upon the
mighty Inundations of those barbarous Northern Nations,
which under the Names of the *Goths* and *Vandals*, invad-
ed the *Roman Empire* with infinite Numbers, Fury,
and Danger to *Rome* itself, all the *Roman Legions* were at
last drawn out of *Britain*, with most of the *Britons* that
were fit for military Service, to relieve the Emperor.
The *Britons* then erected themselves into an independent
Government, electing *Constantine* for their Sovereign, and
adorning him with all the Distinctions of imperial Dign-
ity; who afterwards passed all his Army over to the
Continent, where he procured himself to be associated in
the Command of the Empire by *Honorius*; but this EVA-
CUATION gave the finishing Blow to the *Roman Interest* in
Britain; especially, as most of these *Britons* despised their
degenerated Countrymen; and, instead of returning to their
own Country, settled in *Armorica*, now *Bretagne* in *France*.

HONORIUS afterwards sent a Legion twice to the
Assistance of the *Britons*, who drove back the *Picts*, and
returned to the Continent; after which the *Picts* and *Scots*
renewed their Depredations, drove the *Britons* from the
Wall of *Severus*, and conquered all the Country between
that

that and the Forts of *Agricola*. The *Britons* again applied to *Honorius* for Relief: But *Rome* was unable to defend itself; being soon after reduced by *Alaric* the *Goth*. The *Britons* sent over their miserable Epistle for Assistance to the renowned *Ætius*, General of the *Roman* Forces, who had by several remarkable Successes, for a Time, repelled the Violence of the *Gothic* Arms; which was addressed in these Words; “To *Ætius*,
“ thrice Consul; the Groans of the *Britons*;” informing him, after other lamentable Complaints, “That
“ the barbarous People drove them to the Sea, and the Sea
“ back to the barbarous People; between which, they had
“ only left the Choice of these two Deaths, either to be
“ killed by the one, or drowned by the other.” But, having no Hopes given them by the *Roman* General of any Succours from that Side, they began to consider what other Nation they might call over to their Relief; and this occasioned the Introduction of the *Saxons* into *England*, of which the *Romans* had been in Possession 443 Years.

THUS expired the mighty Empire of *Rome*; first in *Britain*, soon afterwards in *Italy* itself: An Empire which bore the principal Sway in this Island; though *Britain* was never thoroughly subdued by the *Romans*; with whose Empire also expired every Thing in the Western World which before was chiefly *Roman*; such as Learning, Valour, Eloquence, History, Civility, and even Language itself; all these, with equal Pace, diminishing and decaying together.

As to the Religion of the ancient *Britons*, it has been already observed, that it was *Druidism*, founded upon the *Pythagorean* System: But this was early eradicated by the Promulgation of the Christian Doctrine, which is said to have been first established in *Britain*, either by St. *Paul* soon after the Death of *Christ*; or by *Joseph of Arimathea*, in the sixty-third Year of the Christian Æra, who, according to *William of Malmesbury*, erected *Glastonbury* Abbey, in honour of the blessed Virgin. But as the *Romans* were not generally converted to the Christian Religion, till the Reign of *Constantine the Great*; and as

the

A. D. the *Druidical* Religion afforded many Advantages to the
446. *British* Priests over the Rest of the People, whom they
kept in a State of superstitious Ignorance; the Tenets of
Christianity were not far disseminated in *Britain*, till the
Conversion of *Constantine*, about the Year of *Christ* 318, when the *Romans* every where followed the Example of
their Emperor, who granted many Indulgencies to the
Britons, among whom Christianity soon bore down every
Appearance of their ancient Paganism; the Temples of
their Idolatry, and the Seats of their *Druuids* were de-
stroyed; while Christian Churches were erected, and se-
veral Bishopricks established, in the different Parts of the
Island, where the *Roman Flamens*, or *British Druids* were
settled: Though, under the Persecutions of *Dioclesian* and
Maximian, St. *Alban* suffered Martyrdom, about the
Year 303, in support of Christianity, at *Verulam*, which,
from this Proto-martyr of the *British* Church, has since
been called *St. Albans*. Some of the *British* Bishops were
inclined to Pelagianism; which Heresy was soon abolished
by the Interposition of two *Gallican* Bishops, who, before
their Departure, erected Schools, which produced many
Ecclesiasticks remarkable for their Learning and Piety.
But it is observable that the first Bishops of *Britain*, ne-
ither paid or acknowledged any Supremacy to the See of
Rome; which, in succeeding Ages, accumulated all the
Power of the Church entirely to herself; whereby she
established a Superiority productive of her own Supersti-
tion, and destructive of the civil Rights, as well as of
any religious Toleration of Conscience, among other
Nations.

In Freedom's sacred Cause the *Britons* bled,
Till *Rome* in shameful Bondage *Britain* led.
Yet mighty *Julius* fear'd his naked Foe,
While *Cassibelan* laid his Eagles low.
The *Britons*, if united, had prevail'd;
Nor brave *Caractacus* in Glory fail'd:
Venutius had preserv'd the *British* Race;
Nor *Boadicea* seen her foul Disgrace. Curse

Curse on the Arts by *Agricola* spread;
They robb'd the Heart, while they enrich'd the 446. A. D.

Head:

The Britiſh Virtue lost in *Latian* Pride,
Freedom took Wing, and *Britiſh* Glory dy'd.
Then *Rome* no more her Empire could command,
And *Gothic* Rudeness overspread the Land.

*From the Beginning of the Saxon Heptarchy in
the Year 455, to the Reduction of the seven
States into one Kingdom by Egbert, in the
Year 829.*

THE Britons were like their native Oaks transplanted into foreign Soils, where they lost their Strength and Beauty: They had learned the *Roman* Civility only to suffer more from the *Saxon* Barbarity: And they were but just adopted Christians, when it was their hard Fate to fall a Prey to a foreign Race of Pagans.

As soon as the *Romans* left *Britain* to its ancient Inhabitants, the *Scots* and *Picts* renewed their Incursions; while the *Britons*, sunk into the lowest State of Degeneracy, lost to all Sense of publick Virtue, and Strangers to every Sentiment of Liberty, sought Refuge in Subjection. They had elected several Princes, destroyed many of them, regarded none; till *Vortigern*, Count or King of the *Dunmonii* was elected their Chief, rather than sole Monarch, who became popular, because his Vices sort'd well with those of the People. *Vortigern* was too much addicted to Luxury, to prove the Protector of his People by his Bravery: The *Scots* and *Picts* formed a joint Invasion; the *Britons* trembled at the approaching Storm; they

A. D. they found no Shelter from their Prince, and a general
447. Council was held to provide some Means of Defence
against their powerful Invaders; when, by the Artifices of
Vortigern, it was determined to send a Deputation to the
Saxons, desiring their Assistance against the *Scots* and
Picts.

VORTIGERN represented to the *Britons*, that the *Romans* were the sole Cause of their Misfortunes, by draining the Island of all her Youth capable of bearing Arms: That, from the little Union between the principal Members of the State, he had no Hopes of rescuing his Subjects from their present Calamities: Concluding, that the *Britons* could not exist without a foreign Aid; and that none but the *Saxons* were in Condition to give them Assistance. The Prince succeeded; the Assembly concurred in his Opinion; and this brought on the total Ruin of their Country. It was resolved, that some Lands should be assigned to the *Saxons*; and, after great Debate, the Isle of *Thanet* in *Kent* was appointed for the Residence of these Auxiliaries; who were also to be allowed a certain Pay from the *Britons* for granting them their Assistance. Whether Variety was thought an Abatement of Evil; or whether Men in Despair fondly imagine a Kind of Refuge from one Misery to another; it frequently happens that Men, through Impatience, or Timidity, esteem the present Misfortunes the heaviest which can beset them; and, to remove the Evil which they suffer, are ready to pull on a greater: This was the Case of the misguided *Britons*; who were soon convinced of this invariable Maxim, that *Mercenaries always conquer for themselves*; for, as *Xenophon* observed to the *Athenians*, it would be more for their Reputation abroad to trust the Fortune of their State to the Courage and Valour of their own Citizens, than in the Hands of Foreigners. Ambassadors were sent to the *Saxons*, who accepted the Invitation, arrived in the Country, and soon acquired the whole Possession of it to themselves.

A. D. THE *Saxons* had rendered themselves a formidable
448. People, even to the *Romans* while they were in Possession
of *Britain*; and when the *Britons* sent for their Assistance,
they

they were in Possession of large territorial Dominions in A. D. Germany; particularly of *Westphalia, Saxony, East and 448.* *West Friesland, Holland and Zealand*; the Center of their Empire being at *Brunswick*. The *Saxons* were a Branch of the *Asiatic Goths*, or *Getæ*; who under the Conduct of *Woden*, or *Odin*, possessed all those mighty Tracts of Land surrounding the *Baltic Sea*. These *Gothic Nations* were divided into several Branches; of which the *Saxons* were the Chief, who received their Name from their Weapons or Swords; these being of two Sorts; a long one worn by their Side, or at their Back; and another shorter, serving for a Bayonet or Dagger: Both were of the Shape of a *Cutlafs*, and were called *Seaxes*, which in the *Saxon Language* signified a Weapon or Sword.

THE *Saxons* were again divided into several Branches, as they settled in different Countries; But the *Suevi* were the most remarkable People, both for their military Discipline, and their civil Polity. Before the Wars of *Cæsar* in *Gaul*, the *Suevi* had invaded and subdued a great Part of *Germany*; where they had rendered themselves so formidable, that when the *German Nations* on the *Rhine* sent Ambassadors to *Cæsar*, they told him, “ they would “ neither seek War with the *Romans*, nor avoid it; that “ they esteemed themselves as valiant as any other Na- “ tion, excepting only the *Suevi*; for whom the very “ immortal Gods were not a Match;” and *Cæsar* seems to have dreaded them, as he never attempted to invade their Country.

THESE *Suevi* became afterwards divided into two separate Nations; both numerous, brave, and powerful. Those towards the South-East of *Germany* were called *Franks*, from their great Love of Liberty; who, on the Decline of the *Roman Empire*, invaded *Gaul*, under the Conduct of *Pharamond*, about the Year 420; where they established the Kingdom of *France*: While the other Branch of the *Suevi*, more properly understood by the Name of *Saxons*, extended their Seats all over the Coasts of the North-West Sea; from whence they committed several Depredations upon Merchants at Sea, and also upon

48 A NEW HISTORY

A.D. upon the maritime Coasts of *Britain*; when *Vortigern*
448. applied to them for their Assistance, and gave them an Opportunity of establishing the Kingdom of *England*.

THE *Britons* had been subjected by the *Romans*, who were obliged to abandon their Country, without leaving behind them the *Roman* Form of Government; they were for a long Time the Elm which supported the *British* Vine; but as the Tree decayed, the Shrub perished. Though when the *Saxons* came, they spread their Root so deep into the *British* Soil, that it has flourished in a glorious Manner beyond the Corruption of Time, from the first Introduction of the *Saxons* under *Hengist* and *Horsa*, to the Reign of his present *Britannic* Majesty, King *George* the Second, the great Descendant of this principal Branch of the *Saxon* Family: And it should be observed, that the *Franks*, *Saxons*, and *Alemanni*, all Branches of the *Suevi*, are now in Possession of *France*, *Britain*, and *Germany*; the three most powerful Countries in *Europe*: While the *Romans*, and their *Gothic* Conquerors, are vanished into nothing.

THE Religion of these *Saxons* was Paganism; nor were they converted to Christianity till about the End of the sixth, or Beginning of the seventh Century. Their principal Gods were the Sun, Moon, *Tuisco*, *Woden*, *Thor*, *Friga* or *Fræa*, and *Seater* or *Crodo*: To whom they consecrated the seven Days of the Week; as appears by the present Names of these Days among the *Germans*, *Flemish*, and *English*. *Tuisco* is said to be the Grandson of *Japhet*, and to have first peopled the North of *Europe*; the Word *Teutsch*, or *Dutch*, as the *Germans* call themselves, being probably derived from *Tuisco*. The God *Thor* was the same among the *Saxons*, as *Jupiter* among the *Romans*, or *Taramis* among the *Britons*, that is, the *Thunderer*. *Woden* was the God of War; because under his Conduct the first *Saxons* made their Migrations and Conquests: He was likewise considered as the Founder of their chief Families, who gloried as much in deriving their Descent from *Woden*, as the *Romans* did in tracing their Genealogy from *Romulus*. *Fræa* was the Wife of *Woden*, and was worshipped as the *Venus* of the *Saxons*.

Seater

Seater was considered as their *Saturn*. Besides, they A. D. had a Goddes whom they termed *Easter*, and another 448. *Herthus*: They consecrated the Month of *April* to the former, which still gives Name to the Festival of *Easter*, as it generally falls in that Month; and by the latter they meant the Earth, or the *Roman Cybele*.

As to their form of Government, it was rather aristocratical than monarchical; for Success in War gave Precedence in Rank, and approved Wisdom Authority in Council. Their Dominions on the Continent, were divided into twelve Governments, or Provinces; each of which had a Chief accountable to the general Assembly of the Nation: But, in Time of War, they elected a General who commanded their Armies, and was invested with almost sovereign Power; which ceased at the End of the War, like that of the *Roman Dictator*. The whole Body of the People were consulted on important Affairs; particularly War and Peace: Their Approbation was expressed by the Clangor of their Arms; and by a tumultuous Noise they shewed their Disapprobation: But the more immediate Busines of these Assemblies was to appoint the Chiefs who were to preside in their several Divisions, as Shires, Hundreds, Streets, and Villages; each of these Chiefs having a Hundred of their Commons as their Assessors, or Jurors. They were so fond of military Honour, that they held their public Consultations generally in Armour; they were the first People who gave rise to the Science of Heraldry, by rendering the Devices upon their Shields hereditary; and no Man could wear Arms without the public Permission. As *Romulus* distinguished his People according to their Honour and Quality, giving the better Sort the Name of *Patricii*, and the rest the common Title of *Plebeii*: So we find the *Saxons* distinguishing themselves into the three Ranks of Noblemen, Freemen, and Slaves. The Manners of the *Saxons*, in general, were like what *Tacitus* describes of the ancient *Germans*; they were remarkable for their Hospitality, their Plainnes, and Simplicity of Food, as also for their Love of martial Exercises. They were considered by the *Romans* as the bravest of all

A.D. the *German* Nations, whom they excelled in Magnanimity of Mind, Strength of Body, and Firmness of Constitution: They were clad in strong Armour; their Arms were long Spears, and small Shields; with Swords like Cutlasses as before mentioned: Their Cloaths were Casocks loose, and generally of Linen Cloth, trimmed with broad Borders, wrought of several Colours: Their Hair hung down upon their Shoulders: And they were remarkable for the Beauty and Grace of their Persons: But, though they were brave in the Field, they principally relied on their Power at Sea.

SUCH were the People who were now to be introduced into *Britain*; these were the Men who reared up the solid Fabric of *British* Liberty; these were the Ancestors of *Englishmen*, who conveyed to their Posterity, the best, fairest, and happiest Form of Government, that was ever instituted for the Welfare, Safety, and Honour of Society.

THE *Saxons* must be considered as Soldiers of Fortune, numerous in their Tribes, and ready to embrace any advantageous Settlement: They knew what was to be found in *Britain*; and, upon the Arrival of the *British* Ambassadors, *Witigifl*, General of the *Saxons*, summoned an Assembly to hear what the *Britons* had to propose. The *Britons* requested the Protection of the *Saxons*; and offered to submit to what Terms they should think reasonable, provided by their Aid they were enabled to drive the Enemy out of their Country. The *Saxon* General assured them that the *Saxons* would stand by them in their pressing Necessities: Terms were agreed upon, and the Negotiation concluded; whereby the *Saxons* were to send 9000 Men into *Britain*, who were to be put into Possession of the Isle of *Thanet*, and also to be paid and maintained by the *Britons*.

HENGIST and *Horfa*, both Sons of *Witigifl*, were appointed to command the *Saxon* Troops intended for the Relief of *Britain*: They were of the Line of *Woden*; both brave and resolute Men, fit for such an Enterprize, and fond of such an Acquisition which was now to be obtained. As it was usual with the *Saxons* to give their Children

Children the Name of Animals, these Princes received A. D.
theirs on that Account; *Hengist* signifying a Stone-Horse, 448.
and *Horsa* a Horse. *Hengist* was about thirty Years of
Age; he had served in the *Roman* Armies, where the
Emperors generally kept some *Saxon* Troops in their Pay:
His Prudence was equal to his Courage, and both to-
gether warranted his Success. The two Brothers, like
Romulus and *Rhemus*, were to be the Founders of a migh-
ty State: *Hengist* succeeded like *Romulus*; if the one had
higher Views than governing in *Alba*, the other was am-
bitious of possessing the fertile Country of *Britain*, instead
of dwelling in the uncultivated Tracts of *Germany*: But
Horsa lost his Life like *Rhemus*, after his Brother had
partly succeeded in his Attempt; with this Difference,
that the *Saxon* fell by his Enemies, the *Roman* among his
Friends. The *Romans*, under *Romulus*, were like the
Saxons under *Hengist*; having a kind of Fierceness, or
rather Wildness in their Temper, utterly averse to every
Thing that was polite and agreeable: Both Nations re-
lied solely on the Force of their native Virtue, without
being indebted to the Advantage of Art, for the Im-
provement of their Reason, or for the Assistance of their
Courage: From whence, a Grofsnes of Invention passed
current for Wit, and Study was esteemed an unmanly
Labour; especially while they found, that their exact
Discipline, and unconquered Resolution, rendered them
Masters of Nations much more knowing than themselves.
Virgil, in a Reign when all the Civility and Learning in
the World were transplanted to *Rome*, chose to make the
Arts of Government and War the distinguishing Excel-
lencies of his Countrymen; the same, with equal Rea-
son, may be asserted of these *Saxons*; with much more
of their Descendants. Both Nations were civilized by
similar Accidents: The *Romans*, when *Philip* of *Macedon*
had a Design against the Liberty of *Greece*, had their
first Intercourse with the *Grecians*; when, according to
their usual Practice, under the Name of Deliverers, they
rather made themselves Masters of that People, by whom
their Manners were refined, as their Power was increased:
And the Parallel may very well be extended to the

A. D. *Saxons*, who came over to assist the *Britons*: But the *Roman* Greatness was too unwieldy to subsist without Decay; the *Saxon* Power was so compacted as to retain its primitive Vigour to the present Time, and perhaps to the latest Generations.

A. D. THE *Saxons*, notwithstanding their Promise to send 449. 9000 Men into *Britain*, only sent three Ships with 1500 Men, who embarked from *Zealand*, and arrived at *Ebbesfleet* in the Isle of *Thanet*; where *Hengist* and *Horsa* were received with the greatest Civility and Respect by *Vortigern*, who immediately put them in Possession of that Island according to Agreement. The *Picts* and *Scots* were advancing against the *Britons*: *Hengist* joined *Vortigern*, and, inspiring the *British* Troops with Courage enough to march boldly against the Enemy, a Battle was fought near *Stamford* in *Lincolnshire*, wherein the *Picts* and *Scots* were defeated; as they were also in several other Encounters; which obliged them to abandon their Conquests, and retire into their own Country; dreading nothing so much as engaging with the *Saxons*, who had the Advantage both of Arms and Discipline.

AFTER signalizing their Prowess, the *Saxons* returned to their appointed Station in the Isle of *Thanet*: But *Hengist* was now sensible of the Fertility of *Britain*, the Dissentions among the *British* Chiefs, and the Degeneracy of the People; therefore he thought of nothing but extending his Territory beyond the little Limits prescribed to him by *Vortigern*, on whom he prevailed to send for the Remainder of the *Saxon* Forces from *Germany*, to protect him against his murmuring Subjects, who were now jealous of the increasing Number of *Saxons*, and apprehended that *Vortigern* was conspiring the Ruin of his People, for the Gratification of his Ambition.

A. D. *WITIGISIL*, who had great Expectations from the 450. Expedition of his Son *Hengist*, and hoping to form a Settlement no less glorious and advantageous than what the *Saxons* enjoyed in *Germany*, equipped sixteen large Vessels, in which he transported about 8000 Men under the Command of *Escus* the eldest Son of *Hengist*, who thereby found

found himself sufficiently formidable to plant the *Saxon* A. D.
Branch in the Soil of *Britain*. 450.

THE Experience of all Ages, and of all Nations, shews us, that a People who cannot defend themselves, can never rely upon the Defence of others, especially upon Mercenaries, as the *Saxons* were to the *Britons*; who soon took an Opportunity of complaining that their Wages were not adequate to their Service, and from Servants soon became Masters. The *Britons* perceived the Intention of their new Friends, whom they now dreaded more than their old Enemies: They were afraid of the Yoke that was preparing for them; but they knew not how to prevent it: The Wolf was in the Fold, and he was not to be scared away. Indeed, the *Britons*, through all their History down to the present Age, might have been sensible of the Danger of Auxiliaries; especially in an Island, and a fruitful Country: Most Nations have given them the Example: Thus *Demetrius* being called to assist *Alexander*; instead of defending, deprived him of *Macedon*; and *Syracen* the *Turk* served *Sonar* the Sultan of *Egypt* in the same Manner: Thus, the Emperor of *Constantinople*, by hiring 10,000 *Turks*, occasioned the Servitude of the Christians: Thus the *Saxons* used the *Britons*; and thus the *English* treated the *Irish*.

HENGIST, ever attentive to his favourite Scheme of enlarging his Dominion, had greatly ingratiated himself into the Favour of *Vortigern*, whom he invited to Supper, when he shewed him many Marks of his Respect and Gratitude. *Escus* had brought over *Rowena* the Daughter of *Hengist*, a very beautiful young Lady, who being introduced to *Vortigern* won so far upon his Affections as to occasion him to demand her in Marriage: But *Hengist* refused his Consent, till the amorous *Briton* offered him the Possession of *Kent*; upon which the Match was concluded: From whence it is evident, that the important Fate of Nations, frequently depends upon trivial Circumstances; for what could be more so, than the Accident of *Rowena* presenting a Bowl of Wine to *Vortigern*? And this little Accident, occasioned the greatest Revolution that had ever been felt in *Britain*.

A.D. THE Saxon Prince was continually alarming *Vortigern* with the Discontent of the *Britons*, and their Attachment to *Ambrosius*, who was of Royal British Extraction, and had taken Refuge from the hatred of *Vortigern* in the A.D. Court of *Aldroen* King of *Armorica*: Whereby the timorous *Vortigern* was induced to grant his Permission for the Introduction of a larger Body of *Saxons* into *Britain*, who arrived in a Fleet of forty Ships, conducted by *Oæta* the Brother of *Hengist*, and *Ebusa* or *Abifa* the Son of *Oæta*, who at first settled in *Northumberland*, beyond the Wall built by *Severus*, on the North Side of the *Tyne* towards the East; from whence they gradually advanced towards the South, and drove the *Britons* beyond the *Humber*; their Pretence of seating themselves in this Colony, being to guard that Frontier against the *Scots* and *Picts*, and prevent their Incursions upon the *Britons*; which these *Saxons* effected with great Bravery and Success; obliging those Nations to bound their Territories with the rough and mountainous Countries that lie between the two Seas, near the River *Tweed*; which have ever since continued as the Borders between the two Kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland*, into which the Island came afterwards to be divided.

BRITAIN being now delivered and secured from its ancient Foes, Dissentions arose between the *Britons* and their new Allies: The *Saxons* valued too high the Assistance they had given; and the *Britons* too low what they had received; till the first, allured by so fair a Prey, and the fertile Soil of so sweet a Country inviting still greater Numbers from the Continent, established the two *Saxon* Kingdoms of *Kent* and *Northumberland*; whereby they were in Possession of the Southern and Northern Parts of what belonged to the *Britons*, from whence they were invaded on both Sides, with the greater Hatred and Distinction, because the *Saxons* were all Pagans, and the *Britons* generally Christians.

A.D. *VORTIGERN*, for the sake of marrying *Rowena*, was divorced from a former Wife; by whom he had a Son named *Vortimer*, who was as much the Deliverer, as his Father was the Destroyer of his Country: With Grief

Grief and Indignation, he saw the *Saxons* extending their A. D. Bounds: He saw them not only in Possession of *Kent*, 455. but of another large Tract which they afterwards called *Middlesex*, *Essex*, and *Suffolk*; where their Insolence rouzed his Resentment; and that Resentment, like the Flint when applied to the Steel, struck out the dormant Sparks of *British* Bravery: *Vortigern* was abandoned by the *Britons*; and *Vortimer* was elected their General, who attacked, and was successful against the *Saxons*, particularly in a Battle at *Aylesford* in *Kent*, wherein *Horsa* fell by the Hand of *Vortimer*.

The Saxon Kingdom of Kent, which began in 455, and continued to the Year 823.

HENGIST, on the Death of his Brother, assumed the Title of King of *Kent*; and, fearful of *Vortimer*, concluded a Peace with the *Scots* and *Picts*, brought the *Northumbrian Saxons* to his Assistance, and obtained a farther Reinforcement from *Germany*. *Vortimer* dying in A. D. all the height of Glory and Success against the *Saxons*, 457. they re-instated *Vortigern* on the Throne: But he was obliged to oppose *Hengist*, who seemed desirous of accommodating all Matters by Treaty, rather than by Arms; for which Purpose an Assembly of the principal Men of both Nations was held on *Salisbury Plain*, where the treacherous *Saxons* being secretly armed, fell upon the unarmed *Britons*, and suddenly massacred 300 of the *British* Nobility.

AFTER this, the *British* Spirit was lost for a considerable Time, and *Vortigern* again deprived of his Dignity; which the *Britons* conferred on *Ambrosius*, who prosecuted that War against the *Saxons*, whereby *Britain*, in A. D. the End, was peopled with new Inhabitants, and a new 465. Face of Things introduced over the whole Island.

IT is the being accustomed to Arms, that only can make Soldiers; the most enervated Nation will acquire a Spirit of Bravery, and a Knowledge of military Discipline, when they are encouraged to take up, and instructed

A. D. how to handle their Weapons. The *Roman Luxury* had
465. suppressed the *British Spirit*; but it was revived by the
Saxon Insolence. *Ambrosius* was assisted by his Nephew *Arthur*, who was King of *Danmonia*, or *Cornwall*: Could *Britain* have been protected from the Ravages of the *Saxons*, these Princes could have done it; both of them having all the Qualities of the most celebrated Heroes in an eminent Degree: But its fate was determined; this noble Country was destined to undergo an extraordinary Revolution, and become a Prey to the *Saxons*.

THE *Britons* must be considered at this Time, much in the same Light as they are represented to have been when *Julius Cæsar* invaded the Country: They were still governed by several Princes, and *Ambrosius* was now the Chief of the Confederacy, in the same Manner as *Cassibelan* and *Caractacus* had been formerly. Several Battles were fought between the *Saxons* and *Britons*; the former assisted by the *Northumbrians*, the latter by the *Scotch*; till both Sides were weary of military Contentions; and, without the Formality of a Treaty, sought that Repose in Peace to which they were prompted by a mutual Necessity.

A. D. DURING this Ceſſation of Arms, another Colony of
477. *Saxons* arrived to seek their own Fortunes in *Britain*, and support the Interest of their Countrymen: They confiſted of about 4000 Men, and landed on the Coast of that Part of the Country which was afterwards called *Suffex*, under the Conduct of *Ella*, and his three Sons *Cymen*, *Wlecing* or *Pleting*, and *Ciffa*; who, after some Reſistance on their landing, kept Possession of that Part of the Country, where they eſtablished the Kingdom of the South *Saxons*.

A. D. HENGIST died, and was ſucceeded by his Son *Eſca*;
488. ſoon after which, a great Battle was fought between the *Kentish Saxons* and the *Britons*, wherein the former were victorius: But *Ella* was at the Head of the *Saxon Confederacy*.

A. D. THE Year 495 is diſtinguished by the Arrival of *Cerdic*, and his Son *Cynric*, two *Saxon Princes*, in five Ships, at a Place called *Cerdicſbore*, near *Yarmouth* in *Norfolk*; who afterwards proceeded Westward, and founded the King-

Kingdom of the West Saxons. *Cerdic* was one of the A. D. Descendants of *Woden*: He was a very warlike Prince, 495- and had acquired great Reputation in *Germany*; but he is principally remarkable on Account of his Posterity; because, from him the Kings of *England* are descended; in the Male Line down to *Edward the Confessor*, and in the Female down to the illustrious Prince who now sits upon the *British Throne*: Besides, the Kingdom founded by *Cerdic* swallowed up all the rest; so that he is to be esteemed, if not as the first, at least as one of the principal Founders of the *English Monarchy*.

THE *Britons* still endeavoured to oppose the increasing Power of the *Saxons*; but in vain: The *Britons* were divided among themselves, which has always been more fatal to them than to their Enemies; while the *Saxons* united all their Forces, and continued to invite others from the Continent to partake of those Blessings with which Providence had enriched the Island.

AMBROSIUS and *Arthur* opposed both the South A. D. and the Northern *Saxons*; but their Success was impeded 501. by a constant Supply of Recruits to their Enemies from *Germany*, who were rendered much more formidable by the Arrival of *Porta*, and his two Sons *Bieda* and *Megla*, who landed with 1500 Men, in two very large Ships, at *Portsmouth* in *Hampshire*; where they defeated the *Britons*, and established themselves.

As the *Saxons* were so strongly confederated together, A. D. the *British Princes* collected all their Forces, and were 508. determined to put the Fate of their Country upon the Decision of one general Battle. *Cerdic* was now Successor to *Hengist* as the Chief of the *Saxon Alliance*; he was joined by the Forces of *Esca*, *Ella*, and *Porta*; with these he met the *Britons*; a dreadful Battle ensued; wherein both Parties alternately expected the Victory, which at last inclined to the *Saxons*, who slew 5000 of the *Britons*; and, among them, the glorious *Ambrosius*, who fell with his Sword in his Hand, gloriously dying for that Country which he was unable to protect.

ARTHUR, who was hereditary Prince of *Cornwall*, A. D. was elected by the confederate States to succeed *Ambrosius* 527.

58 A NEW HISTORY

A. D. as the principal Commander of the *British* Forces: He is
527. reported to have fought twelve Battles against the *Saxons*,
and to have been always victorious: But the *Saxons* still
increasing from abroad rendered all his Bravery ineffectual.
The War was carried on at many Times, and in
many Places; the Event sometimes favouring the *Saxons*,
and sometimes the *Britons*; wherein *Arthur* approved
himself a great Prince, and a glorious Commander; the
Britons shewed that they had the Sense, and the Spirit of
Freedom: While the Bravery of *Arthur* was opposed
more by the Policy than the Force of *Cerdic*; for the more
frequently the *Saxons* were defeated, so much the more
frequent were the Supplies which they received from the
Continent, where their Settlements were so numerous,
that they have been properly termed the Workhouse of
Nations.

AFTER the Arrival of *Porta*, the *Saxons* considered
Britain as the Field of Fortune, and seem to have come
over from several Parts of *Germany*, in straggling independent
Parties, each governed by a petty Leader, who
seized that Portion of Territory which the Weakness,
Divisions, or Negligence of the *Britons* rendered most
easy for Conquest; or the Convenience of Situation most
advantageous for Possession. The *Britons* were destitute
of all naval Force; while the *Saxons* had a numerous
Fleet, which made them Masters of the Sea: So that by
preserving their Communication open between the *Saxons*
seated in the North and Southern Parts of *Britain*, and
both of them with the Continent, their Success, and the
ill Fortune of the *Britons*, are easily to be discovered; for
here is a strong Instance, that *Britain* can never be re-
tained, or conquered, without a Superiority at Sea.

VALOUR may be overtoiled, and at last conquered by
perpetual Conquest: This was the Case of *Arthur*, great in
Reputation, but weakened by Age, and disturbed by
domestic Dissentions, as well as foreign Invasions. The
British Prince concluded a Peace with *Cerdic*, who there-
by obtained the Countries since called *Hampshire* and
Somersetshire: These were afterwards increased by *Berk-
shire*, *Wiltshire*, *Devonshire*, *Dorsetshire*, and a Part of
Corn-

Cornwal, which were treacherously yielded to the *Saxon A. D.* Prince by *Mordred* the rebellious Nephew of *Arthur*; 527. and these Countries were soon inhabited by such *Saxons* as were continually crowding from their numerous Hives in *Germany*: Whereby a new Name, a new Religion, a new Language, a new Government, and new Manners, were imported into *Britain*: While the old Inhabitants were dispossessed of their Property, and became a Kind of Slaves to the *Saxons*; or abandoned their plentiful Seats, to preserve their Liberty in the mountainous Tracts of *Wales*, and the remoter Parts of *Cornwal*; though some of them retired among their ancient Countrymen, who had settled themselves in *Bretagne* in *France*.

CERDIC, from the Cessions which had been made *A. D.* him by *Arthur*, founded the Kingdom of *Wessex*, or of 530. the West Saxons; so called, because it lay West of *Kent* and *Suffex*; the former of which was now governed by *Octa*, the Son of *Esca*; and the latter was governed by *Cissa*, the youngest Son of *Ella*. *Cerdic* also conquered the Isle of *Wight*, which he bestowed upon his Nephews *Stuff* and *Withgar*: He then caused himself to be solemnly crowned at *Winchester*, the Capital of this new Kingdom, where he exacted from his Subjects an Oath of Fealty, and died in the Year 534; being succeeded by his Son *Cynric* in his Kingdom, and in the Command as Chief of the Saxon Confederacy.

As *Mordred* had rebelled against *Arthur*, the Uncle *A. D.* prepared to chastise the Nephew: A civil War ensued, 542. and a Battle was fought at *Camblan* in *Cornwal*, wherein both Princes fell by each others Sword; a great Number of their Soldiers perished, which, together with the Death of *Arthur*, was the severest Blow that could have happened to the *Britons*, who assisted their Enemies in thus wantonly destroying themselves. The great *Arthur* seemed like the Star of *Britain*, sunk and lost: He was buried at *Glastonbury* in *Somersetshire*; where his Body was found, by the Command of *Henry* the Second, upwards of 600 Years afterwards; when *Henry* had the Satisfaction of viewing the sacred Remains, and counting the glorious Wounds of this illustrious Hero; who may be termed

60 A NEW HISTORY

A. D. termed the last of *Britons*, with as much Propriety as
542. *Brutus* has been called the last of *Romans*; and whose Name was held in such high Esteem, that King *Richard the First* thought he could not confer a greater Honour upon *Tancred* King of *Sicily*, than presenting him with the Sword of so great a Warrior.

UPON the Death of *Arthur*, the *Britons*, with all their Bravery, could only be considered as a Herd of Lions headed by a Deer, who might have been beat even by a Herd of Deer headed by a Lion; of such more Consequence is a good Commander over bad Soldiers, than of good Soldiers with a bad Commander. The *British* Confederacy was dissolved, no Chief was appointed, five Princes contended for that Power which they were incapable of managing, and all their Dissentions were fomented by the *Saxons*, who now became Masters of *Britain*, at least that Part of it, which has always commanded the rest, and which they now began to call *Angle-land*, or *England*: While those *Britons* who adhered to that Independency which constituted the Glory and Happiness of their Ancestors, preserved their Liberties in the Mountains of *Wales*, where they were governed by Laws and Princes of their own till the Year 1272, when that Principality was united to *England* by the Policy of *Edward the First*; and they were proud of that Language which they uncorruptedly retain even to the present Hour. A poor Independency, to a brave Soul, is preferable to a splendid Servitude: The honest *Britons* found this among their barren Mountains, which made that Residence as delightful to them as the *Switzers* at this Time find their unfruitful and uncomfortable Soil: But those *Britons* who were lost to the Sense of Manhood, and the Honour of their Ancestors, sunk into a State of infamous Servility; they were scattered among the *Saxons*, wholly spoiled of their Lands and Goods, used only for Tilling of Ground and Feeding of Cattle; the very Children born of these miserable People belonging to the Lord of the Soil, like the rest of the Stock of Cattle upon it; and thus began Villenage in *England*, which continued 960 Years, before it was happily abolished by *Henry the Seventh*.

CYNRIC,

CYNRIC, the King of *Wessex*, was at the Head of A. D. the *Saxon Confederacy*; who defeated some Attempts 542 made by the *Britons* of *Wales* and *Cornwall* to recover their Country: But the *Saxons* having ended their old Quarrels with the *Britons*, began new ones among themselves. From the Time *Hengist* had peopled *Essex* and *Middlesex* with *Saxons* and *Jutes*, they were governed by a Deputy under the King of *Kent*; and the *Northumbrian Kingdom*, founded by *Oda* and *Ebusa*, the Brother and Nephew of *Hengist*, was also held in a Kind of Subordination to his Successors: But, in the Year 527, *Erkenwin* assumed the Title of King of *Essex*, or of the *East Saxons*; this Kingdom lying Eastward of the other three, and containing *Essex* and *Middlesex*, of which *London* was the Capital. In the Year 547, *Ida* brought a great Number of *Saxon Families* from *Germany*, which he landed in forty Vessels at *Flamborough* in *Yorkshire*, and was acknowledged the King of *Northumberland*, which he held independent of *Kent*. In the mean time, Multitudes of *Angles*, under the Conduit of twelve Chiefs, all of equal Authority, landed on the Eastern Coast of *Britain*, where they founded the Kingdom of *East Anglia*, or of the *East Angles*, containing the Counties of *Norfolk*, *Suffolk*, and *Cambridge*, of which *Uffa* was the first King in 571.

UPON the Death of *Ida* King of *Northumberland*, that A. D. Monarchy was divided by his two Sons into two King-559-doms; *Bernicia*, or the Northern Part was governed by *Adda*; and *Deira*, or the Southern Part, was allotted to *Ella*; but none of our Historians, even the most modern, have made any Enquiry concerning this Division; which probably was occasioned by the great Annoyance the *Northumbrians* had received from the *Britons* on the South, and the *Picts* on the North; so that it was requisite to have a Commander or King on each Side of the Frontier.

CEAULIN, the Son of *Cynric*, succeeded his Father A. D. in the Kingdom of *Wessex*, and the Dignity of chief 560. Monarch of the *Saxons*, which he wanted to render entirely absolute; though this could not be effected till the Reign of his Descendant *Egbert*, 295 Years afterwards, who

62 A NEW HISTORY

who reduced all the independent *Saxon* Governments into one glorious *Monarchy*.

A. D. THE West *Saxon* Prince kept the *Britons* and *Saxons* 582. in Awe; and by the Divisions of the latter, the former might have gained great Advantages, if they had been blest with an *Arthur* or an *Ambrofius* for their Leader. The *Britons* were sensible of the Opportunity, and they attempted to embrace it: But all their Hopes were for ever disappointed by the Arrival of another formidable Body of *Saxon* Adventurers from *Germany*, under the Conduct of *Crida*, or *Cridda*, of the Race of *Woden*, who landed in East *Anglia*, marched into the Country, and took Possession of all between the *Humber*, the *Severn*, and the *Thames*, which he erected into the Kingdom of the Middle *Angles*, or what was afterwards more generally called *Mercia*.

THUS the *Britons*, after a resolute Defence of 130 Years, were obliged to give up their Country to the very People they had called to their Assistance: But the Dissention of the *Britons* was the principal Cause of their Destruction: The same Dissention afterwards spread itself among the *Saxons*; which gave Occasion for the Strong to oppress the Weak, and at last made Way for one to subdue all the others.

THE *Saxons* had now formed themselves into seven Kingdoms, which were called the Heptarchy; the whole being considered as making but one Body under the same Government, and called the Country of the *Angles* or *Engle-land*, and afterwards *England*. But the *Britons* retired into *Cambria*, to which the *Saxons* gave the Name of *Gwallis* or *Wallish-land*, and afterwards *Wales*, on Account of their supposed Extraction from the *Gauls*: Where the *Britons* divided themselves into several petty Kingdoms, which were at sometimes separated, at others united, according to the Power or Ambition of their Princes; who, from Time to Time, made several Attempts to recover what they had lost: However, their Efforts proved ineffectual; as also did the Endeavours of the *Saxons* to force them in their mountainous Retreats.

THE

THE *Saxons*, who had thus possessed themselves of the fairest Part of *Britain*, came from several Parts of *Germany*, and had several Appellations according to the Places from whence they came; as the *Saxons*, on Account of *Saxony*; the *Jutes*, on Account of *Jutland*; and the *Angles*, on Account of *Anglia*; all which were adjacent Countries. *Saxony* and *Jutland* still retain their Names; the former being one of the present Circles of *Germany*, and the latter a Part of the Kingdom of *Denmark*: But *Anglia* soon lost its Name; being situated between *Saxony* and *Jutland*, and is now the Dutchy of *Holstein*. They all considered themselves as one People: And it is remarkable that the Name of the *Saxons* still remains in *Germany*, whilst that of the *Angles* is entirely lost; and, on the contrary, this latter is perpetuated in *Britain*, where the former is almost forgot.

It is now proper to take a View of the *Saxon* Heptarchy; and to shew how the Country was inhabited, on this great Revolution of Inhabitants, Government, Name, Language, Manners, Customs, Laws, Arms, Discipline, Possessions, Titles, Religion, and even the whole Face of Nature.

I. THE first was the Kingdom of *Kent*, founded by *Hengist* in 455, and containing only that County; being inhabited by the *Jutes*: It continued 368 Years, and ended in 823; having been governed by ten of its own Kings, and seven doubtful or foreign Princes; of whom four were Pagans, and thirteen Christians: Its principal Places being *Canterbury*, *Dover*, *Rochester*, *Sandwich*, *Deal*, *Folkstone*, and *Reculver*.

II. THE second was the Kingdom of the South *Saxons*, founded by *Ella* in 491, and containing the Counties of *Sussex* and *Surry*, whose principal City was *Chichester*: It continued about 109 Years, and ended about the Year 600; having only five of its Monarchs; of whom two were Pagans, and three Christians: It being mostly under the Power of the Kings of *Kent* and the West *Saxons*.

III. THE third was the Kingdom of the West *Saxons*, founded by *Cerdic* in 519; containing *Cornwall*, *Devonshire*, *Dorsetshire*, *Wiltshire*, *Somersetshire*, *Hampshire*, with the

the Isle of *Wight*, and *Berkshire*; though the Remains of the *Britons* likewise inhabited *Cornwall*; the principal Places being *Winchester*, *Southampton*, *Portsmouth*, *Salisbury*, *Dorchester*, *Sherborne*, and *Exeter*: It continued till the *Norman Conquest*, being 547 Years, and ended in 1066: Having been governed by seventeen Monarchs during the *Heptarchy*, of whom five were Pagans, and twelve Christians, the last of which was *Egbert*, who, in 829, became sole Monarch of *England*.

IV. THE fourth was the Kingdom of the *East Saxons*, containing, *Middlesex*, *Essex*, and Part of *Hertfordshire*; where the principal Places were *London* and *Colchester*: It was founded, in 527, by *Erkenwin*, and continued 220 Years, ending in 747; having been governed by Twelve Monarchs, of whom two were Pagans, and the rest Christians.

V. THE fifth was the Kingdom of *Northumberland*, founded by *Ida* in 547, containing *Lancashire*, *Yorkshire*, *Durham*, *Cumberland*, *Westmoreland*, *Northumberland*, and Part of *Scotland* as far as *Edinburgh* Frith; the principal Places being *York*, *Durham*, *Carlisle*, *Hexham*, and *Lancaster*: It continued 245 Years, and ended in 792; having been governed by twenty Princes; of whom four were Pagans, and the rest Christians, whose Subjects were *Angles*, and called the *Northumbrian Angles*.

VI. THE sixth was the Kingdom of the *East Angles*, which contained *Norfolk*, *Suffolk*, and *Cambridgeshire*, with the Isle of *Ely*; where the principal Places were *Norwich*, *Thetford*, *Ely*, and *Cambridge*: It was founded by *Uffa*, in 575, and continued 218 Years, ending in 793, when it was united to the Kingdom of the *Mercians*.

VII. THE seventh was the Kingdom of the *Mercians*, or the *Middle Angles*, founded by *Crida* in 582; containing *Gloucestershire*, *Herefordshire*, *Worcestershire*, *Warwickshire*, *Leicestershire*, *Rutlandshire*, *Northamptonshire*, *Lincolnshire*, *Huntingdonshire*, *Bedfordshire*, *Buckinghamshire*, Part of *Berkshire*, *Oxfordshire*, *Staffordshire*, *Shropshire*, *Nottinghamshire*, and *Cheshire*; the principal Places being *Lincoln*, *Nottingham*, *Warwick*, *Leicester*, *Coventry*, *Litchfield*, *Northampton*, *Worcester*, *Gloucester*, *Derby*, *Chester*, *Shrewsbury*,

bury, Stafford, Oxford, and Bristol: It continued 292 Years, and ended in 874, having been governed by eighteen Monarchs, of whom four were Pagans, and the rest Christians.

THUS the Southern Part of *Britain* was called *England*; and the seventeen *British* Governments were reduced into seven *Saxon* Kingdoms, exclusive of *Wales*, which was still governed by *British* Princes. The *Saxon* Revolution was entire as far as it extended: The Language, which before was either *Latin* or *British*, was now grown wholly *Saxon* or *English*; and the Land, that was before divided into *Roman* Colonies or Governments, was now partitioned into *Shires*, with Names given to them by the *Saxons*, as they first possessed, or afterwards thought fit to distinguish them. The Habits in Peace, and Arms in War; the Titles of Officers in both, as well as of great Counsellors to their Kings, or great Proprietors of Lands, came to be all according to the *Saxon* Forms and Usage. The Laws of this Country, which before were *Roman*, changed now into old *Saxon* Customs or Constitutions. Their Princes, or Leaders of their several Nations, became Konings, or Kings, of the Territories they had subdued: But all the seven Kingdoms were considered as one grand State, such as the *seven united Provinces* are at present; and the Command of their Armies was given to one Prince, chosen out of the seven, on whom some have bestowed the Title of Monarch, on Pretence of his having the Precedence, and some Superiority over the rest; though his Dignity seems to have been like that of the *Dutch* Stadholder. The Princes reserved Part of the Lands to themselves for their Revenue; sharing the rest among their chief Commanders by great Divisions, and among their Soldiers by smaller Partitions: The first who had the great Divisions were called Earls or Barons; those of the smaller were Knights; and the smallest of all were Freemen, who possessed some Portions of Free Lands, and were thereby distinguished from the Villains, or Villens, who held nothing but at the Will of the Landlord. And they established a Form of Government as like as possible to what they lived under

der in *Germany*: Their Wittena Gemot, or Assembly of wife Men, being like our present Parliament, of which it is the Original, where they deliberated upon the common Affairs of the seven Kingdoms; and, though each King was Sovereign in his own Dominions, and had a Parliament of his own, both he and his Subjects were bound by the Resolutions of the general Assembly.

THE *Saxons* were now firmly established in their Possessions; and, according to the usual Circle of human Affairs, War ended in Peace, Peace in Plenty and Luxury, those in Pride, and Pride in Contention, till the Circle ended in new Wars. The *Saxon* Princes of the Heptarchy fell into Emulations of each others Greatness, Disputes about the Bounds of their several States, or about Successions or Usurpations, pretended or exercised in one or other of them; which were followed by formal Wars among them, the Stronger swallowing up the Weaker, and these having Recourse to their Neighbours for Defence against encroaching Power: So that many fierce Encounters, Sieges, Battles, Spoils, and Devastations of the Country, succeeded in the Progress and Decision of these mutual Injuries and Invasions, between the *Saxon* Kings, for above two hundred Years.

The Gothic Hive annoy'd imperial *Rome*,
And *Woden's* Sons feiz'd *Britain* for their Home.
Tame *Vortigern* disgrac'd the *British* Line;
While *Hengist* planted deep the *Saxon* Vine;
This soon in sev'n luxuriant Branches spread,
Sev'n Kingdoms, with one Monarch at their Head.
Yet, gen'rous *Vortimer* the Yoke disdains,
And nobly strives to break the *Saxon* Chains:
In vain he conquer'd, and in vain he dy'd:
In vain *Ambrofius* shew'd a *Briton's* Pride:
Long did the valiant Chief in Glory reign,
And drove the *Saxons* o'er the tented Plain:
At length he fell, opprest by *Cerdic's* Force.
But glorious *Arthur* stopt the Victor's Course,
'Till *Britain* tore herself in civil Strife,
And all was lost with royal *Arthur's* Life.

No more the *Britons* take the martial Field :
They fly for Freedom, or as Slaves they yield.
The *Cambrian* Mountains gave them a Retreat,
And sav'd the Remnants of the *British* State :
While, from its Ruins, ENGLAND got its Name,
Its Glory form'd, establish'd all its Fame.
The Blood of *Cerdic* still supremely rose ;
And now that Blood in *Brunfwic's* Lineage flows.
Blest Island ! what a glorious Fate is thine ?
First, to be conquer'd by the *Cerdic* Line ;
And yet, so many distant Ages past,
In that illustrious Line, so glorious still to last ?



THE

The SAXON HEPTARCHY.

The Kingdom of Kent.

HENGIST having reigned thirty-one Years died in 488, and was succeeded by his Son *Eſca*, as sole King of *Kent*; who never enlarged his paternal Dominions; being obliged to act rather upon the defensive than offensive. *Eſca* died in 519, and was succeeded by his Son *Otta* or *Oča*, who could not prevent the dismembering of *Essex* and *Middlesex* from the Kingdom of *Kent*, to form the Kingdom of the East *Saxons* by *Erkenwin*. *Oča* died in 536, and was succeeded by his Son *Immeric*, or *Ermenic*; who died in 568, leaving *Ethelbert* his Son to succeed him in the Kingdom.

ETHELBERT is remarkable for being the first Saxon Monarch who embraced Christianity: He had both Bravery and Ambition; therefore beheld with Regret, that the *Northumbrian Saxons* had shaken off their Dependence on the Crown of *Kent*, that the *East Saxons* had formed themselves into a separate Kingdom, and that the Successors of *Hengist* had lost the Superiority he had over the *Saxons* as Monarch, or Chief of the Confederacy, which was now enjoyed by *Ceaulin* King of *Wessex*. *Ethelbert* took up Arms against *Ceaulin*, and invaded his Country: Whereupon a Battle ensued, which was fought at *Wibbendune*, now *Wimbledon* in *Surry*, wherein *Ethelbert* was defeated, and obliged to return into his own Territories: But this Prince converted even Misfortune to Advantage; he was four Times afterwards defeated by *Ceaulin*; his Defeats gave him that Experience, which he only wanted

wanted to subdue his Enemy; so that, in the End, he defeated *Ceaulin*, who died soon after, and in whose room *Ethelbert* was elected Chief of the Confederacy. This Prince soon rendered himself too formidable to the other Princes of the Heptarchy, both by his domestic Strength, and foreign Alliance: For he attempted to exercise a Sovereign Authority over the whole seven Kingdoms; and he was the more successful on Account of his Marriage with *Bertha*, Daughter of *Caribert* King of *Paris*: But the other Princes, jealous of his Power, and fond of Independence, formed a League against him, and confined him to his own Jurisdiction of *Kent*. *Ethelbert* was converted to Christianity by the Influence of *Bertha* his Queen, who was a Christian; and all the *Saxons*, through their Intercourse with the *French*, were daily cultivating themselves and exploding their barbarous Nations, so as to be ready for an easy Conversion from the Gloom of Paganism to the Light of Christianity: This was begun in 597, when *Augustin*, or *Austin*, arrived from *Rome*, and converted *Ethelbert*, who permitted the Missionaries to make as many Proselytes as they were able; the Subjects followed the Example of their Prince, their Example was followed by their Neighbours, and the Christian Religion was soon disseminated throughout the whole Heptarchy; but as this was done by an artful Priest, at the Command of an ambitious Pope, it gave the *Roman* Pontiffs an Opportunity of trampling upon the *English* Liberties for many Generations.

ETHELBERT had been converted twenty-one Years, and died on the twenty-fourth of February 616; being succeeded by *Eadbald* his Son, who degenerated from his Father both in Religion and Virtue: However, he was reclaimed to the Christian Faith before his Death, which happened in 640.

ERCOMBERT, the youngest Son of *Eadbald*, ascended the Throne in prejudice of his elder Brother *Ermenfrid*; though this was by the Appointment of the Father. *Ermenfrid* had two Sons, whom *Ercombert* intended to restore to the Succession: But he died in Possession of the Crown, in 664, being succeeded by his Son *Egbert*, who caused

caused the Children of *Ermefrid* to be murdered, to prevent any Disturbance about their Right to the Inheritance. *Egbert* died in 673, leaving two Sons *Edric* and *Widred*; who were supplanted by their Uncle *Lothair*: But the South *Saxons* assisted the elder Nephew with an Army to recover his Right, and a general Battle ensued, wherein *Lothair* was mortally wounded by a Dart in the Year 685.

EDRIC reigned about two Years, and was succeeded by his Brother *Widred* or *Withred*, who was obliged to associate *Swabert*, or *Swebheard*, as a Partner in the Kingdom; which caused those intestine Divisions, that rendered *Kent* a Prey to *Cedwalla*, King of the West *Saxons*, who invaded the Country, and reduced it to the lowest State of all the Heptarchy; so as never after to excite either the Ambition, or the Jealousy, of the neighbouring Princes.

THE Crown afterwards descended to *Edbert*, *Edilbert*, and *Alric*, the three Sons of *Widred*, who succeeded each other: But *Alric* died in 760, with whom the *Hengift* Family became extinct; upon which Occasion, the Kingdom of *Kent* became the Prey of every enterprizing Pretender, who had acquired Riches by Art, or Power by Faction. *Edilbert*, surnamed *Prin*, or *Pren*, was the most fortunate of these Competitors, and sat two Years upon the Throne; after which, his Country was ravaged, and himself taken Prisoner, in 794, by *Cenulph*, King of *Mercia*, who made *Kent* a tributary Kingdom, and bestowed it on *Cutbred*, one of his Dependants. *Cutbred* was succeeded by his Son *Baldred*: But, as the *Kentish Saxons* were uneasy at their Vassalage to the *Mercians*, *Egbert* took this Opportunity of expelling *Cutbred* from the Kingdom, and uniting it to his own in the Year 823; whereby the Monarchy founded by *Hengift* became a Province to the West *Saxons*, after it had existed about 368 Years.

The Kingdom of SUSSEX, or the South Saxons.

ELLA, who founded this Kingdom, rendered it of Consequence only by his own Importance as Chief of the Saxon Confederacy: But, after his Death, its small Extent in Territory, made it an easy Conquest to *Ceaulin*, King of the West *Saxons*, who took Possession of it on the Death of *Cissa*, the Son and Successor of *Ella*, in the Year 590. The South *Saxons* endeavoured to shake off the Yoke of the West *Saxons*; in which they were unable to succeed till the Year 684; when they placed *Adelwalch*, or *Edilwalch*, upon the Throne: But this Prince was first taken Prisoner by *Wulpher* King of *Mercia*, and afterwards slain by *Cedwalla* the West *Saxon* in 686; whereupon the Kingdom was jointly possessed by *Autbune* and *Berthune*; the latter of whom was soon after slain in a Battle against *Cedwalla*, and the former became his Tributary: So that the Kingdom of *Suffex*, became a Province to that of *Wessex*; though not without several Attempts for recovering its Independency.

The Kingdom of WESSEX, or the West Saxons.

THIS Kingdom was the most considerable among the Heptarchy, as well on Account of its Extent in Territory, and Number of People, as by the Bravery and Prudence of its Monarchs; particularly *Egbert*, the Father of the *English* Monarchy, and the august Ancestor in the Female Line of the illustrious House of *Hanover*, who now gloriously govern that Kingdom which he happily founded, by the Name it now enjoys of *Britain*, 926 Years ago.

CERDIC was the original Founder of this Kingdom, in the Year 495; who, after reducing the *Britons* as Chief of the Saxon Confederacy, died in 534, and was succeeded by his Son *Cynric*, whose Character is only memorable

morable on Account of the Battle of Sarum, where he defeated the Britons.

CYNRIC was succeeded by his Son *Ceaulin* in 560; who, after heading the Saxon Confederacy, and rendering himself too formidable to the confederate Princes, was attacked by their united Forces, defeated, and obliged to seek Security in Exile, in the Year 591. He was succeeded by his Nephew *Ceolric*; who died in 597, leaving *Ceolwulph* his Successor, who was Cousin German to the late King, a good Prince, and a brave Soldier; ever active in enlarging, ever vigilant in defending his Kingdom.

CEOLWULPH died in 611; being succeeded by his Brother *Cinegils*, who associated his Son *Quinchelm* in the Government, and in 615 fought a general Battle against the Britons at *Banton* in *Devonshire*, wherein the Saxons were victorious; as they also were soon after in a Battle fought against *Penda*, King of *Mercia*; and about this Time, *Ceolwulph* and his Son, were converted to Christianity by *Berinus*, an *Italian*; but *Quinchelm* died in 636, and left his Father in the sole Possession of the Kingdom.

CENWAL, the Son of *Cinegils*, succeeded his Father in 643: His Wife was Sister to *Penda* King of *Mercia*, from whom he was divorced; upon which a War ensued, wherein *Penda* was successful, and drove his Enemy to seek Protection from *Annas*, the King of the East Angles, who restored him to the Throne. Adversity brought Improvement to *Cenwal*: he was attacked by the Britons in 658, whom he defeated at *Pene* in *Somersetshire*; and in 661 he fought against *Wulphur*, the King of *Mercia*, at *Pontesbury* in *Shropshire*, but with what Success is uncertain.

CENWAL died in 672, and was succeeded by his Wife *Sexburgha*, a Princess of great Courage, of a very sublime and extensive Genius, every way qualified for the important Trust of Government, and worthy of sovereign Command: But her Reign expired with the Year; when the Kingdom became a Prey to several ambitious Noblemen, till *Escwin* ascended the Throne, who was descended from

from *Cerdic*. This Prince was attacked by *Wulphur*, King of *Mercia*, and a Battle was fought at *Bedwin* in *Wiltshire*, with mutual Loss; after which, *Escrin* died, and in 676 was succeeded by *Kerwin* the Son of the late King *Cinegils*; who, in 685, was attacked, and succeeded in his Kingdom by his Kinsman *Cedwalla*, who also conquered the Isle of *Wight*, attacked the King of *Kent*, and in 689, being the Year before his Death, set out for *Rome*, where he was baptized by Pope *Sergius*, and dying there, was buried in St. Peter's Church.

CEDWALLA was succeeded by his Cousin *Ina*, a Descendant from *Cerdic* in the eighth Degree; who came to the Crown rather through the Merits of personal Virtue, than upon the Strength of royal Descent: For he was more remarkable than any of his cotemporary Princes for his Bravery as a Warrior, his Wisdom as a Legislator, and his Religion as a Christian. His Wars with the *Britons* in *Cornwal*, the Kings of *Kent*, the South *Saxons*, and Kings of *Mercia*, rendered his Valour conspicuous, and his Reputation illustrious. By publishing a Body of Laws, intituled *West Saxon Lege*, or the Laws of the *West Saxons*, he distinguished himself as the first *Saxon* Prince who regularly summoned a great Council, or Parliament, to enact Laws for the better Government of his Kingdom; which consisted of nine Articles, and served for the Foundation of the Laws published in the next Century by *Alfred* his Successor. By resigning his Crown to his Cousin *Etbelherd*, and assuming the Cowl, which was then looked upon as an undoubted Mark of Religion, his Memory has been greatly signalized by the Monkish Writers, who were ambitious of exalting their own Stations on the Follies or the Ruin of Princes; besides, *Ina* was not content with falling into the common Superstition of the Age; he also built and endowed a magnificent Church and College at *Rome*; for whose Maintenance he exacted a Tax of a Penny on every Family in his Kingdom, under the Name of *Rome-scot*; and this was afterwards imposed by *Offa* King of *Mercia* on his Subjects, under the Name of *Peter-pence*: After which,

from a glorious Prince in Arms, *Ina* died unnoticed in a Monastery at *Rome*.

INA having reigned thirty-nine Years, resigned his Crown to *Ethelred* in 728, whose Succession was disputed by *Oswald*, a Descendant of the royal Line: But *Ethelred* vanquished his Rival, and reigned in Peace to the Year 741, when he died, and was succeeded by *Cuthred*, his Brother or Cousin; who, in 743, defeated the *Britons*; in 752 was victorious over *Ethelbald* King of *Mercia*, in a Battle fought at *Burford* in *Oxfordshire*; and dying, in 755, was succeeded by his Cousin *Sigebert*.

THIS Prince was unworthy of Government; he found his Subjects a free People; and his Ambition was to leave them Slaves: Not contented with the just Power of a Prince, he arrived at the unnatural Authority of a Tyrant; which stript him of all Power; for his Subjects de-throned that Prince who had violated their Laws: They deposed him of Power, but they had too much Veneration even for so bad a King to deprive him of Life: He had a large Domain allotted for his Subsistence: Yet his Tyranny continued in his Adversity; he killed *Cumbran*, the only Nobleman who remained faithfully attached to his Fortunes; and, in Revenge, *Sigebert* was killed by the common Hand of a Swineherd belonging to *Cumbran*.

KINEWULPH, or *Cerwulf*, was elected King on the Deposition of the Tyrant; in whom the Scepter still descended in the Blood of *Cerdic*; though *Cyneheard*, the Brother of *Sigebert*, and a promising Prince, was alive. *Kinewulph* was successful against the *Britons*; but jealous of *Cyneheard*, who, to prevent his own Destruction, assassinated the King at *Merton* in *Surry*, and fell himself at the same Time by the Domestics of *Kinewulph*, who shewed their Duty to their Monarch in revenging his Death, and placing his Son on the Throne.

BRITHRIC, succeeded his Father *Kinewulph* in 784; but he was as much jealous of *Egbert*, as his Father had been of *Cyneheard*: For *Egbert* was not only of the Blood Royal, but his Virtues were an Ornament to his Blood;

he

he was the Idol of the People, and therefore the hated Object of the King, who banished him the Realm, and obliged this royal Youth to take Protection in the Court of *France*, where he was graciously received by *Charlemagne*, the greatest Prince of his Age, under whom he acquired the Knowledge of Government in Peace, and the Command of Armies in War. *Charlemagne* subjected all *Germany*, *Hungary*, *Sclavonia*, *Italy*, *Denmark*, and almost all *Spain* to his Empire, and caused himself to be crowned Emperor of the West: *Egbert* was elected to the Crown of *Wessex*, he reduced all the Heptarchy into one Kingdom, and caused himself to be crowned King of *England*: So that the great *Egbert* was to his Country, what the great *Charles* was to *France*; both of them acquired the Name of Great by their illustrious Actions, and both of them were the Founders of mighty States by their own Virtues.

AFTER the Banishment of *Egbert*, the *Danes* made their first Attempt against the *Anglo-Saxons*, by landing at *Portland*, in 787, in three Ships; but they were soon repulsed, and compelled to retire to their Ships: However, if *Britric* had suspended his Fears about *Egbert*, and was afterwards undisturbed by the *Danes*, he soon fell a Prey where he least expected the Destroyer: He was poisoned by his own Queen, who was Sister to *Offa*, King of *Mercia*; but she perished a common Beggar in the Streets of *Pavia* in *Italy*: While *Egbert*, by the united Voice of his Countrymen, was elected King; being sent for from *Rome*, where he accompanied *Charlemagne*, who had been a Father to his illustrious Exile, and now parted from him with all the Tenderness of a Parent, giving him the strongest Marks of his Affection, and wishing him the full Completion of that Glory which he so nobly acquired.

The Kingdom of the East Saxons, or ESSEX.

THIS Country was of so little Importance among the Heptarchy, that it was rather a Vice-royalty, than an

independent State; being at first dependent upon the Kings of *Kent*, and afterwards tributary to *Mercia*; though *Erkenwin*, who founded it in 527, out of the Counties of *Essex* and *Middlesex*, while they were subject to *Kent*, intended to have erected an absolute Monarchy. His Successors are so many royal Cyphers in the History of those Times; for their particular Histories amount to no more than their bare Names; which were *Sledda*, and *Sabert*; *Saxred*, *Seward*, and *Sigebert*, who reigned together, and were all three killed in one Battle against the *West Saxons* in 623; two *Sigeberts*, the one called the Little, and the other the Good, the latter of whom succeeded the former, though he was only his Cousin-German, and though the former had both a Son and a Brother; but *Sigebert* the Good was assassinated by two of his Noblemen, and was succeeded by his Brother *Swi-thelm*; *Sigher* and *Sebba* who reigned jointly; *Sighard* and *Senofrid*, who also reigned jointly; *Offa*, *Seolred*, and *Swithred*, under whom the Kingdom of *Essex* was subdued by *Egbert*, in 747.

THE History of *Essex* is the most imperfect of all the Heptarchy: Its Princes are remarkable for nothing but the Superstition of some, and the Infidelity of others: *Sabert* was the first who was converted to Christianity; but his three Sons apostatized to Paganism, as also did *Sigher*: However, this Contempt for the Christian Religion was balanced by the Zeal shewn to it by their Successors; for *Sebba* turned Monk, as also did *Offa*; the former of whom died in *London* and was buried at St. *Paul's*, where his Coffin remained till the Year 1600; the latter died in *Rome*, and was buried at St. *Peter's*.

The Kingdom of NORTHUMBERLAND.

THIS Monarchy was properly established by *Ida* in 547; it was remarkable for the Number and Bravery of its Inhabitants, who were always in Arms, either against the unsubdued *Britons* on the one Side, or the invading *Picts* and *Scots* on the other.

IDA

Ida died in 560, and was succeeded by his two Sons, *Adda* and *Ella*; who divided the Kingdom into the two States of *Bernicia* and *Deira*: The former, containing the Country beyond the *Tyne*, and North of *Severus's Wall*, as far as *Edinburgh Frith*, was subject to *Adda*; the latter, containing the Southern Part as far as the *Humber*, was subject to *Ella*: But, after five Kings reigning in *Bernicia*, *Edelfrid* married *Acca* the Daughter of *Ella*, whereby the two Kingdoms were re-united in 588, on the Death of *Ella*; though in prejudice of his infant Son *Edwin*.

EDELFRID was a brave, and a fortunate Prince; he repelled an Invasion of the *Scots*; and afterwards led his victorious Army against the *Britons*, who had formed an Union with the *Scots* to reduce the formidable Power of *Edelfrid*. The *Britons*, or *Welch*, were in Possession of *Cheshire*; and *Lancashire* was a Part of the Kingdom of *Northumberland*: *Edelfrid*, in 613, prepared to attack the City of *Caerleon*, or *Chester*; and the *Britons* prepared for its Defence: The *Northumbrian* Prince was at the Head of a numerous Body of brave Soldiers; the *Britons* were headed by a numerous Body of Priests: The Besiegers approached the Walls, and the Besieged sallied to meet them in the Field: A Battle ensued, wherein *Edelfrid* was victorious; after putting about 1200 Monks to the Sword, as they were praying for Success in Sight of the *British* Army. *Edelfrid* advanced into *Wales*; and, being a Pagan, destroyed the famous Monastery of *Bangor* in *Flintshire*: But *Bleeric* Duke of *Cornwal*, *Margeduc* Prince of South *Wales*, and *Cadwan* Prince of North *Wales*, joined their Forces together, advanced against *Edelfrid*, killed 10,000 of his Men, and obliged him to retire into his own Country; where he soon after lost his Life and Crown, in a Battle fought between him and *Edwin*, whose Right he had usurped, and obliged to wander about in Exile, till he found an Asylum in the Court of *Redwald* King of the *East Angles*; who generously protected the young Prince, headed an Army in his Favour, and engaged *Edelfrid* near the River *Idle* in *Nottinghamshire*, in 617; in which Engagement *Edelfrid*

was slain, his Army routed, and his two Sons obliged to retire into *Scotland*; leaving the Kingdom of *Northumberland* to the Mercy of *Redwald*, who nobly bestowed the whole upon *Edwin*.

THE *Northumbrians* were brave in Arms, but uncivilized in Manners; they were yet Pagans in Religion, and Strangers to the social Virtues: But *Edwin* soon brought them into a State more happy for themselves, and less dreadful to their Neighbours: He embraced Christianity himself, and made such excellent Provisions for reforming his People, that Theft and Rapine were no more to be seen; in Consequence of which, his Subjects became Christians, and enjoyed their Properties in such Security, that Historians say, a Child might have gone over the whole Kingdom of *Northumberland*, with a Purse of Gold in his Hand, without Danger of any Robbery.

REDWALD, on Account of his noble Behaviour to *Edwin*, and his Victory over *Edelfrid*, obtained the Dignity of Monarch of the *Saxons*, or Chief of the Confederacy; upon whose Death, in 624, *Edwin* was invested with that Dignity; which he maintained with great Respect: For he carried the Prerogatives of the Monarchy higher than any of his Predecessors; and he was feared, as well as esteemed, by his Cotemporary Princes of the Heptarchy, over all of whom he pretended to have an Authority; and by an Ensign carried before him in the Form of a Globe, as a Symbol of the heptarchical Government in his Person, he intimated to them, that he would be considered not only as their Head, but their Master. This Ambition was as fatal, as it was great: *Penda* the King of *Mercia*, whose Dominions were large and the most contiguous to those of *Edwin*, scorned the Thoughts of being a tributary Prince, and entered into an Alliance with *Cadwallo*, Prince of North *Wales*, to reduce the Power of the *Northumbrian* Monarch. The confederate Princes assembled their Forces together, and marched towards the Territories of *Edwin*, who met them upon his Borders, and a bloody Battle ensued at *Hatfield* in the West-Riding of *Yorkshire*, wherein *Edwin* was defeated and slain, with *Offred* his eldest Son.

THE victorious Princes took Possession of the Kingdom, put *Edfrid* the surviving Son of *Edwin* to Death, and committed such Acts of Cruelty, as to inspirit the People rather to die honourably with their Swords in their Hands, than to perish tamely by the Barbarity of two insolent Tyrants. They elected *Ofric* King of *Deira*, and *Anfred* King of *Bernicia*; but their Hopes of Deliverance from the Scourge of foreign Power, were frustrated by domestic Dissentions: The two Monarchs, soon after their Election, were separately attacked, defeated, and slain by *Cadwallo*, who continued his Barbarities in a very enormous Manner, till he was opposed by *Oswald*, Brother of *Anfred*, who defeated and slew *Cadwallo* at *Haledon*; while *Penda* was in *Mercia*.

OSWALD expelled his Enemies, and took Possession of the whole Kingdom of *Northumberland*, to which he was Heir; being intitled to *Bernicia* by *Edelfrid* his Father; and to *Deira* by *Acca* his Mother, Sister of *Edwin*. But the Fortune of this brave, wise, and virtuous Prince, was like the Opening of a vernal Morning; fair and glorious, at its first Appearance; soon to be obscured with sudden and unexpected Clouds. He had been long an Exile in *Scotland*; in this State of Adversity he improved himself in every Virtue that could recommend him to obtain a Crown, and intitle him to preserve it: He was the Protector of his Subjects from a rapacious Tyranny, and himself the best Pattern of Justice; he was elected Chief of the Heptarchy, and proved the best Support to Christianity. He was many Years happy as a Prince reigning in the Hearts of his Subjects; whose Felicity consisted in that of their Prince: But the Ambition of *Penda* threatened Destruction to both. The *Mercian* Monarch envied the Greatness, and the Virtues of *Oswald*; he was displeased at his excellent Character, and a profest Foe to the Christian Religion: Therefore, he attempted to overturn all together; and to invade the *Northumbrians* without any Declaration of Hostilities. But *Oswald* foresaw, and endeavoured to avert the Storm, by carrying the War into the Country of his Enemy: He entered *Mercia*, and was met by *Penda* with a su-

80 A NEW HISTORY

perior Army at *Maserfelth* in *Sthropshire*, where a fatal Battle was fought, in which *Oswald* was slain, and his Army defeated: The inhuman Conqueror cut the Body of this excellent Prince in several Pieces, and erected them on Stakes, as so many Trophies, in the Field of Battle, which, from that fatal Day, received the Name of *Oswaldtree*, or *Oswestry*.

PENDA, again, invaded *Northumberland*, and acted with all the Cruelty of savage Insolence; after which, he attacked the *East Angles*; whereby the *Northumbrians* were freed from the Horrors of so dangerous an Enemy, and at Liberty to make another Election to the Crown. Accordingly, *Oswy*, the Brother of *Oswald*, was placed upon the Throne of *Bernicia*; but the Crown of *Deira* was given to *Oswin* the Son of *Osric*, who was slain by *Cadwallo*: But *Oswy*, in 651, caused *Oswin* to be murdered, in Hopes of uniting the two Kingdoms; in which he was deceived; for the *Deirans* detested the Murder, and, instead of submitting to the Murderer, immediately set *Adelwalt*, Son of his Brother *Oswald*, on the Throne, who was better able to defend himself than his Predecessor. *Oswy*, jealous of his Rival in the divided Power, sought to augment his own by an Alliance with *Penda*, the implacable Enemy of the Race of *Ida*: He succeeded in his Alliance so far as to marry his Son *Alfred* to *Chineburga* the Daughter of *Penda*, and also his own Daughter to *Peada* the Son of the Mercian Monarch: But *Penda* had no Compunction from the Ties of Blood; his only Passion was War, and all the Pleasure he found in his Wars was the Destruction of the *Northumbrians*, whom he again began to invade, and committed such Outrages that at last roused up the Spirit of the injured Prince, and his afflicted People.

PENDA had formed an Alliance with *Adelwalt* King of *Deira*, and *Ethelbert* King of the *East Angles*; they were preparing to attack *Oswy* with their united Forces, and *Oswy* was preparing for Defence. The *Bernician* Prince met the confederate Army, in 655, and a Battle ensued on the Banks of the River *Aire* in *Yorkshire*, wherein *Adelwalt* deserted his Allies, which gave *Oswy* the

the Battle, wherein both *Penda* and *Ethelbert* were slain ; after which the Place was called *Winwidfield*, and now *Leeds*.

THE victorious *Oswy* entered *Mercia*, and made it tributary three Years ; obliging the Sons of *Penda* to seek Security in Banishment : But the *Northumbrian* Officers were too oppressive on the *Mercians*, who took up Arms, drove their Enemies away, and placed *Wulpher* the Son of *Penda* upon the Throne. However, *Oswy* repaired this Loss by the Acquisition of *Deira*, on the Death of *Adelwulf*, who died without Heirs ; whereupon the *Northumbrian* Dominions were once more united under one Sovereign ; which *Oswy* soon after divided again, by giving *Deira* to his natural Son *Alfred* : However, *Oswy* died in 670, when *Alfred* was dispossessed of his Kingdom, and obliged to fly into *Ireland*, by *Egfrid*, who succeeded to all the Dominions of his Father *Oswy*, and also to the Monarchy of the *Anglo Saxons*.

EGFRID, as well as his Father, was the Chief of the Heptarchy ; being esteemed at Home, and feared Abroad. He was successful against the *Mercians*, who invaded his Country ; after which he sent an Army, under the Conduct of *Bertfrid*, to reduce *Ireland*, who was obliged to return with considerable Loss. *Egfrid* then turned his Arms against the *Scots* and *Picts*, who in 686 led him into their Morasses and Fens, where they surrounded his famished Troops, destroyed half his Army, and saw the King perish among his Soldiers ; though with all that Spirit in the Hour of his Death, which had made him illustrious in his Life : But the Loss of their King was not the only Loss felt by the *Northumbrians* ; for, after this Defeat, the *Picts* improved their Victory by the Conquest of such Part of *Bernicia* as lay convenient to them ; While the *Scots* and *Britons* repossessed themselves of those Portions of Territory which had been dismembered from their Dominions.

As *Egfrid* left no Issue, *Alfred* was recalled by the *Northumbrians* from *Ireland*, and crowned Monarch of both Kingdoms, which from thenceforward continued united ; though much contracted in Extent : But the Mo-

narchy of the Heptarchy descended to the Kings of *Wessex.*

ALFRED defended his Dominions, without seeking to enlarge them, and died in 705; leaving his Son *Ofric* to succeed him at eight Years of Age, under the Guardianship of *Britbriç*, one of his Nobles, who suppressed a Rebellion during the Minority of his Prince, which the Prince was not able to do for himself when he came to Years of Maturity. Another Rebellion was formed against him in 716, by *Cenred* and *Ofric*, Descendants of *Ogga*, the natural Son of *Ida*; who gave the King battle, in which he was defeated and slain in the eleventh Year of his Reign; *Cenred* being his Successor. *Cenred* was succeeded by *Ofric*, the other principal Author of the Revolt; and *Ofric* left the Crown to his Cousin *Ceolwulph*, who, after reigning eight Years, deserted his Palace for the Sake of a Monastery: A Custom among the new converted Saxons, as reproachful to their Monarchy, as it was profitable to their Priests; being the Marks of a superstitious Weakness in the former, and of a political Ambition in the latter.

EDGBERT succeeded his Cousin *Ceolwulph*, in 738; and imitated him by despising the purple Robes of a Prince, for the mean Habit of a Monk, after he had shewn his Courage against the *Picts*, from whom he had recovered a great Part of their new conquered Territory, which, together with his Crown, he left to his Son *Osulph* in 757, who was murdered the same Year, by his own Family.

ETHELWALD, or *Mollon*, was the next Monarch: But, as he was not of the Royal Blood, all the Nobles thought themselves equally intitled to the Crown; which occasioned those Factions that at last terminated in the entire Loss of the publick Liberty. *Aldred* succeeded *Ethelwald* in 765, who was soon after banished: He was succeeded both in his Kingdom, and in his Fortune, by *Ethelred*, who was obliged to leave his Crown to save his Life. *Alfwold*, his Successor, was murdered by his rebellious Subjects in 788; and his Brother *Ofred*, who succeeded to the Crown, was soon afterwards banished: Upon

on which, *Ethelred* was recalled; who having got *Osred* into his Power, put him to death in 792, and was killed himself in 795: He was succeeded by *Oswald*, who in less than a Month was drove into Exile; when *Eardulf* was made King, and likewise dethroned; but he recovered his Crown, by a Victory which he obtained over the Rebels, in 798, at *Whaley* in *Lancashire*; though eight Years after, he was driven from his Throne, to seek his Fortune like the meanest of his Subjects. *Erfwold*, and *Eandred*, afterwards enjoyed the Crown: But their own Dissentions, the Incursions of the *Scots*, the Descent of the *Danes*, and the Glory of *Egbert*, obliged the *Northumbrians* to submit to this great Prince, who reduced the Heptarchy, and put an End to those civil Commotions which had torn this miserable Country to Pieces, by filling it with every Scene of Blood and Calamity that civil Rage could inspire, or bloody Ambition execute.

The Kingdom of the East ANGLES.

THE Nation of the *East Angles* was of little Consequence among the Heptarchy, except under the Reign of *Redwald*, who was the Chief of the Confederacy; at other Times, it was in subjection to *Northumberland*, and never absolutely free, being annexed to the Kingdom of *Mercia*, before it was reduced by *Egbert*.

THEIR Princes are as little remarkable for their military or civil Characters, as their Country for its Power, except the abovementioned *Redwald*, with *Sigebert*, and *Annas*: The former of whom protected *Edwin* from the Malice of *Edelfrid* King of *Northumberland*, slew him in Battle, and gave his Kingdom to *Edwin*: The second was a great Promoter of the Christian Religion, and a generous Encourager of Learning; but he despised temporal Busines for monastic Indolence; however, his Country being invaded by *Penda* the *Mercian*, his Countrymen prevailed on him to appear at the Head of the *East Anglian* Army; he depended more on religious Grace, than military Courage; instead of Armour, he wore only the Habit

Habit of a Monk; instead of a Sword, he carried only a Wand; the *East Angles* were defeated, and *Sigebert*, with *Egric* to whom he had resigned the Crown, were slain in the Engagement: And *Annas* was brave enough to protect *Cenwal* King of *Wessex* from the Resentment of *Penda*, and Friend enough to restore him to his Crown.

As for the other Kings of *East Anglia*, it is sufficient to mention their Names, which History has adorned with no Honours in War, and decked with no Virtues in Peace; the Dates, not the Matters of their Reigns, alone distinguishing them from their Subjects. *Uffa*, who founded this Kingdom in 571, died in 578, and was succeeded by his Son *Titilus*, whose Son and Successor was *Redwald*: After whose Death the Crown came to *Eorpwald*, *Sigebert*, *Egric*, *Annas*, *Ethelric* or *Ethelbert*, who was killed with *Penda* in a Fight against the *Northumbrians*, *Ethekwald*, *Aldulph*, *Alfwold*, *Beorna*, *Ethelred*, and *Etbelbert*; in the latter of whom the *East Anglian* Line became extinct; for this Prince, being invited by *Offa* the King of *Mercia* to court his Daughter *Elfred*, was treacherously put to Death by *Offa* in 792, who seized upon the Kingdom, which continued annexed to *Mercia* till the Dissolution of the Heptarchy.

The Kingdom of MERCIA.

THIS Kingdom was the finest and largest of all the Heptarchy; being 160 Miles long, and 100 broad: It was bounded on the North by the *Humber*, by which it was separated from *Northumberland*; on the West by the *Severn*, beyond which were the *Welsh* or *Britons*; on the South by the *Thames*, by which it was divided from the Kingdoms of *Kent*, *Sussex*, and *Wessex*; having the Kingdoms of *Essex* and *East Anglia* on the East: Thus *Mercia* was guarded on three Sides, by the three principal Rivers in the Island, which ran into the Sea, on the East, South, and West Parts of the Island; serving for Boundaries to all the other Kingdoms: From whence the Name of *Mercia* is derived; the Word *Merc* signifying a Bound,

or

or *Mark*, in the *Saxon* Language: But the Inhabitants of this Kingdom were termed by some Historians *Mediterranei Angli*, the midland *Engliss*, or the middle *Angles*; and by others, the South *Humbrians*, as being South of the *Humber*: However, their most common Name was that of the *Mercians*.

CRIDDA, who founded this Kingdom in 582, was one of the Descendants of *Woden*; he died in 594, and was succeeded by his Son *Wibba*, who died in 615: But *Ethelbert*, King of *Kent*, pretended a Right of Superiority to this Crown, as the lineal Successor of *Hengist*, and exercised it so far, as not only to seize the Crown of *Mercia* during the Life of *Wibba*, but after his Death to deprive his Son *Penda* of the Inheritance, and place *Cheorl* his Cousin *German* on the Throne in his stead.

CHEORL shewed more Love to his Country, than Gratitude to his Benefactor: His Ambition prevailed on him to keep the Crown; but his Patriotism would not suffer him to wear it as a Dependency, even from the Prince who bestowed it upon him; he, therefore, threw off the Yoke of *Kent*, kept his Country free, and left it so at his Death, which happened in 653; but, as he died without Issue, he was succeeded by *Penda* the Son of *Wibba*.

THIS Prince was 50 Years of Age when he ascended the Throne of *Mercia*; he was solely addicted to War, being a Terror to his Neighbours, and so severe an Enemy to all Christians, that he killed in Battle five Christian Kings; but was at last killed himself as he fought against *Oswy* King of *Northumberland* in 655.

Oswy, on the Death of *Penda*, seized the Kingdom of *Mercia*, from which he was afterwards dispossessed by three *Mercian* Noblemen, who put *Wulpher* the Son of *Penda* upon the Throne. This Prince had the Courage proper for a Soldier, and the Wisdom necessary for a Governor: He was as much a Christian, as his Father was a Pagan; and as much a Friend to the Church, as *Penda* had been its Enemy. He reduced the Soath *Saxons*; he conquered the Isle of *Wight*; was elected Monarch of the *Heptarchy*; and after fighting a bloody Battle

the against *Escwin* King of *Wessex*, died in 675; being succeeded by *Ethelred*, though in prejudice to his Son *Kenred*.

ETHELRED erected *Herefordshire* into a separate Government, in favour of his Brother *Merewald*; but it was soon re-annexed to *Mercia*. He invaded *Kent* in 676, destroyed *Rochester*, and returned to his own Kingdom with great Spoil. In 679, he was successful against the King of *Northumberland*. After which, he embraced a monastic Life; leaving his Crown to his Nephew *Kenred*, who was the right Heir; but, during the Usurpation of his Uncle, had devoted himself to Retirement and Contemplation; for which, he contracted so great a Habit, that, after reigning five Years, he resigned the Weight of Government to his Kinsman *Ceolred*, the Son of *Ethelred*; went to *Rome* with *Offa* King of *Essex*, received the Tonsure, and died there in the Garb and Profession of a Monk.

CEOLRED had the military Spirit of his Family, and opposed *Ina* the brave King of *Wessex*, whom he rivalled in the Field, and died in 716; when he was succeeded by *Ethelbald*, the Grandson of *Eoppa*, Brother to *Penda*.

ETHELBALD was remarkable for his Bravery: He invaded *Northumberland*, attacked most of the other Kingdoms, and was elected Chief of the Confederacy: After which, he aimed at extending the Prerogative; but was killed in an Insurrection headed by *Beornred* in 757.

BEORNRED usurped the Crown; but was soon obliged to relinquish it by the *Mercian* Nobles, who elected *Offa*, of the Blood Royal, for their Monarch. *Offa* approved himself worthy of the Election; he became Chief of the Confederacy; dreadful for his Valour Abroad, and amiable for his Justice at Home. He attacked *Afric* King of *Kent*, and slew him with his own Hand at *Oxford*; he afterwards subdued that Kingdom; next turned his Arms against the *West Saxons*; and then invaded *Northumberland*; being every where successful. Whilst *Offa* was conquering the other *Saxons*, his own Dominions

ons were invaded by the *Welch* in 776: But *Offa* concluded a Peace with the *Saxons*, and repulsed his Invaders, from whom he took all the plain Country between the *Severn* and the *Wye*, peopled it with *Saxons* as a Barrier against future Invasions, and threw up that prodigious Entrenchment, since called *Offa's Dike*, to prevent the *Welch* from ever recovering the conquered Country. This Dike extended about ninety Miles; it run through *Flintshire*, *Denbighshire*, *Shropshire*, *Montgomeryshire*, *Radnorshire*, *Herefordshire*, and *Monmouthshire*, reaching from the Mouth of the *Dee*, to that of the *Wye*; and formed the Boundary between the *Saxons*, and the *Britons*; which is now plainly to be distinguished, at several Places. In 787, *Offa*, associated his Son *Egfrid* in the Sovereignty of *Mercia*: He was become extremely formidable; and, in 792, his Power was increased by joining the Kingdom of East *Anglia* to his own; for, having invited *Ethelbert* to his Court, with a Promise of giving him his Daughter in Marriage, the East *Anglian* Monarch was murdered at *Mardon* near *Hereford*; when *Offa* seized upon his Dominions. This Crime blackens the Character of the *Mercian* Prince; which has been attributed to the Instigations of his Wife; but *Offa* shewed such Remorse for it, that he undertook a Journey to *Rome*, to obtain Absolution from the Pope: The Pontiff indulged the Prince, and the Prince gratified the Pontiff: Murder was to be pardoned by an idle Ceremony; but that Ceremony was not to be granted without an Equivalent in Money; and this Equivalent consisted in no less than the Foundation of a Papal Supremacy over the Church of *England*: For *Offa* augmented the Revenue of the College founded at *Rome* by *Ina*, by ordering a Penny to be yearly collected of every Family within his Dominions, which consisted of twenty-three Counties; where their Lands, not including their Tenements, amounted to the yearly Rent of thirty Pence. The *Rome-Scot* of *Ina*, was now turned into the *Peter-pence* of *Offa*, because it was payable on the Feast of St. *Peter*; which was only intended to defray the Expences of such *English* People as came to study at *Rome*: But the Popes afterwards pretended it was a Tribute paid by the
English

English to St. Peter, and his Successors, and converted it to their own Use, 'till it was entirely abolished by *Henry the Eighth*, seven-Hundred and forty Years after the Grant of *Offa*.

OFFA, on his return to *Rome*, gave several lavish Endowments to the Church, particularly St. *Alban's*; but still he was more the temporal than the spiritual Man; he preferred Grandeur to Hermitage, and he kept his Crown till his Death, which happened in 796; dying full of Years and Glory; for he reigned forty Years, and his Reign was memorable on several Accounts; as his Dike; the Union of *East Anglia* to *Mercia*; the erecting of *Litchfield* into an Archbishopric; *Peter-pence*; and a Body of Laws, published under the Title of *Mercens Leaga*, or the *Laws of the Mercians*, which were adhered to by his Successors, and many of them inserted in the Laws of King *Alfred*, published about the End of the next Century.

EGFRID succeeded his Father in the Kingdom of *Mercia*, and Dignity of Monarch: But he died the same Year; leaving his Kinsman *Cenulph* for his Successor; who invaded *Kent*, took the *Kentish* King Prisoner, and annexed his Dominions to *Mercia*; after which, he died in 819, and was succeeded by his Brother *Ceolwulph*, who was soon after expelled the Kingdom by *Beornulf*: This Prince was slain by the *East Angles*, and succeeded by *Ludecan*: But it will be more proper, under the Reign of *Egbert*, to shew how *Mercia* was reduced by that Prince, as well as the rest of the Heptarchy.

As for the *Britons*; they were entirely confined to the mountainous Country of *Wales*, where they preserved themselves free from the *Saxon* Yoke, and lived to see the *Saxons* bow to the *Normans*, while the ancient *Britons* continued brave and unconquered: They preserved their Liberties till the Year 1282, and they retain their Language to this Day.

AFTER their total Defeat by the *Saxons*, those *Britons* who were fond of Freedom united together, and formed a new Monarchy, under one Sovereign, who had the Title of King of *Britain*, which existed till the Year

689, when, on the Death of *Cadwallader*, the Name and Nation of the *Britons* were altered: For *Idwallo*, on the Death of his Father, instead of continuing the Sovereignty of King of the *Britons*, assumed only the Title of King of *Wales*, which continued under the Jurisdiction of one Monarch, until the Year 870, when *Roderic the Second*, surnamed *Maur*, or Great, divided it between his three Sons, with a Reservation of Supremacy from the Kings of South *Wales* and *Powisland*, to the Kings of North *Wales* successively. The *Welch* struggled hard with the *Saxons* to recover a Part of their Country: But in vain: They several Times invaded the *Saxons*; sometimes with Success, at other Times with Loss; at last *Offa* confined them by his Dike, and *Egbert* obliged them to keep their own Boundaries. But, all this Time, the *Britons* were as free in their Religion, as in their Government; they paid no more Obedience to the See of *Rome* in spiritual Matters, than they paid to the *Saxons* in civil Affairs: They had seven Dioceses, and were under the Care of their own Bishops, of whom *Dubricius* was the most remarkable, who removed the metropolitan or archiepiscopal Seat from *Chester* to *Landaff*, by whose Care many Seminaries of Learning were established, particularly the Monastery at *Bangor*, in Imitation of which the University of *Oxford* was afterwards founded by King *Alfred*. *Dubricius* devoted himself to a monastic Life, and was succeeded in his ecclesiastical Dignity, by *St. David*, Uncle to King *Arthur*. *St. Asaph* was also one of the *British* Bishops; and the *British* Church, under such excellent Pastors, was remarkable for its Doctrine and Purity.

From the bleak *Baltic's* less delightful Shore,
The *Saxons*, *Jutes*, and *Angles*, into *Britain* pour.

I. Where the smooth *Medway* takes her winding
Way,

The Race of *Hengist* long maintain'd their Sway.

II. But *Ella's* Offspring found a shorter Date;
For *Wessex Ceaulin* won their *Suffex* State.

III. *Cerdic*

III. Cerdic establish'd first the *Wessex* Throne;
And Ina added Lustre to his Crown;
But Egbert's Pow'r did all the Nations own.

IV. O'er *Essex*, Erkenwin began to reign;
Though small his Bounds, and few his martial
Train.

V. When first the *Saxons* throng'd round *Humber's*
Shore,
Their Leaders both acknowledg'd *Hengist's* Pow'r:
But Ida, o'er *Northumbria's* spacious Plains,
An independent, happy Monarch reigns:
Edwin, and *Oswald*, grac'd the Crown they wore,
Which from their Brows the bloody *Penda* tore;
But *Oswey* from its Tyrants freed the Land,
And *Penda* fell by his victorious Hand.

VI. Uffa first rul'd the small East *Anglian* State;
And *Redwald* made his little Country great.

VII. Where *Severn* Flows, and o'er the spacious
Land
Which *Mercia* form'd, first *Cridda* took Command:
The War-hound *Penda* fell Ambition's Prey;
But *Wulpher* nobly held the regal Sway:
Offa was nobler still, whose Dike confin'd
The *Britons* to the Bounds by him assign'd.

Such were the *Saxon* Realms, obtain'd in Blood;
And rooted fast by Laws, wise, just, and good.
But civil Discord, and Ambition's Pow'r,
Contending Kingdoms violently tore;
'Till Egbert form'd the well-cemented Band,
That gave new Strength and Glory to the Land.

The HISTORY of the ENGLISH
CHURCH, from the Conversion
of Ethelbert King of Kent in
the Year 597, to the Dissolution
of the Heptarchy in 829.

THE Conversion of the *Anglo-Saxons* was occasioned by Pope *Gregory* the first, who, before his Advance-
ment to the Pontificate, observed some of them offered to sale in the Slave-Market at *Rome*; it being a common Custom among the *Saxons* to sell their Children when they were overstocked; and the singular Beauty of these Slaves made him think both them, and their Country-
men, worthy Objects of christian Charity, so as to be removed from the Gloom of pagan Ignorance. He at first undertook their Conversion himself: But, being prevented by the Pope, the Work was deferred till *Gregory* was advanced to the papal Chair; when he sent over *Augustin*, or *Austin*, a *Benedictine* Monk, with forty of his Brotherhood, to accomplish his Design: They were attended by some *Franks*, who served them as Interpreters; and, on their Arrival in *Kent*, they found little Difficulty in converting *Ethelbert*, whose Wife, *Birtha*, was Daugh-
ter to *Caribert* King of the *Franks*, at least of *Paris*, and a zealous Christian.* Their Labours were soon extended through all Parts of the *Kentish* Dominions, and their Suc-
cess was great, being the Effect of Persuasion, not of Compulsion: so that *Augustin* erected an archiepiscopal See at *Canterbury*, and an episcopal See at *Rochester*: The former claiming a Jurisdiction over all *England*, which

* See *Rolt's History of France*, page 27.

92 A NEW HISTORY

at present it enjoys; though formerly this Submission occasioned great Contests between the Archbishops of this See and those of *York*.

THE East Saxons were converted in 598, by *Melitus*, one of the missionary Attendants on *Augustin*; and the Seat of the Bishopric was in *London*.

THE East Angles were converted by *Felix* a Burgundian Priest, in 624: The See being at first fixed at *Dummoc*, or *Durwicb*, in *Suffolk*: It was afterwards divided into two Bishoprics, and *Dummoc* was at last united to that of *Elmham*; from whence the episcopal See was removed to *Thetford* in *Norfolk*, and afterwards to *Norwich*, where it remains at present.

THE Noribumbrians were converted in 627 by *Paulin*, or *Paulinus*, who established his See at *York*, which was afterwards removed to the little Island of *Lindisfarne*, or *Holy Island*, on the Coast of Northumberland: This See was divided into two Bishoprics; *York* for the Kingdom of *Deira*, and *Lindisfarne* for *Bernicia*: A third See was also erected at *Hagulstad*, or *Hexham*; and a fourth at *Wibistern*: But they were all Suffragans to the Metropolitan of *York*, or *Lindisfarne*.

THE West Saxons were converted by *Berinus*, an *Italian*, in 643; who fixed his episcopal See at *Dorchester*: But this Kingdom was afterwards divided into two Dioceses, when another See was established at *Winchester*: These were again united under the former; and divided again into the Bishoprics of *Winchester* and *Sherborne*.

THE Mercians owed their Conversion, in 644, to *Duma* a *Scotchman*; and their See was first at *Litchfield*; but, that being insufficient for so large a Kingdom, three other Bishoprics were erected; being *Worcester*, *Hereford*, and *Leicester*, or *Chester*; who were all Suffragans to the Archbishop of *Litchfield* for some Time, but afterwards to the See of *Canterbury*.

AND Christianity was first planted among the South Saxons, by *Wilfrid* Bishop of *York*, in 686; who established his See at *Selsey*, which was afterwards removed to *Chichester*, where it continues to this Day.

THUS

THUS it was eighty-nine Years before the Conversion extended over all the Heptarchy: But it should be observed, that the Christian Church, at the Time the *Anglo-Saxons* were converted, was far gone from its original Purity; the Monks having introduced several religious Practices that were not of divine or apostolical Institution. The *Saxons*, from pagan Persecutors, were now become zealous Christians; where heathen Cruelties had been exercised, flourishing Churches were established; Idolatry was banished, and happier Manners introduced with the Christian Religion; which was a Blessing their *Saxon* Brethren in *Germany* could not enjoy till 200 Years after. However, during this Propagation of the Gospel, some of the seven Kingdoms were infested with Revolutions, whereby the Root of Christianity was shaken, particularly in *Essex*, *Northumberland*, and *East Anglia*: So that, from the Beginning of these Conversions to the End, there was a Mixture of Christians and Idolaters in *England*; some of the Kingdoms being converted, while others remained in Paganism; neither were all of the same Kingdom converted at once; yet, in less than ninety Years, all *England* embraced Christianity.

THE Monks, in converting the *Anglo-Saxons*, took every Precaution to make them pay a Respect to the Superiority of the *Roman See*, and to inspire them with Reverence for Monasteries; the former for the Aggrandizement of the Pope, the latter for the enriching of themselves. The *Welch* refused to acknowledge the papal Supremacy, or to celebrate the Feast of *Easter* in the same Manner as *Augustin* had ordered, and the *Romish* Missionaries constantly irritated the *Saxon* Princes against them in Revenge. It is surprizing to think what a Number of Monasteries were erected, and how richly they were endowed: People were infatuated with a monastic Life, and their Infatuation was much to the Advantage of the Monks, who made an incredible Number of Saints, among whom were Kings, Queens, Princes, Princesses, or Persons of the highest Birth and Stations; for, in less than 200 Years, there were seven Kings, seven Queens, eight Princes, and sixteen Princesses, distinguished with
the

the Title of Saints; besides, there were ten Kings, and eleven Queens, who resigned their Crowns and Palaces, for Cowls and Monasteries.

In pagan Ignorance the *Saxons* lay,
Till *Austin* pierc'd the Gloom, and brought the Day.
Their Altars reek'd no more with human Blood:
The Christian Faith in all their Bosoms glow'd:
But Superstition reach'd each neighb'ring Throne,
And *England's* Kings bow'd to the papal Crown.



The Dissolution of the Saxon HEP-TARCHY; and the Foundation of the English MONARCHY by Egbert.

WELL may it be asked, how monstrous were the Absurdities that the Priesthood imposed on the Ignorance and Superstition of Mankind in the pagan World, concerning the Originals of Governments, their Institutions and Rites, their Laws and Customs? And what Opportunities had they for such Impositions, whilst the keeping the Records, and collecting the Traditions, was the peculiar Office of this Order of Men in several Nations? In *Britain*, this was at first the Case among the *British Druids*, and afterwards among the *Roman Flamens*: It was also the Case among the pagan *Saxons*; but now the Gloom begins to be dissipated by the illuminating Rays of the Christian Religion: Learning begins to be encouraged, and the civil Arts promoted; *Bede* began to write in 700, *Egbert* began to reign in 819, and the *English History* to make a fairer Appearance.

FROM the Foundation to the Dissolution of the Hep-tarchy, there was always one chief Prince or Monarch of the *Saxon Confederacy*; and they were eight in all: the first was *Ella King* of the *South Saxons*; the second was *Ceaulin King* of the *West Saxons*; the third was *Ethelbert King* of *Kent*; the fourth was *Redwald King* of the *East Angles*; the fifth was *Edwin King* of *Northumberland*; the sixth was *Oswald* who succeeded *Edwin*; the

the seveth was *Oswy* the Brother of *Oswald*; and the eighth was *Egbert* King of the West Saxons, and the Founder of the English Monarchy.

AMONG all commendable Men, those principally deserve our best Esteem, who have happily laid the Foundation of divine Worship, and true Religion: The same Esteem next belongs to them who have been the Founders of Kingdoms and Commonwealths. It is true, that the Commendations paid to former Times, are not always paid with Reason: Because, some Matters relating to Antiquity are not entirely known; and others are concealed through Fear, or Party. Most Writers have so much followed the Fortunes of their Conquerors, that, to make their Victories glorious, they not only augment their virtuous Actions; but so depreciate those of their Enemies, that Men born in other Ages and other Countries, either conquering or conquered, have Reason to admire those Men and Times, to respect their Fame, honour their Virtues, and revere their Characters. Thus *Cæsar* has been greatly celebrated, and *Cataline* as greatly stigmatized; though the former was the more to be censured, because he executed the Ill, which the latter only intended: *Cataline* died with Infamy by endeavouring to subdue his Country; *Cæsar* lived in imperial Splendour for accomplishing it: The Roman Historians were afraid of censoring *Cæsar*; though they were bold enough, in their Praises paid to the Memory of the excellent *Brutus*, to attribute much Honour to his Destroyer: But, who would not have been this *Brutus*, rather than that *Cæsar*? Or who would not be a private *Scipio*, in his native Country, rather than a publick *Alexander* over all the World? Or who would not rather wish to have the mild Power of *Ageſilaus*, *Timoleon*, or *Dion*, than the harsh Tyranny of *Nabis*, *Phalaris*, or *Dionysius*? For a Prince truly aiming at Glory, should wish to be the Chief of a disordered State, not to ruin it wholly, like *Cæsar*; but to recompose and to restore it like *Romulus*: Than this, Men cannot desire, nor Heaven bestow greater Opportunities of acquiring immortal Honour; and this was the happy Lot of *Egbert*.

SOME

SOME Historians have chose to commend *Hieron* of *Syracuse*, when he was a private Man; rather than *Perseus* of *Macedon*, when he was a King: Because, the one wanted nothing to make him a Prince, but a Principality; the other enjoyed no Part of a King, but a Kingdom. The same Compliment is due to *Egbert*, who, from an Exile, became the illustrious Founder of the *English* Monarchy. *Brithric*, the King of the West *Saxons*, dying in 800, without Issue; his Subjects threw their Eyes upon *Egbert* for their King: He was in Exile at *Rome*; but his Actions and Virtues, obtained him the Friendship of *Charles* the Great, and the Love of all the West *Saxons*, who sent for him over, and crowned him their Sovereign. This Prince was of the Blood-royal, the only surviving Descendant from *Inegild* the Brother of King *Ina*, and the lawful Heir to the Throne; if the Government had been claimed as an Inheritance by the Prince, which seems to have been granted to him by the Election of the People, who, in the Language of *William of Malmesbury* their best Historian, commanded him to reign. And from his Accession to the Throne, the *English* Nation not only received its Name, but the *English* History its Light: That was rendered more glorious; this was made more conspicuous: History before his Time, according to *Milton*, was little more than chronicling the Wars of Kites or Crows, flocking and fighting in the Air: But now, according to another Author, our History leads us into a more extended Plain, where the View enlarges, and the Prospect opens; where we can breathe a purer Air, and enjoy a brighter Sun.

MANY Authors have been of Opinion, particularly *Plutarch*, the best of all, that the *Romans* were more favoured by Fortune, than assisted by their Virtues, in acquiring their Empire: Perhaps, the same may be said of the *Saxons*; but this Remark can never be applied to *Egbert*, the greatest of all the *Saxon* Princes, who obtained his Dignity by his Merit, ennobled it by his Virtue, and defended it by his Valour.

EGBERT was no sooner on the Throne of *Wessex*, than he perceived himself superior to his neighbouring

Princes, and resolved to make the best Use of that Superiority: He found the *Saxons* degenerating in their Manners, and declining in their Strength: He saw them weakened by their own Divisions, and he wanted to consolidate the whole by the Dissolution of the Heptarchy.

THE *Saxon* Monarchs were fascinated by the *Romish* Monks; *Egbert* perceived, and formed his Glory on their Error: He scorned the fashionable Doctrine of the Times, which caused Princes to quit their Thrones, and enter Cells; he had the Example of *Charles the Great* for extending his Empire, and he as happily carried it into Execution; after spending the first seven Years of his Reign in settling the Affairs of his Kingdom, gaining the Love of his own Subjects, and rendering himself popular throughout the whole Heptarchy; by which Means, all the Nations became sensible of his great Abilities, and were prepared to receive him as their general Sovereign: But, to this, they were also incited by their common Danger, and their common Liberty; because, they were apprehensive that *Charlemagne* would spread his Conquests into their Country; for the Prevention of which, they soon found it necessary to extinguish all their intestine Dissentions, and unite themselves under one King, who had both Power and Spirit to defend his Kingdom.

A. D. *EGBERT* was sensible that the *Britons* retained an
808. inveterate Enmity to all the Race of *Woden*; he knew
 they were naturally brave; that they only wanted a proper General to render them as formidable as ever; and therefore he resolved to make them first sensible of his Power. Accordingly, in 808, he invaded the *Cornish Britons*, with a well disciplined Army, which he had been forming upon the Plan of *Charlemagne*: But those *Britons*, being assisted from *Wales*, made so good a Defence, that *Egbert* was not able to subdue them entirely
813. till the Year 813, when he subjected them to his Obedience; and annexed their Territory to his own Dominions.

EGBERT

EGBERT received such an Addition in his Popula-^{A. D.} rity, and his Power, as to awaken the Jealousy of the ^{813.} neighbouring Princes; who now began to apprehend that *Egbert* was aspiring to the sovereign Command over all the Heptarchy. *Beornulph* King of *Mercia* thought himself in the greatest Danger; for though his Kingdom was considerably enlarged by the Acquisition of *East Anglia*, and though the King of *Kent* was become its Tributary, it was far from being so powerful as *Wessex*: Upon which Account, *Beornulph* formed an Alliance with the *Britons A. D.* of *Wales*, caused an Insurrection among those of *Corn- 823.* *wal*, and then invaded the northern Frontier of *Wessex*, with a numerous Army of *Mercians*. *Egbert* met *Beornulph* at *Ellandune*, supposed to be the present *Wilton*, near *Salisbury*: A bloody Battle ensued; the *Mercians* had greatly the Superiority of Numbers; but the *West Saxons* were as much superior to the *Mercians* in Discipline, as *Egbert* was to *Beornulph* in Bravery: So that the Consequence of this Battle was the total Defeat of the *Mercians*: While the *Cornish Britons* were also defeated at *Camelford* in *Cornwal*, and reduced to their Allegiance.

THE Conqueror, instead of pursuing the Conquered, sent *Etbewulph* his Son, with a considerable Part of his Army, to invade the Kingdom of *Kent*, of which he became Master without any Difficulty; when *Egbert* annexed it to his own Crown: He then subjected all that Part of the *South Saxons* Kingdom as had not been reduced by *Ina*; and afterwards all *Essex* submitted to the Conqueror; whereby *Egbert* saw himself in Possession of the whole Country lying South of the *Thames*, and his Territory extended towards the North, which he was now at Liberty to encrease,

THUS, in about twenty-four Years after his Accession to Sovereignty, *Egbert* found himself in the absolute Possession of four Kingdoms that formed Part of the *Saxon* Heptarchy; for the Reduction of which entirely, there remained only the Kingdoms of *Mercia* and *Northumberland* to be subdued; because that of the *East Angles* was sure to follow the Fortunes of the former, to which it was tributary ever since the Reign of *Offa*.

100 A NEW HISTORY

A. D. THE East *Angles* esteemed the *Mercians* as hateful
823. Masters; whilst the *Mercians* treated the East *Angles* with all the Contempt that could be shewn to Vassals; so that this oppressed Nation waited only for a seasonable Opportunity to revolt against the King of *Mercia*. The *Northumbrians* had lived for some Time in a sort of Anarchy; they were not only at so great a Distance from the Country of *Wessex* as to apprehend little Danger from *Egbert*; but they were so far from opposing his Conquests of *Mercia*, that they were wholly intent upon destroying one another. So that every Thing conspired to favour the Views of *Egbert*.

A. D. THE East *Angles* found the West *Saxons* their next
824. Neighbours, by their Conquest of *Essex*; they looked upon *Egbert* as the only indisputable Sovereign descended from the Loins of *Woden*; they implored his Protection, revolted, took up Arms, opposed *Beornwulf*, slew him in Battle, and drove the *Mercians* out of their Kingdom. The *Mercians* elected *Ludecan* their King; who died soon after his Election, and was succeeded by *Withlaf*: But the East *Angles* were assisted by *Egbert*, who invaded *Mercia*, defeated *Withlaf*, and annexed his Kingdom to his own; though he afterwards restored him to the Throne, on Condition of paying Homage, and becoming Tributary to the Conqueror; who also was acknowledged by the East *Angles* for their Sovereign: Thus, in

A. D. 829, *Egbert* found himself the Monarch of six Kingdoms,
829. and the Sovereign of all *England* to the South of the *Humber*; after which, he meditated the Reduction of *Northumberland*: But, on his Approach, the *Northumbrians*, and *Eandred* their King, submitted without any Opposition, accepting of the same Terms granted the *Mercians* and East *Angles*.

In this Manner terminated the Heptarchy of the *Anglo-Saxons*, by the Reduction of the seven Kingdoms under the Dominion of the King of *Wessex*; after it had existed 378 Years from the Arrival of *Hengist*, or 243 Years from the founding the Kingdom of *Mercia* by *Crida*: But this Reduction of the Heptarchy was principally owing to the Divisions in the seven Kingdoms, and the Default

of

of the Male Heirs in the royal Families of them all, ex-A.D.
cept *Wessex*. 829.

EGBERT was now the sole Monarch of all the seven Kingdoms; and, in 829, he was crowned at *Winchester*, King of *Britain*, by the Consent both of Clergy and Laity assembled there in a general Council: After which, a Proclamation was published, ordering that no future Distinctions should be kept up among the *Saxon* Kingdoms; but that they should all pass under the common Name of ENGLAND: *Winchester* being the Capital of all *Egbert's* Dominions; but the Kingdoms of *Mercia*, *Northumberland*, and *East Anglia*, were governed by tributary Princes.



The KINGS of ENGLAND.

The SAXON LINE.

I. EGBERT the Great.

A.D. 829. **T**HE seven Kingdoms thus united by so brave, and governed by so good a Prince as *Egbert*; what had the *English* Nation to fear? It might have been reasonably expected that so wise and fortunate a Prince, at the Head of so great a Dominion, and so brave and numerous a People, as the *English*, after the Expulsion of the *Picts* and *Scots* out of his Country into the rough Northern Parts, and of the *Britons* into the North-West Corners of the Island, should not only have enjoyed the Fruits of Peace and Quiet, but left much Felicity as well as Greatness, to many succeeding Generations, both of Prince and People. Yet such is the Instability of human Affairs, and the Weakness of their best Conjectures, that *Egbert* was hardly warm in his united Throne, when both he and his Subjects began to be alarmed and perplexed at the Approach of new and unknown Enemies, and this Island exposed to new Invasions.

THE *Saxons*, upon their first landing in *Britain*, appear to have been the strongest maritime Power in *Europe*; but their Divisions into petty States, their Wars with the *Britons*, and their civil Dissentions among themselves, in a short Time extinguished their naval Glory: While a new Race of People succeeded them in those Places which they had abandoned in *Germany*, and in that naval Power which has always conquered or preserved the Island of Great-

Great-Britain, from the Invasion of *Julius Cæsar*, to the happy Reign of King George the Second.

WHILE *Egbert* was reducing the Heptarchy, a mighty Swarm of the old Northern Hive, who had possessed the Seats about the *Baltic*, began to infest the Seas, and spread themselves along the Coasts of *France* and *Belgia*. They were *Goths*; their Country was *Scandinavia*; *Woden* was the common Ancestor of them, as well as of the *Saxons*; and, like them, being sent out to explore new Habitations, they seized on *Denmark*, and several Parts of *Germany*: Which occasioned *Milton*, in the Beginning of his fifth Book, to say, that the *Danes* by invading *England*, drove out *Danes*, their own Posterity; and *Normans* afterwards none but ancienter *Normans*: For this new Race of *Scandinavian Goths* distinguished themselves by the Names of *Danes* and *Normans*; the former settled in *Denmark*, and gave Name to that Country; the other invaded a Part of *France*, and erected the Dutchy of *Normandy*; both of them conquering *England*, and in their Turns subduing the *Saxons*. But, as the *Danes* and *Normans* were only a remoter Branch of the *Saxons*, their Manners, Customs, Laws, and Religion, were similar to those among the *Saxons*, when *Hengist* invaded *Britain*: Except that the *Danes*, long before the Birth of *Christ*, were governed by a King, according to *Puffendorff*.

THE *Saxon* Writers called the *Danes Wiccingi*, from their Trade of Piracy; in which they were as formidable to *Charlemagne*, as ever the *Saxons* had been to the *Romans*; they were more sudden in their Invasions, and less humane in their Conquests; because the *Saxons* fought for Dominion, the *Danes* only for Destruction.

IT has been observed, that the *Danes* first made their Descent at *Portland* in *Dorsetshire* in 787: They had only three Ships, and were soon compelled to leave the Country; but, this was no more than the Prelude to their fatal Fury; for, in the same Year, they invaded *Mercia*; and, in 793, they made a Descent upon *Northumberland*, in which they were repulsed, and most of them perished at Sea in a violent Tempest: But, in 832, they landed in

A. D. the Isle of Sheppey in Kent, and the next Year at Char-
829. mouth in Dorsetshire.

EGBERT was enjoying his Conquests in Peace; his victorious Army was disbanded; and the Exercise of Arms laid aside: Besides, the bravest Blood of the *English* had been exhausted in their own civil Wars, during the Contentions of the Heptarchy; since those ended, the rest were grown slothful with Peace, and Luxury, softened with new Devotions of their Priests and Monks, with Cloisters, Penances, and Pilgrimages; so that they were now grown as unequal a Match for the *Danes*, as the *Britons* had been for the *Saxons* before. However, *Egbert* was like the Sun, glorious in his Decline: While he lived, the *English* were secure; when he died, they became miserable.

A. D. SALUST observes, that the *Romans* fought with all
833. other Nations for Power and Glory; but with the *Franks* every one fought for his Life and Safety: Which may be well applied to the *Saxons* and *Danes*; the latter of whom appeared before *Charmouth*, in 833, with thirty-five sail of Ships, containing about 18000 Men. *Egbert* was prepared to receive them; he attacked them while they were landing, and endeavoured to cut them off before they were formed; but his Success was far from answering his Expectation: The *Danes* kept their Ground, and encamped near the River *Char*, where the Battle was fought; while *Egbert* was obliged to retreat, leaving *Dudda* and *Osmund*, two of his principal Officers, with two Bishops, and a great Part of his Army, dead in the Field; which was the only Check of Fortune that *Egbert* ever received. However, the *Danes* were so fearful of *Egbert*, that they soon returned to their Ships, and left the Island: After which, *Egbert* summoned a general Assembly of the States at *London*, to deliberate on the Means of averting, for the future, the Insults of the Invaders. The *English* were sensible of their Disability in that maritime Strength, which won them the Island, and for want of which they were now likely to lose it: But no Fleet could be built Time enough by *Egbert* to oppose the *Danes*, who landed again with a large Fleet, in 835 in

in *Cornwall*, where they were joined by the *Cornish Brig-^{A. D.}
tons*: However, *Egbert* was prepared for them by Land; ^{835.} he met them at *Hengston in Cornwall*, and gave them a total Defeat. Yet, the next Year, the *Danes* renewed their Depredations, and *Egbert* again repeated his Victory; ^{A. D.} after which, he died as great as he lived, and was buried ^{836.} the same Year at *Winchester*; being the first, and the greatest Monarch of *England*: He was the Father of the *English* Monarchy; and therefore well intitled to the Name of *Egbert the Great*.

THIS Prince was justly sensible of the Necessity of a maritime Power: But the Revival of a Fleet was neglected till the Reign of his Grandson *Alfred*, in 882; nor was it fully compleated till the Reign of *Edgar*, in 959: Though this Neglect encouraged the *Danes* to renew their Depredations, and increase their Ravages.

The Blood of *Cerdic* in great EGBERT flow'd;
Whose Heart with ev'ry princely Virtue glow'd;
Whose Arms, victorious, overran the Land,
And bow'd the Heptarchy to his Command;
Whose Wisdom gave to *England's* Glory Date;
And whose Descendants still direct the State.

Great EGBERT, full of Glory, blest with Peace,
Thought *England's* Troubles, and his own, might
cease:

But vain the Hope! the furious *Dane* appears,
And lays the Land in Blood for many Years.

II. ETHELWULF.

EGBERT was succeeded by his only Son *Ethelwulf*, as King of *England*. The Father, when he was dying, told the Son, "That he might be happy, if that King-dom, which a laborious Course of Industry had acquired, was not destroyed by that Slothfulness which was so very common to its People." This seems a very just Prediction, as it met with but too melancholy a Completion. *Egbert* had been always a Warrior; and till *Ethelwulf* became a King he had been only a Priest:

A. D. For the Excess of ridiculous Devotion had for many
836. Years inclined him to a monastic Habit: However,
 he obtained the papal Dispensation, and assumed a secu-
 lar Life.

THE *Danes* landed at *Southampton* in thirty-three Ships,
 in the first Year of his Reign: But *Ethelwulf* sent *Wul-
 beard* to oppose them, who attacked and routed the Pi-

A. D. rates with great Slaughter. However, the *Danes* made
837.

a second Descent upon *Portland*; where they were op-
 posed by *Edelhelm*, who, with several other English Of-
 ficers, perished in the Engagement, and left the *Danes* in

A. D. Possession of the Field of Battle. The next Year, the
838.

Danes made another Descent about *Romney* in *Kent*: An
 Army was sent against them under the Command of
Herebert, who also lost his Life and the Victory; upon
 which the *Danes* over-run the Country with great slaugh-
 ter.

A. D. The Year following, they marched to *Canterbury*,
839

Rochester, and *London*, where they committed the most
 monstrous Acts of Barbarity: Plunder being the only In-
 citement to their Invasions, and inhuman Murders the
 Consequence of their Victories.

A. D. THE Year following, a large Body of *Danes*, in thir-
840.

ty-five Ships landed on the Coast of *Wessex*; and *Ethel-
 wulf*, dissatisfied with the Conduct of his Generals, re-
 solved to go against them in Person. The two Armies
 met at *Charmouth*: A bloody Battle ensued; the *English*
 were defeated, and the *Danes* collected a valuable Booty
 in plundering the Country. The Dominions of *Witblaf*,
 the tributary King of *Mercia*, and of *Ethelred* the tri-
 butary King of *Northumberland*, were also greatly har-
 rassed by the *Danes*; who continued their Depredations so
 successfully as to make the Load of Government too
 heavy for *Ethelwulf* to support; which induced him to
 resign the Kingdoms of *Kent*, *Essex*, and *Suffex*, to his
 Brother *Atelstan*, with the Title of King of *Kent*; reser-
 ving to himself the Sovereignty of all *England*, with the
 Kingdom of *Wessex*.

A. D. THE *Danes* never failed to visit *England* once a Year,
845.

entirely for the Sake of Plunder, and as yet without any
 Intention of making a Settlement in the Kingdom. In
 the

the Year 845, they landed at the Mouth of the River A. D. *Parret* in *Somersetshire*; but they were attacked, and defeated, by *Alstan* the famous Bishop of *Sherburn*, and *Ofric* an English Nobleman, who made such a Destruction among the *Danes* as to intimidate them from renewing their Invasions; whereby the Southern Part of *England* obtained some Relief: While the Pirates visited *Northumberland*, slew *Oswald* the tributary Prince in battle, and ravaged his Country.

HOWEVER, in 851, the *Danes* renewed their Descents A. D. upon the Southern Parts of *England*: They committed 851. great Ravages in several Places; but at last were attacked by *Ceorl*, an English Nobleman, at *Wigganbeorch*, or *Wenbury*, near *Plymouth* in *Devonshire*, where they were totally routed. Another Body of *Danes* was also defeated by King *Athelstan*, who, conscious of the Necessity of a naval Power to obstruct the Views of his piratical Enemies, had built a considerable Fleet, with which he had Bravery enough to attack the *Danish* Fleet near *Sandwich*, and had the good Fortune to take nine of their Ships, obliging the rest to seek for Security in Flight.

THIS ill Success was no Discouragement to the *Danes*, A. D. who, the next Spring, came up the *Thames* with 350 852. Ships; and meeting with no Opposition, they landed near *London*, where they began their usual Ravages. Having pillaged *Canterbury*, *London*, and many other Towns, they marched into *Mercia*, and overthrew an Army led against them by *Berthulph* the tributary King, in defence of his Country: After which they carried their Arms Southward, passed the *Thames*, and penetrated into *Surry*.

ETHELWULF, when the War was come to his Doors, threw off his Indolence, and exerted all the hereditary Virtues of his Family. With his Brother *Athelstan*, he assembled a numerous Army: The *Danes* were apprehensive of being intercepted in their Return, when they were loaded with the Spoils of the Country; therefore, they marched against *Ethelwulf*. Both Armies met at *Okeley* in *Surry*, where, after a desperate Battle, the English proved Victorious, and the Slaughter of the Pagans was

A.D. was such as can scarcely be credited: For this was the
852. most considerable Battle, and the greatest Victory, that had ever been fought or gained in *England*; without excepting even the Destruction of the *Britons*, under *Boadicea*, by *Suetonius*.

THE Victory of *Okely* procuring *Ethelwulf* some Respite from his formidable Enemies, he was at Liberty to follow his natural Inclination, and soon relapsed into his usual Indolence. In this he was encouraged by *Swithen*, Bishop of *Winchester*; who, under the Pretence of Christian Duties, made *Ethelwulf* forget those of a Prince; by instilling into him an extreme Affection for the Church and Clergy, wherein the principal View of Religion was then made to consist. *Alstan* Bishop of *Sherburn* was also a royal Favourite; but he was more for defending his Country, than enriching the Church: He was a brave Soldier, as well as a learned Divine: He exhorted the King to employ his Time in making Preparations against the Return of the *Danes*; and he never ceased animating him, by laying before him the glorious Deeds of his Ancestors, particularly those of his Father *Egbert*, in which he was most nearly concerned. But as *Alstan* had been the Ascendant in War, *Swithen* was now the Ascendant in Peace: So that *Ethelwulf*, instead of making any warlike Preparations, granted to the Church the Tithes
854. of all his Dominions; which was so liberal a Grant, that his Successors in the Throne had frequent Occasion to wish he had left the Clergy in their former State; when the Revenues of the Church were not very considerable. Besides, to carry his Regard still higher to the Church, he sent his younger Son *Alfred*, then about five Years of Age, to *Rome*, where he received the Ceremony of Confirmation from the Hands of the Pope, who also anointed him as King, and adopted him for his Son; which put a Seal of Distinction upon the Person and Dignity of the young Prince; and, in that superstitious Age, was the strongest Guard to his Infancy, against the Ambition of his elder Brethren. But the great Zeal which *Ethelwulf* had for Religion, would not let him be easy, without the Satisfaction of paying a Visit to the Pope in Person, and receiving

ving his Benediction; which he accordingly paid and received in 855: His Devotion gratified the Vanity, and his Liberality satisfied the Avarice, of the papal See: He restored the *English* College at *Rome*, founded by *Ina* and enlarged by *Offa*, to great Splendour, it having been burnt down the Year before; he also encreased its Revenues, and added to its Privileges; for which Purpose, he extended the Tax of *Peter-pence* all over his Dominions, because till then it had been levied only in *Wessex* and *Mercia*.

AFTER continuing a Year at *Rome*, *Ethelwulf* set out upon his Return for *England*; but stopped at the Court of *Charles the Bald*, King of *France*, where he married the fair *Judith*, Daughter to that Prince, though very unsuitable to himself in Years. However, on his Arrival in *England*, he found his Subjects in general discontented with his Conduct; and a Conspiracy formed against him, in favour of his eldest Son *Ethelbald*, by Bishop *Alstan*, and several of the principal Noblemen of *Wessex*, who, from the extraordinary Respect which he would have paid to his young Consort, imagined that the King was resolved to be Arbitrary: Besides, he had appointed no Regency while he was Abroad, and the *Danes* lay hovering about *Kent*; which alarmed his Subjects, some of whom thought the King by withdrawing his Protection, seemed to release them from their Obedience; Duties which ought ever to be mutual between the Governor and the Governed. A strong Party was formed for *Ethelbald*: But it appears, that *Alstan* intended only the Welfare of his Country, and concerted only such Measures as might best put the Government on a firmer Foundation. *Ethelbald* openly declared his Intent to dethrone his Father, who also had a great Party: All Things tended to a civil War, which must have proved very fatal to *England*, since, besides other Mischiefs, it would undoubtedly bring on fresh Invasions from the *Danes*: But some of the wisest of the Nobility of both Parties, particularly *Alstan*, foreseeing the Calamities which might ensue, brought Matters to an Accommodation. A Treaty was set on Foot; and a Partition of the Kingdom agreed upon between the Father

110 A NEW HISTORY

A.D. Father and the Son; whereby *Ethelwulf* resigned the
855. ancient Kingdom of *Wessex* to *Ethelbald*; contenting himself with the Government of *Kent*, which included *Essex* and *Suffolk*, where the tributary Throne had been vacant since the Death of *Athelstan*, soon after the Battle of *Okeley*.

ETHELWULF out-lived the Partition but two Years, which he spent in Acts of Devotion, and Preparations for a future Life: But, as he was desirous of preventing any Competition between his Sons after his Death, he made his Will, whereby his hereditary Dominions were bequeathed to his two elder Sons: So that all the Alteration it admitted of, in this Respect, was, that his second Son *Ethelbert* succeeded to the Throne of *Kent*, which *Ethelwulf* also entailed upon his two younger Sons *Etherred* and *Alfred*, who, in Virtue thereof, afterwards succeeded to the Government of that Kingdom.

III. ETHELBALD and ETHELBERT.

A.D. *ETHELWULF*, after reigning twenty-one Years,
857. died in 857, and was buried at *Winchester*; when *Ethelbald* succeeded to the Throne of *Wessex*, and *Ethelbert* to that of *Kent*: But the former, whose Reign was no ways remarkable, died in 860, when the two Kingdoms were re-united under *Ethelbert*.

IV. ETHELBERT.

A.D. THE *Danes*, having left *England* for some Years un-
860. molested, now began to renew their Invasions: They landed at *Southampton*, and advanced to plunder *Winchester*, which was still the Capital of the Kingdom: But, after ravaging the Country, they were attacked, defeated, and obliged to return to their Ships, to set sail, and land in the Isle of *Thanet*, which afforded them a safe Retreat.

ETHEL-

ETHELBERT bore an excellent Character: He A. D.
imitated the Virtues of his Father and Grandfather: But ^{860.}
he was unable to free his Country from the Rapacity of
the *Danes*, and died in 866, being buried at *Sherburn*,
near the Corps of his Brother.

V. E T H E L R E D I.

ETHELBERT, though he left two Sons, was suc- A. D.
ceeded by his Brother *Ethelred*, in Pursuance of the Will ^{866.}
of *Ethelwulf* their Father. The Reign of this Prince
was short and troublesome: For, from his Coronation to
his Death, he had one continued Conflict with the *Danes*.
He was remarkable for his Valour, Justice, Prudence,
and Piety; yet he was a signal Instance that these Vir-
tues are not always attended by Fortune.

HE found the Authority reserved by *Egbert* over the
Kingdoms of *Mercia*, *East Anglia*, and *Northumberland*,
was much weakened, on Account of the frequent In-
vasions made by the *Danes*: For while the Kings of
Wessex were employed in defending their own Dominions,
they could not improve the Sovereignty over the three
Kingdoms of the *Angles*, to whom *Egbert* was willing to
leave a Shadow of Liberty: Therefore, by Degrees, the
Northumbrians freed themselves from Servitude, and
placed *Osbert* on their Throne: The *East Angles* also
elected *Edmund* their King: And *Butbred*, who married
the Daughter of *Ethelwulf*, was King of *Mercia*, though
tributary to the King of *Wessex*: So that *Ethelred* was
nothing like so potent as his Father had been, and the
Danes found him too much Employment to think of re-
covering the revolted Kingdoms; for, in the first Year of
his Reign, a large Body of them arrived in *East Anglia*;
where the Natives, dreading the often experienced Ra-
vages of the Pagans, were far from provoking them, and
shewed all imaginable Disposition to live with them in
Friendship: Upon which, a Convention was entered into
between them and the *Danes*, who were furnished by
their

A. D. their new Friends with a great Number of Horses, and
866. were thereby enabled to over-run the whole Kingdom.

In the mean Time a new Scene opened in *Northumberland*, which gave the *Danes* an Opportunity of making their Fortunes there beyond their Wishes. *Osbert*, the new *Northumbrian* King, had most inhospitably and violently committed a Rape on the Lady of *Bruern-Brocard*, a Nobleman who had the Charge of guarding the Sea-Coasts against the *Danes*, and who severely revenged himself upon the Monarch: For he not only renounced his Allegiance; dismembered *Osbert* of that Part of his Kingdom which had been called *Bernicia*, and was now again created into another distinct Monarchy under *Ella*; but he also went to *East Anglia*, and addressed himself to *Ingvar* and *Hubba*, who commanded the *Danes*, with an Offer, if they assisted him, to put them in Possession of the whole Kingdom of *Northumberland*. The *Danes* accepted the Invitation; they sailed from *East Anglia*, and landed at the Mouth of the *Humber*, from whence they directed their March to *York*.

A. D. THE *Northumbrians*, who, on the Revolt of *Bernicia*
867. from *Osbert*, were engaged in a civil War, were alarmed at a foreign Enemy, and healed their domestic Dissentions. *Osbert* and *Ella* united their Forces against the common Enemy; but not early enough to prevent the *Pagans* from seizing upon *York*, which was besieged by the two Kings; when the *Danes*, endeavouring to escape an Assault, violently rushed from the Walls, and totally defeated the Besiegers, killed both the Kings, and cut in Pieces some Thousands of their People.

A. D. IN 868, a great Famine happened in *England*, which
868. facilitated the Attempts of the *Danish* Princes, who had established themselves in the Possession of *Northumberland*, and were determined to extend their Conquests over the rest of *England*. *Ingvar* accordingly led his Forces into *Mercia*, and advanced as far as *Nottingham*; committing great Ravages wherever he came, particularly among the Monasteries, where the *English* concealed their most valuable Effects. *Buthred*, King of *Mercia*, applied to *Ethelred* his Brother-in-law for Assistance, who joined him with

with all the Forces of *Wessex*: This stopped the rapid A. D.
Progress of the *Danes*, who were surprized to find their ^{868.}
Forces inferior to those of the *English* Princes: However,
they took Possession of *Nottingham*, which was a Place
strongly fortified: The *English* Princes laid Siege to the
Town; but were obliged to grant the *Danes* an honourable
Capitulation, and permit them to retire back to *Northum-
berland*.

IN 869, the *Danes* continued at *York*; the Famine by A. D.
this Time being attended by a Plague: But their Aver- ^{869.}
sion to Christianity, their Thirst of Plunder, and their lust-
ful Passions, prompted them to commit the most horrid
Cruelties among the religious Houses, by murdering the
Monks, ravishing the Nuns, and plundering those Re-
positories of private Wealth in these Times of public
Confusion. There is a remarkable Story on this Occa-
sion: For *Ebba* Abbess of *Coldingham*, a famous Nun-
nery on the Borders of *Scotland*, being informed that her
House was to be attacked by the *Danes*, she gave the
Example, and prevailed with her Nuns to cut off their
Noses and Upper-Lips, to screen themselves from the
Outrages with which they were threatened: This was a
glorious Instance of Virtue; it preserved their Chastity
from Pollution, but it cost them their Lives; which the
lustful *Danes* sacrificed to their Disappointment, by shut-
ting the Nuns up in the Monastery, and reducing the
whole to Ashes. After which the same Fate, though
not with the same Merit, attended most of the other
Monasteries and religious Houses in the North of *England*,
particularly the rich Abbeys of *Croyland* in *Lincolnshire*,
Peterborough, and the Nunnery of *Ely*.

THE *Danes*, now fully Masters of *Northumberland*, A. D.
overawing *Mercia*, and fearless of *Wessex*, resolved to ^{870.}
resume their first Intention of conquering all *England*.
Though *Edmund*, King of *East Anglia*, had received *In-
gvar* like a Friend; the *Dane* broke the Convention he
had entered into with the *English* Prince, and was deter-
mined to strip him of his Dominions, which were weakly
guarded, the Possession whereof would give him any sea-
sonable Opportunity of invading *Wessex*. Accordingly,

Ingvar

A. D. their new Friends with a great Number of Horses, and
866. were thereby enabled to over-run the whole Kingdom.

IN the mean Time a new Scene opened in *Northumberland*, which gave the *Danes* an Opportunity of making their Fortunes there beyond their Wishes. *Obert*, the new *Northumbrian* King, had most inhospitably and violently committed a Rape on the Lady of *Bruern-Brocard*, a Nobleman who had the Charge of guarding the Sea-Coasts against the *Danes*, and who severely revenged himself upon the Monarch: For he not only renounced his Allegiance; dismembered *Obert* of that Part of his Kingdom which had been called *Bernicia*, and was now again created into another distin&t Monarchy under *Ella*; but he also went to East *Anglia*, and addressed himself to *Inguar* and *Hubba*, who commanded the *Danes*, with an Offer, if they assisted him, to put them in Possession of the whole Kingdom of *Northumberland*. The *Danes* accepted the Invitation; they sailed from East *Anglia*, and landed at the Mouth of the *Humber*, from whence they directed their March to *York*.

A. D. THE *Northumbrians*, who, on the Revolt of *Bernicia*
867. from *Obert*, were engaged in a civil War, were alarmed at a foreign Enemy, and healed their domestic Dissentions. *Obert* and *Ella* united their Forces against the common Enemy; but not early enough to prevent the *Pagans* from seizing upon *York*, which was besieged by the two Kings; when the *Danes*, endeavouring to escape an Assault, violently rushed from the Walls, and totally defeated the Besiegers, killed both the Kings, and cut in Pieces some Thousands of their People.

A. D. IN 868, a great Famine happened in *England*, which
868. facilitated the Attempts of the *Danish* Princes, who had established themselves in the Possession of *Northumberland*, and were determined to extend their Conquests over the rest of *England*. *Inguar* accordingly led his Forces into *Mercia*, and advarced as far as *Nottingham*; committing great Ravages wherever he came, particularly among the Monasteries, where the *English* concealed their most valuable Effects. *Butbred*, King of *Mercia*, applied to *Ethelred* his Brother-in-law for Assistance, who joined him with

with all the Forces of *Wessex*: This stopped the rapid A. D.
Progress of the *Danes*, who were surprized to find their 868.
Forces inferior to those of the *English* Princes: However,
they took Possession of *Nottingham*, which was a Place
strongly fortified: The *English* Princes laid Siege to the
Town; but were obliged to grant the *Danes* an honourable
Capitulation, and permit them to retire back to *Northum-
berland*.

IN 869, the *Danes* continued at *York*; the Famine by A. D.
this Time being attended by a Plague: But their Aver- 869.
sion to Christianity, their Thirst of Plunder, and their lust-
ful Passions, prompted them to commit the most horrid
Cruelties among the religious Houses, by murdering the
Monks, ravishing the Nuns, and plundering those Re-
positories of private Wealth in these Times of public
Confusion. There is a remarkable Story on this Occa-
sion: For *Ebba* Abbess of *Coldingham*, a famous Nun-
nery on the Borders of *Scotland*, being informed that her
House was to be attacked by the *Danes*, she gave the
Example, and prevailed with her Nuns to cut off their
Noses and Upper-Lips, to screen themselves from the
Outrages with which they were threatened: This was a
glorious Instance of Virtue; it preserved their Chastity
from Pollution, but it cost them their Lives; which the
lustful *Danes* sacrificed to their Disappointment, by shut-
ting the Nuns up in the Monastery, and reducing the
whole to Ashes. After which the same Fate, though
not with the same Merit, attended most of the other
Monasteries and religious Houses in the North of *England*,
particularly the rich Abbeys of *Croyland* in *Lincolnshire*,
Peterborough, and the Nunnery of *Ely*.

THE *Danes*, now fully Masters of *Northumberland*, A. D.
overawing *Mercia*, and fearless of *Wessex*, resolved to 870.
resume their first Intention of conquering all *England*.
Though *Edmund*, King of East *Anglia*, had received *In-
guar* like a Friend; the *Dane* broke the Convention he
had entered into with the *English* Prince, and was deter-
mined to strip him of his Dominions, which were weakly
guarded, the Possession whereof would give him any sea-
sonable Opportunity of invading *Wessex*. Accordingly,

Inguar

A. D. *Inguar* left *Hubba* in *Northumberland*, marched with the
870. Flower of his Forces through *Mercia*, and advanced into
the East *Anglian* Territories as far as *Thetford*. They
were faintly opposed by *Edmund*, who was defeated, and
fled to his Country Seat at *Heglesdune*, hoping to find Se-
curity in Concealment: But in vain: *Inguar* defeated and
slew Earl *Wulketule*; after which, he discovered where
Edmund was concealed; whom he commanded to submit
himself and his Kingdom to his Power; which *Edmund*
refused: Whereupon *Inguar* broke open the Palace, seized
the Prince, commanded him first to be cruelly beaten, and
then bound him to a Tree, where he was inhumanly
whipped; all which *Edmund* manfully endured, still cal-
ling on the Name of *Christ*, till his Enemies were so en-
raged as to shoot his Body full of Arrows, and afterwards
to cut off his Head. The Remains of this unfortunate
Prince were afterwards interred at *St. Edmundsbury* in *Suf-
folk*, which received its Name from the Prince, whose
Death intitled him to the Honour of Martyrdom.

THE Death of *Edmund* reduced East *Anglia* entirely
under the Obedience of the *Danes*, who were still fed
with new Supplies from their own Islands and the Con-
tinent; so that they were now bent on invading *Wessex*;
conscious, if they could subdue that Kingdom, *Mercia*
and *Kent* must follow of Course.

A. D. IN the Year 871, *Inguar* left East *Anglia* to the Go-
871. vernment of *Guthburn*; and advanced with his Army, into
Wessex, where he penetrated as far as *Reading* in *Berkshire*.
Ethelred expected this Invasion, and was prepared to resist
the Invaders: The *Mercian* Prince had disengaged him by
granting the Capitulation to the *Danes* while they were
besieged at *Nottingham*; and *Butbred* was jealous that if
Ethelred protected *Mercia* from the *Danes*, he would keep
it absolutely for himself; which prevented these Princes
from again uniting their Forces against their common
Enemy: But the Conduct of *Ethelred*, when he found
his Kingdom invaded, was an Honour to it, and to him-
self.

INGUAR was assisted by two other *Danish* Generals,
who were called Kings; and were encamped between
the

the Rivers *Kennet* and *Thames*; from whence they sent A. D. out Detachments to plunder the Country: But one of 871. their strongest Bodies was attacked and defeated by *Ethelwulf* an English Nobleman. Three Days after, *Ethelwulf* was joined by King *Ethelred* and his Brother *Alfred*; so that, in all, they had a formidable Army, which obliged the *Danes* to retire into *Reading*, where they were besieged by *Ethelred*. The *English* of those Days understood little of Fortification, or the Method of conducting a Siege: They imagined, that an Enemy by seeking shelter within Walls, was the same Thing as capitulating for Safety: But the *Danes* convinced them of their Mistake; for though they accepted of a Capitulation at *Nottingham*, they now acted with more Resolution; they collected all their Force, made a vigorous Sally, and drove the *English* from the Walls with great Slaughter. However, four Days after, the royal Brothers re-assembled the *English* Forces, and marched against the *Danes*, who met them at *Æscesdune*, now *Aston*, in *Berkshire*, when a general Battle ensued; wherein the *English*, chiefly by the Valour of Prince *Alfred*, were victorious, putting the *Danes* to Flight with great Slaughter, killing *Ingvar*, the two *Sidros*, with five more of their Generals, and severals Thousands of their common Men, while a great many fell in the Pursuit all over the Plains of *Æscesdune*.

THE Remainder of the *Danes* took Refuge in *Reading*, where their Supplies daily pouring in upon them made their Army more numerous than ever, which encouraged them again to take the Field. The *English* were also inspired by their late Success: So that both Armies soon met at *Basing* in *Hampshire*, when a general Battle ensued, wherein the *English* had the Misfortune to be defeated, more by the Superiority, than the Valour of their Enemies. Two Months after, they had another Battle at *Marden* in *Wiltshire*; in which the *English* were at first victorious; but in the End were defeated by the *Danes*. In this Battle the brave *Ethelred* was mortally wounded; though he lived to be carried to *Wittingham*, where he died, and was buried at *Winburn* in *Dorsetshire*, universally lamented by his Subjects.

BUT

A. D. 871. BUT of all these terrible Invasions by the *Danes*, the *Danish* History makes no mention of their Leaders: "So little Wit or Conscience, says *Milton*, it seems they had to leave any Memory of their brutish, rather than manly Actions."

VI. ALFRED the Great.

ETHELRED left several Children, of whom *Alfred* was one, who was the Great Grandfather of *Ethelwold*, the Historian: But *Alfred* the Brother of *Ethelred* succeeded to the Crown of *Wessex*.

THIS Prince was twenty-two Years of Age on his Accession to the Throne: His moral Virtues, and martial Qualities, had endeared him to his Subjects: He had often protected them in the Field; they thought themselves invincible under his Command; and they expected the greatest Felicity under his Government, which, though violently molested by the *Danes*, was so glorious as to intitle him equally with his Grandfather *Egbert* to the Name of Great, and to honour him with the Appellation of THE FATHER OF THE ENGLISH CONSTITUTION.

HE was crowned at *Winchester*: But his Accession to Royalty was a melancholy Situation. The *Danes* were in the Heart of his Dominions, their Forces daily augmenting from the Continent, and their Fleets commanding all the Sea-Ports for their Admission: However, *Alfred* was more the Patriot, than the King; and all his Views terminated in the Protection of his Country.

DIVINE Providence, in the Person of *Alfred*, seems to have shewn with what Ease God casts down, or sets up Princes, according to his good Pleasure. The *Danes* were not only in the Heart of *Wessex*; but they were also Masters of *Northumberland* and *East Anglia*: The Death of *Ethelred* made them insolent with Success; and before *Alfred* had been a Month upon the Throne, he found himself obliged to take the Field, with a small Force, against these formidable Enemies, who were advanced

vanced as far as *Wilton*. A Battle ensued in the Neigh- A. D.
bourhood of that Town; wherein Victory inclined to ^{871.}
the *English*; though the *Danes* kept the Field of Battle:
However, they were so much intimidated, that they
readily concluded a Treaty with *Alfred*, whereby they
obliged themselves to abandon the Dominions of *Wessex*.

IN Consequence of this Treaty, they marched from A. D.
Reading to *London*, at that Time immediately subject to ^{872.}
Buthred King of *Mercia*, who was unable to prevent
them from wintering there, and committing great Rava-
ges. After this, *Hubba* returned with his Forces into
Northumberland: But, allured by the Weakness of *Buth-*
red, and invited by the Fertility of his Country, the
Danes began to give Indications that they wanted to ex-
change their roving Way of Life, for a Settlement in the
English Dominions. They re-entered *Mercia*, and plun-
dered the Country: *Buthred* was unassisted by *Alfred*, be-
cause he was not to be confided in: Therefore, he was
obliged to make several Treaties of Peace; which the
Danes constantly broke, and at last drove him into Exile;
when he took Refuge at *Rome*, where he obscurely end-
ed his Days, having reigned twenty-two Years.

THUS the *Danes*, without Difficulty, possessed them- A. D.
selves of the spacious Kingdom of *Mercia*; though they ^{874.}
entrusted the Government of it to *Ceolwulf*, an *English*
Traitor, who held it upon the infamous Condition of re-
storing it into their Hands upon Demand. *Northumber-*
land, *Mercia*, and *East Anglia*, were now subject to the
Danes; over which they had deputed their own Kings or
Governors: But having received a prodigious Supply
from the Continent, under *Gotbrun*, *Oscitel*, and *Amund*,
they thought themselves invincible, looking with a greedy
Eye upon *Wessex*, which contained the other four King-
doms.

ALFRED was sensible that there was no Depen- A. D.
dence on *Danish* Faith: He found one Part of them be- ^{875.}
gan to cultivate *Northumberland*, and he justly apprehen-
ded that the others only waited for an Opportunity of in-
vading *Wessex*. He had experienced their Strength by
Land, which he perceived was continually recruited by
Sea;

118 A NEW HISTORY

A. D. Sea; and, therefore, with a Genius truly great, he resolved
875. to try what he could do himself upon that Element. Accordingly, he contrived, and so expeditiously built a Kind of light Gallies, proper for guarding the Coasts, that this Year he was at the Head of his own Navy encountering seven of the *Danish* Ships, one of which he took, and put the rest to Flight.

A. D. IN 876, a new Swarm of Invaders made a Descent
876. upon *England*: These were called *Normans*, who, probably, had the same Original with the *Danes* now in *England*; which was already too much overburdened with Foreigners, and the Dominions of *Alfred* too bravely defended, for them to think of making any Settlement, either in *Wessex*, or in the Parts subject to the *Danes*. However, *Rollo*, the famous Leader of these *Normans*, invaded and conquered that Part of *France* to which he gave the Name of *Normandy*; being the first of the *Norman* Lineage, which, 190 Years afterwards, gave a King to *England*, in the Person of *William*, surnamed the Conqueror.

WHILE one Body of the *Danes* were cultivating *Northumberland*, under the Command of *Halden*: The other Body remained at *Cambridge*, under *Gothrun*, *Oscitel*, and *Amund*, till they were prepared for invading *Wessex*. They set Sail from the *Stour*; and, after coasting the Country, suddenly landed and surprized *Warham Castle* in *Dorsetshire*, which was the strongest Place in all *Wessex*. *Alfred* knew it was in vain to expostulate about the Violation of the Treaty: He therefore assembled an Army, and marched to dispossess them of the Castle. The *Danes* were afraid of *Alfred*, who obliged them to conclude another Treaty, whereby they were instantly to leave the Kingdom: But, though the *Danes* ratified this Treaty in the most solemn Manner, swearing, upon their Bracelet to observe it; yet no Sacraments were sufficient to bind the perfidious Barbarians, who broke the Treaty, and surprised *Exeter*, of which they took Possession: However, they lost 120 of their Ships, or rather small Craft, at *Swanwick*, in *Hampshire*.

A. D. THE next Year, *Alfred* levied a considerable Army,
877. with which he besieged the *Danes* in *Exeter*; and he also

put

put his Navy to Sea, to cut off all Supplies from the Enemy. He was successful both by Sea and Land: His Fleet met with 120 Danish Transports, loaded with Soldiers, which the English entirely destroyed: While Alfred so vigorously pressed the Siege of Exeter, that the Danes were obliged to demand a Capitulation, and renewed their Oath to leave his Dominions.

THE Danes retired into Mercia, where their English Shadow of a King resigned to them Part of his Dominions, and Part he was allowed to retain. They had fought seven Battles this Year with Alfred; they were weary of leading such unsettled Lives; therefore, in Imitation of what Halden had done in Northumberland, they divided the Land, and incorporated themselves with their Countrymen, who were in Possession of Mercia, and East Anglia: Whereby an End was put to the Kingdom of Mercia, after having subsisted near 300 Years.

THOUGH the Danes were in Possession of three of the ancient Kingdoms of the Heptarchy; yet there was not sufficient Room for all those that were already in England, and for those who were continually coming over with Intent to settle. This made them all unite to invade Wesssex, which they entered with a more formidable Army than ever, and took Chippenham, one of the finest and strongest Cities in the Kingdom. Conquest itself had been fatal to Alfred; as every Victory diminished the Number of his faithful Followers: But the Reduction of Chippenham struck his Subjects with such a Terror that they had no longer the Courage to defend themselves: Some fled into Wales, or beyond Sea; while others shamefully ran over to the Danes, and swore Allegiance to them.

HOWEVER, the private Virtues of the Man had attached to the Person of the King a chosen Band, unconscious yet of Dependency, and bravely reserving themselves for better Times: But as they were chargeable to their Prince, and could do him little Service, he dismissed them all, that he might the more easily shift for himself. Alfred had a Wife whom he tenderly loved, to whom he had been married ten Years, and by whom he had several Children: These he committed to the Care of some particular

A.D. particular trusty Subjects; and then, divesting himself of every royal Prerogative and Distinction, in the Habit of a common Soldier, he concealed himself as a Servant to his own Neatherd; having concerted the proper Measures with his Friends for a Rendezvous, in Case of any favourable Opportunity.

THE humble Shelter which afforded Repose to the glorious *Alfred*, was situated in the little Peninsula of *Atbelney* in *Somersetshire*, which is formed by the Rivers *Thone* and *Parret*. Like *Achilles*, when *Ulysses* discovered him in his Disguise by his handling the Arms that were laid before him; *Alfred* might have been perceived in his lowliest State, for he was ever Intent on saving his Country, and was now often employed in making Bows, Arrows, and other warlike Instruments: Though one Day, as he was employed in fitting on his Arms, the Cowherd's Wife scolded him, for suffering a Cake to be burnt before the Fire, saying, "Pray, Fellow, since thou can't eat those Cakes very heartily, why shouldst thou be above turning them?" Which *Alfred* bore with Chearfulness: And it is very remarkable, that one of his royal Descendants, so late as 773 Years afterwards, met with the same Fate, and a similiar Accident.

HOWEVER, the negligent Situation of the *Danes*, invited the Friends of *Alfred* to repair to their Prince, to build a little Fort, and from their Fastnesses to make frequent Irruptions on the scattered Parties of their Invaders, who were rioting in Plunder, and revelling in Plenty. "As the slippery Snake, says an old Author, slides from the Hands of him who holds her, even when he thinks he has irrecoverably bruised her; so *Alfred*, emerged out of his lurking Holes, suddenly attacked his triumphant Enemies, himself receiving fresh Fury from a Defeat." But now the Storm of Affliction began to cease; and Providence poured down its Blessings on his royal Head.

HUBBA and *Halden* had led a Party of their *Danes* from *Northumberland* into *Wales*, which they ravaged with Fire and Sword. After this, they entered *Devonshire*, and laid Siege to *Kenwith-Castle*, which was so well defended

defended by *Odua* Earl of *Devon*, that the *Danes* were A. D. routed in a Sally, and 1200 of their Men cut to Pieces, 878, among whom was *Hubba*, whose famous Standard, called *Reafax*, or Raven, fell into the Hands of the *English*. The rest of this Body of *Danes* immediately took to their Ships; and *Alfred* was now encouraged to think of checking the Insolence of the other Body, who were in the very Heart of his Country: He conferred with his Friends for this Purpose; and gave Orders that small Bodies of Troops might be drawn together in several Parts, which might be ready at the least Warning to join one another.

BUT the most difficult, as well as most important Point, was to know exactly the Posture of the Enemy, that Measures might be concerted accordingly. *Alfred*, not knowing who to pitch upon for this necessary Service, took the boldest Resolution that ever entered the Thoughts of a Prince; which was, to go himself into the *Danish* Camp, and be informed by his own Eyes of the Condition of the Enemy. No Habit was so proper for this Purpose as that of a Musician, whose Profession was in high Esteem, and almost sacred even with the most barbarous of the Northern Nations: But his Education in all the liberal Arts, gave *Alfred* great Opportunities of personating this Character to great Advantage; so that he continued several Days in the Heart of the *Danish* Camp, observing, to the utmost of his Power, every Thing he wanted to know; and returned safely to his Friends.

ALFRED found the *Danes* very insecurely posted, confident in their own Strength, and thoughtless of an Enemy: He was determined to attack them in this Disorder, and appointed the East Side of *Selwood Forest* in *Wiltshire* for the general Rendezvous of his Troops, who came in such Numbers to their darling Monarch, that he soon saw himself at the Head of a brave and numerous Army. The King took Advantage of the fresh Courage of his Men, and led them directly against the *Danes*, who were encamped at *Eddington* in *Somersetshire*: He immediately attacked, routed, and overcame them,

A. D. with incredible Slaughter. The Sword was let loose
878. upon the Barbarians; and amply that Day did they compensate the Miseries they had inflicted before. They who escaped fled to a Castle; but were soon compelled to submit: When *Alfred* agreed to let them depart, upon Condition, that their Leader *Gutbrun*, the Chiefs of their Army, and the main Body of their People, should receive Christianity, depart from his Kingdom of *Wessex*, and give Hostages for Performance of the Convention. The Treaty was accordingly put into execution: *Gutbrun*, and thirty of his principal Noblemen, were baptised; *Alfred* standing Godfather to *Gutbrun*, who was christened by the Name of *Ethelstan*: After which he received the Government of East *Anglia*, and *Esex*, from *Alfred*, who granted it as Lord Paramount of *England*, to be held in the same Manner by the *Danes*, as the Saxon Princes had before held it under *Egbert*.

A. D. This decisive Victory set *Alfred* at the Height of his
879. Wishes: He had by one Battle recovered his Kingdom; and he was now determined to preserve it by encreasing his Navy. *Gutbrun* settled with his *Danes* in East *Anglia*; *Alfred* was at Peace, and had received Allegiance from A. D. all the *Danes* in *England*: But in 882, a new Swarm arrived, which were destroyed by the *English* Fleet. Several other Engagements happened between the *English* and *Danish* Fleets: But *Alfred* still possessed the Dominion of the Sea; in which he thought himself secure, while he pursued the favourite Purpose of his Heart, which was the Propagation of Civil Arts, encouraging polite Learning, and establishing the Plan of a Civil Constitution in *England*, which owes its Strength, Glory, and Security, to this great Founder of its Laws and Liberties.

ALFRED, having secured the Sea-Coast by his Fleet, diligently set about fortifying the rest of his Kingdom with walled Towns and Castles: He dispossessed the *Danes* of *London*, which he rebuilt, and made it the Bulwark of his Government; since the Invitation so fair a River as the *Thames* had brought the *Danes* into the Heart of his Dominions. He annexed *Mercia* to *Wessex*; and, in 886, all the *English* took an Oath of Fidelity to *Alfred*,

Alfred, who was now looked upon as their immediate A. D. Sovereign. This happy Revolution in his Favour, gave him Leisure for farther Regulations: For the more Certainty and Regularity of his Levies, he divided the Country into Counties, the Counties into Hundreds, and the Hundreds into Tythings. All the Inhabitants of the Kingdom were obliged to belong to some Tything; whereby Robberies were prevented. Many excellent Laws were made by *Alfred*; particularly the Institution of Juries: The *English*, says a *Frenchman*, behold with Pleasure in these Regulations, the Origin of those Laws they so happily live under at the present Time: He tells us, that the Laws of *Alfred* were so full of Lenity, that Murder was only punished with a Fine; but observes, that their Mildness was counterbalanced by the Strictness of their Execution; and that *Alfred* caused four and forty Judges to be executed in one Year for not doing Justice. To *Alfred* likewise was owing the finding Sureties for good Behaviour; and, in Default thereof, committing to Prison: Besides, the Institution of Sheriffs; with the Original of Fairs and Markets; as also of Hundred-Courts, County-Courts, and Leets, are referred to this Monarch; who composed his Body of Laws from those digested by his Predecessors *Ethelbert*, *Ina*, and *Offa*, to which he added many new Regulations, and the whole were extant so late as *Edward* the Fourth, being 574 Years afterwards. But, as it is the actual Execution, and not the bare Institution of good Laws, that must make a People happy; this occasioned *Alfred* to determine all Suits of Appeal in Person: He also encouraged his Nobility to the Study of the Law, which soon became so much revered, that the Golden Age of Justice was in some Measure restored in *England*; for Bracelets of Gold being hung in the Highways over Night, the Owners would find them safe in the Morning.

As *Alfred* himself was an excellent Scholar, the Seat of the Muses was naturally his next Care; and he founded, or at least greatly augmented, the University of *Oxford*. The Arts and Sciences flourished under his Protection: Commerce was greatly encouraged; and several Manu-

A. D. factories were established. The Fleet commanded the
882. Sea; and *Alfred* disposed the Militia in such a Manner as
to check the *Danes* every where by Land.

A. D. 893. THUS *Alfred* reigned several Years gloriously and hap-
pily: But in 893, the *Danes*, under *Hastings*, made a
other Descent upon *England* in 330 Vessels, with which
they landed in *Kent*. *Alfred* obliged the Kings of *North-
umberland* and *East Anglia* to take an Oath of Fidelity;
after which, he led his Army into *Kent*, pursued the
A. D. 894. *Danes*, and defeated them at *Farnham* in *Surry*. In the
mean Time, the *Northumbrians* and *East Angles*, revolted
from their Allegiance to *Alfred*, and besieged *Exeter*,
which was soon relieved: However, *Hastings* was again
defeated, and his Fleet burnt: Though he afterwards led
his Army into *Mercia*, and encamped at *Buttington* in
Montgomeryshire, where they were attacked by *Alfred's* Ge-
nerals, and most of them cut to Pieces.

A. D. THE next Year the *Danes* took Possession of *Chester*,
895. and plundered *North Wales*: But, not daring to return
through the *Mercian* Dominions, they took a Circuit
round by the Borders of *Northumberland*, and thence into
East Anglia, where they raised a Fortification near *Hert-*

896. *A. D. ford*. *Alfred* obliged them to remove their Quarters;
when they ventured into *Mercia*, and fortified themselves
near *Quatford* and *Bridgenorth* in *Shropshire*. But a great
Mortality happening this Year in *England*, both among
Beasts and Men, the *Danes* soon dispersed themselves
into *Northumberland* and *East Anglia*; while some went
to seek their Fortunes on foreign Shores. From this
Time, the *Danes* made no considerable Figure at Sea for
some Years; because *Alfred* had made such Improvements
in his Navy, as to have the Advantage in all their naval
Engagements, which, though not very great, were frequent

900. *A. D.* and bloody, till the Death of *Alfred*, which happened, by
a Contraction of the Nerves, in the Year 900, after
he had lived fifty-one Years, and reigned twenty-nine.

ALFRED was the Glory of *England*: The Founder
of its Constitution, Learning, and Liberties. He was a
brave Warrior, a wise Legislator, a just Prince, and a
good Man. He was one of those happy Geniuses who
seem

seem born for whatever they do, and are continually employed, without appearing to be so. No Man was more frugal of his Time and his Revenue: No Man wiser in the Disposal of both. So far was he from being like most Princes, who imagine their high Station gives them a Privilege of spending all their Time in Diversions and Trifles, that he endeavoured to improve every Moment: For while he lay concealed in the Isle of Athelney, he made a Vow to dedicate the third Part of his Time to the Service of God, as soon as he should be restored to a State of Tranquility: Accordingly, he was punctual to his Vow, by allotting eight Hours every Day to Acts of Devotion, eight Hours to public Affairs, and as many to Sleep, Study, and necessary Refreshment. His whole annual Revenue was divided into two equal Parts; the one was employed to secular, the other dedicated to religious Uses. He was the best Saxon Poet of his Time; an excellent Grammian, Orator, Philosopher, Architect, Geometrician, and Historian: He composed several Works; particularly, like *Cæsar*, he wrote a Commentary of his own Actions; he also translated *Boetius de Consolatione*, *Bede's Ecclesiastical History*, and many of *David's Psalms* into English. No Historian charges him with any Vice; but all unanimously agree to represent him as one of the most glorious Princes that ever ascended a Throne; his Love for Learning being so great, that he permitted none but such as were learned to bear any Office either at the Court, or in the State. In his Days, says *Milton*, Justice seemed not to flourish only, but to triumph. Another great Man gives us his Character to the following Effect: "Oh, *Alfred*, the Wonder, and Astonishment of all Ages! If we reflect on the devout Part of him, he seems to have lived always in a Cloyster: If on his Conduct and Exploits in the Field, one would think he had spent all his Days in a Camp: If on his Writings and Studies, one would conclude the University had engrossed him: And lastly, if we regard his Prudence and Skill in the Administration of Government, he seems to have made Law and Politics his whole Study."

A.D. THOUGH *Romulus* and *Egbert* were the Founders of the
900. *Roman* and *English* Monarchies; *Numa Pompilius* and
Alfred were required to establish the Glory of their Coun-
tries. The *Roman* and the *English* Legislators made Re-
ligion the Basis of their Governments: But *Alfred* had
no Occasion, like *Lycurgus* and *Solon*, to have Recourse to
supernatural Things to make his Laws observed: His own
Example was sufficient to make them revered: He was
well acquainted with the Life of *Numa*, and found that
the Religion introduced by him was one of the principal
Causes of the Happiness of *Rome*: He, therefore, imitated
the *Roman* both in the Celebration of Religion, and the
Administration of Justice; for he found that they caused
good Order, that good Order brought good Fortune, and
that from good Fortune grew all the happy Successes at-
tending glorious Enterprizes: Besides, he was convinced
that the Contempt of divine Worship destroys a State;
and that the Observance of it occasions the Greatnes
of a People.

ALFRED was born at *Wantage* in *Berkshire*, and
was buried at *Winchester*. His Mother was *Osburga*, the
Daughter of *Oslac*, who was Cup-bearer to his Fa-
ther: His Wife was *Egelfwitha*, the Daughter of *Ethelred*
a *Mercian* Earl; by whom he had several Children, par-
ticularly *Edward* who succeeded him in the Throne,
Ethelward who was a very learned Man, *Alfwitha* who
was married to *Baldwin* Earl of *Flanders*, and some
other Daughters: But *Edmund* his eldest Son, whom he
designed for his Successor, died before his Father, of
whom, as it has been justly observed, “whoever would
“ be informed farther, let him now look on this Country
“ flourishing in Arts, Arms, Commerce, and Freedom;
“ these are the Monuments of *Alfred's* Glory; for to him
“ are they owing.”

From *Egbert's* Death, till royal *ALFRED* reign'd,
The *Danes* and *Saxons* bloody Wars maintain'd:
Inguar and *Hubba*, with their desp'rate Band,
Plunder'd the whole, and Part possess'd the Land:

" But glorious ALFRED laid their *Raven* low,
And crush'd the Spoilers with a sudden Blow ;
Regain'd his Kingdom from their cruel Sway,
And aw'd these mighty Masters of the Sea.

Great Monarch ! *England* owes its Fame to thee ;
Its Constitution, Laws, and Liberty.
Immortal Founder of our Civil Frame,
For this, unfading Laurels grace thy Name :
From the fair Fount, the noble River flows,
Beauteous, and unpolluted as it goes.

Grateful to thee, oh ALFRED ! should we raise
A Monument eternal to thy Praise :
Of Arts the Friend, of Liberty the Sire,
He rous'd the Patriot's, and the Poet's Fire.
Blest Monarch ! what a glorious Reign was thine ?
Blest Poet ! still the Muses guard thy Shrine.
To ev'ry *English* Heart thy Worth is known,
While Juries guard the People, Justice guards the
Throne.

VII. EDWARD the Elder.

THE Safety of a Commonwealth does not so much con A. D.
sist in a Prince who governs wisely while he lives ; as it 900!
does in a Prince who leaves it such Laws when he dies,
that can enable it to work its own Preservation. In this
Condition Alfred left his Kingdom to his Son *Edward*, fir-
named the *Elder*, to distinguish him from *Edward* the Mar-
tyr, and *Edward* the Confessor. This Prince was not e-
qual in Learning to his Father ; but he possessed most of his
Virtues ; and surpassed him in Power and Extent of Domi-
nion. As he was the Son of *Alfred*, he was crowned at
Kingston upon Thames, to the general Joy of the *English*:
However, the Beginning of his Reign was disturbed by a
Competition with his Cousin-German *Ethelwald*, the Son
of his Uncle *Ethelbert*, elder Brother to *Alfred*, who pre-
tended that *Ethelwulf* his Grandfather could not with Jus-
tice settle the Kingdom upon all his Sons successively to
the Prejudice of the Children of the Eldest.

ETHELWALD could meet with no Encouragement from the *English*, which made him apply for Assistance to the *Danes*, who were in Possession of all *Northumberland* and *East Anglia*, from whence they had not only expelled the *English* during the Wars, but had also peopled the East and North Parts of *Mercia*; so that *England* was almost equally divided between the *English* and *Danes*. *Ethelwald* was encouraged by the *Danes*, and with an inconsiderable Party fortified himself in *Winburn* in *Dorsetshire*; but fled on the Appearance of *Edward*, and threw himself into the Arms of the *Danes* in *Northumberland*, who received him with Joy, and proclaimed him King of *England*; pretending, as they were in possession of half the Kingdom, they had as much Right to make a King as the *West Saxons*. However, *Edward* marched his Army towards *Northumberland*, and obliged the *Danes* to abandon that Prince whom they had undertaken to protect, who retired into *France*, where he procured some *Norman* Forces, with which he invaded *England*.

A. D. *EDWARD* was a brave Warrior; he defeated a Body ^{905.} of roving *Danes* in *Kent*; and took all possible Precautions, by fortifying his strong Places, to provide against any Insurrection. *Ethelwald* landed in *Essex*, and penetrated into *Mercia*, from whence he returned into *East Anglia*, where he was joined by the *Danes* of that Kingdom, and by those of *Northumberland*. *Edward* marched against them, and a Battle ensued; wherein several of the *English* Nobility were killed: But the *Danes*, though they kept the Field of Battle, lost *Eolric* their King, several of their Generals, and also *Ethelwald*, who had stirred up the Rebellion.

A. D. THE Death of *Ethelwald* brought on a Treaty between ^{907.} King *Edward* and the *Danes*, at *Itengaford* in *Hampshire*: A. D. But three Years after the War was renewed; which proved ^{910.} unsuccessful to the *Danes*, who were defeated at *Woodnesfield* in *Gloucestershire*, and at *Teotfanhele* in *Staffordshire*, ^{911.} with the Loss of their two Kings *Ecwils* and *Halden*.

AFTER these Defeats, the *Danes* left *Edward* at Leisure to improve his Country in Peace; who, in Imitation of his illustrious Father, used every Interval from Arms in the Propagation of Arts; and now distinguished *Cambridge* much

much in the same Manner as *Alfred* had done *Oxford*. In the mean Time, his Sister *Elfleda*, the Widow of *Ethered*, *Viceroy of Mercia*, greatly distinguished herself as a Heroine against the *Welch*, and the *Mercian Danes*, the former of whom she obliged to pay a Tribute: She succeeded to the Government of *Mercia*: But, on her Death, *Edward* took Possession of that Province, fearing her Daughter *Elfleda* would marry *Reginald King of the East Anglian Danes*.

EDWARD had many Disturbances from his *Danish* A. D. Neighbours: But nothing material happened till the Year 918, when a large Body of *Danes* arrived from *Eritanny* in *France*, under the Command of *Otar* and *Roblt*, who entered the Mouth of the *Severn*, and plundered *Wales*. *Edward* expected them in *Mercia*, and had made such Preparations to receive them, that they were defeated by the Inhabitants of *Herefordshire* and *Gloucestershire*, leaving *Roblt* and a Brother of *Otar* dead on the Spot: After which they retired into a Wood, where they were obliged to capitulate, and give Hostages to depart the Kingdom.

WHEN *Edward* reannexed *Mercia* to *Wessex*, he followed A. D. the Policy of his Father, which was to intermix the *Danes* 920. and the *English* so as they might forget their national Animosities: But his Dominions were again disturbed by *Leofred a Dane*, and *Griffith-ap-Madoc* Brother-in-law to the Prince of *Wales*, [who were ~~taken~~] and defeated by *Edward* at *Sherwood*; in which Battle the King was in Danger of being taken or killed; but as the Life of *Vespafian* was saved by his Son *Titus* in a Battle against the *Britons*, so was the Life of *Edward* protected by the Bravery of his Son *Athelstan* in this Engagement with the *Danes*; the *Welch* Prince fell in the Battle, and the *Danish* Commander was taken Prisoner, whose Head was struck off, and placed, together with that of *Griffith*, upon the Tower of *Chester*.

THE *Danes* daily lost Ground in their Wars with *Edward*; A. D. while the King, who knew how to improve his Advantages, 921. pushed them without giving them Time to breathe; by which Means he compelled them to submit, and once more acknowledge him for their Sovereign: So that *Edward* was now in the Height of his Glory; all the Princes

A. D. in Britain, of whatever Denomination, Scotch, Danes, or 921. Welch, either submitting to his Allegiance, or courting his Authority. He afterwards repaired many Places, and fortified others: He was also continuing by every other Means, to strengthen and improve his Kingdom, except the Augmentation of his Navy, which he neglected, when he died in the Year 925, at *Farringdon* in *Berkshire*, and was buried at *Winchester*, after reigning 24 Years.

A. D. He was a Prince of great Fortitude; yet susceptible of 925. the tendereſt Passions. He had three Wives, and several Children. By *Egwinna*, a Shepherd's Daughter, he had *Atelstan*, who succeeded him in the Kingdom: This Lady was very beautiful: *Edward* accidentally faw her, and was enamoured with her before he came to the Throne: But the Meanness of her Extraction prevented him from acknowledging his Marriage; from whence several Historians have mentioned her as the Concubine of *Edward*. By another Wife, *Edward* had two Sons, *Elward* and *Edwin*; as also fix Daughters, of whom *Ogina* was married to *Charles the Simple*, King of *France*, and was Mother of *Lewis d'Outre Mer*; *Edilda* was married to *Hugh the Great*, Earl of *Paris*, Father of *Hugh Capet*; *Edgwitha* was Wife of *Otho* Emperor of *Germany*; and *Edgina* was married to *Lewis the Blind*, King of *Provence*. By *Edgina* his third Wife *Edward* had two Sons, *Edmund* and *Edred*, who were both Kings of *England*; and two Daughters. Upon the whole, if he was not so active as his Father, he was as good to his Subjects, and as formidable to their Enemies.

VIII. ATHELSTAN.

ATHELSTAN had given signal Proofs of his Courage in many Battles; and in every Action of his Life he shewed himself a Friend to *England*: He therefore succeeded his Father more for his Merit than his Birth; being crowned in the thirteenth Year of his Age at *Kings-
ton upon Thames*, the favourite Residence of the West

Saxon

Saxon Government, as *London* had been for the Princes of A. D. *Mercia*. 925-

GREAT as his Virtues were, *Athelstan* found a Conspiracy formed against him by one *Alfred*, as soon as he mounted the Throne; but it was easily suppressed. Soon A. D. after this, the *Danes* of *Northumberland* seized upon 926- *York* and *Davenport*, being headed by *Sithric*; who, on the Approach of *Athelstan*, submitted to his Power, was converted to Christianity, and had one of *Athelstan's* Sisters given him in Marriage. However, *Sithric* died soon after; when *Guthred*, his Son by a former Marriage, attempted to shake off the Dependency of his Countrymen upon the *West Saxons*; in which he was prevented by the Vigilance of *Athelstan*, who took Possession of *Northumberland*, obliged *Guthred* to fly into *Scotland*, and afterwards surrender himself as a Prisoner; when *Athelstan* shewed him unexpected Favour.

AFTER this, *Athelstan* lived several Years in Peace, till A. D. a Confederacy was formed against him between the *Scots*, 936- the *Irish*, the *English Danes*, and the *Welsh*; which he broke for the present, obliging *Howel* King of *Wales* to pay a larger Tribute than usual.

DISENCUMBERED of foreign Enemies, *Athelstan* was perplexed with domestic Troubles. It was insinuated to him, by some Court Sycophants, that his Brother *Edwin*, the only surviving Son of King *Edward* by his second Marriage, had been privy to the Conspiracy of *Alfred*: The young Prince was beloved by the People; the King looked upon him as a Rival; he was jealous that *Edwin* would supplant him in the Throne, and therefore brought him to a Trial for being concerned with *Alfred*. The Prince, though quite innocent, was condemned to be put on board an old rotten Vessel, and left to the Mercy of the Winds and Waves; which was accordingly executed, when the unfortunate *Edwin* desperately threw himself into the Sea, and was drowned: But this *Malnebury* confesses to be sung in old Ballads, not read in warrantable Authors. It happened that the principal Adviser of this Fratricide was Cup-bearer to *Athelstan*; and, soon after, one Foot changing upon some Occasion to slip,

he

A.D. he recovered himself by the Nimbleness of the other,
936. with this remarkable Expression, *See how one Brother helps another*: But his Wit cost him his Life; it awakened *Athelstan* to all the Horror of Murder; he ordered the Cup-bearer to be immediately executed, and then underwent a severe Penance to appease his afflicted Mind.

A.D. HOWEVER, the Fame of *Athelstan* was great Abroad,
939. and his Alliance was courted by the greatest Princes in *Europe*: While the *Scots* and *Irish*, joined by the petty Prince of *Cumberland*, invaded *Northumberland*, under the Command of *Anlaff*; but they were met by *Athelstan* at *Brunanburgh*, or *Brumford*, near the *Humber*, when both Armies came to a general Engagement. The *English* Army was headed by *Athelstan*, his Brother *Edmund*, and *Turketil*, General and first Minister to the King. The *Scots* were commanded by *Constantine*, their King; the *Irish* by *Anlaff*; the *Cumbrians* by their Prince; and the auxiliary *Danes* by *Froda*. *Athelstan* attacked them in their Intrenchments; the Battle was long and bloody: But Victory at last declared absolutely in favour of the *English*, who made a great Slaughter of their Enemies, killing six *Irish* or *Welch* Kings, with twelve Earls and General Officers: Though *Athelstan* lost *Edwin* and *Ethelwin*, the two Sons of his Uncle *Ethelward*.

A.D. ATHELSTAN, after winning the Battle, easily extend-
940. ed his Conquests farther into *Scotland*; and, after he had settled Affairs in the North, he obliged the *Welch* to meet him at *Hereford*, where they submitted to his Authority, and agreed to pay him a Tribute of Twenty Pounds of Gold, Three hundred Pounds in Silver, and twenty-five-thousand Head of Cattle, with a large Number of Hawks, and Hounds.

A.D. THE same Year *Athelstan* made an Expedition to the
941. Islands of *Scilly*, of which he took Possession: But, soon after his Return, he died at *Gloucester*, and was buried at *Malmesbury*, in the forty-sixth Year of his Age, and in the sixteenth Year of his Reign: His Life being short in Years, but great in Glory.

THOUGH

THOUGH *Athelstan* seemed to be entirely engrossed A.D. with military Affairs by Land, he maintained a large 941. Fleet at Sea, and added several excellent Laws to those of *Alfred* his Grandfather: He also caused the Holy Scriptures to be translated into the *Saxon* Language; and found Time to make Justice and Civil Government flourish in his Dominions, over which he was the first King who had no subordinate Prince under him, or any independent upon him; though his Modesty was such, that he never assumed the Title of King of all *England*.

IX. EDMUND I.

A MODERN Historian says, that *Edmund* succeeded his Father *Athelstan*: But he should have said his Brother; for *Athelstan* left no Issue, and his Successor was *Edmund* the fifth Son of King *Edward*, who was crowned at *Kingston*, in the eighteenth Year of his Age.

THOUGH *Athelstan* left *England* in profound Tranquility, *Edmund* was soon disturbed by *Anlaff*, who had retired to *Ireland*, from whence he was now invited by the *Northumbrian Danes*, and, being assisted by the King of *Norway*, entered *Northumberland*, which readily submitted to him. The enterprising *Dane* then marched into *Mercia*, where he took several Places: But being met by 942. *Edmund*, near *Chester*, a Battle ensued, in which neither Party could boast of the least Advantage: So that a Treaty was soon concluded, whereby the Kingdom of *Northumberland*, and all the Country lying North of *Watling-Street*, were ceded to *Anlaff*.

EDMUND was a brave Prince, and was betrayed into this Treaty by the Advice of the Archbishop of *Canterbury*: However, in 944, he invaded *Northumber-* A.D. *land*, and, after expelling *Anlaff*, annexed it again to his 944. Dominions. He also deprived the petty Prince of *Cum-* *berland* of his Country, which he granted by Treaty to the King of *Scotland*, on Condition that he and his Successors should ever be ready to assist the King of *England*, both

A.D. both by Sea and Land, and own him as Lord Paramount
944. of those Lands.

EDMUND, on his Return to *Wessex*, made several salutary Laws, particularly one against Robbers, the oldest of whom, when robbing in Gangs, was to be hanged; which was the first Law that made it Death to rob or steal in *England*.

PROBABLY this Prince would have rendered his People happy, had his Reign been longer; but a fatal Accident robbed him of his Life, when he began to enjoy the Fruits of his Victories. He was assassinated two Years after his Return to *Wessex*, as he was solemnizing the Festival of St. *Augustin* at *Pukelkirk* in *Gloucestershire*, where he was slain by the ignoble Hand of *Leof*, a notorious Robber, whom he had formerly banished: But the Traitor was cut in Pieces by the King's Attendants, who buried their royal Master at *Glastonbury*.

X. E D R E D.

THOUGH *Edmund* left two Sons behind him, by his Wife *Algiva*, named *Edwy* and *Edgar*, they were too young to succeed to the Crown, which was therefore given to *Edred* the Brother of *Edmund*, the youngest Son of *Edward the Elder*; who was crowned at *Kingston*, by the unanimous Consent of the Clergy and Nobility.

THE *Northumbrian Danes* bore the *English* Yoke with extreme Impatience; they began to shew some Acts of Rebellion; and as nothing but Force was sufficient to keep them in Subjection, *Edred* sent an Army into the North under the Command of *Turketil*, who obliged them to renew their Allegiance to the *English* Government, by taking an Oath of Fidelity at *York*. However, in 949, 949. *Anlaff* returned to *Northumberland*, and retook Possession of that Kingdom, from which he was soon afterwards expelled by the *Danes*, who placed *Eric* on their Throne: But, in 954, *Edred* recovered *Northumberland*, which he divested of its Royalty, by reducing it to a Province, and

and making Earl *Oulph*, an *Englishman*, the first Governor. A. D. 949.

AFTER this, *Edred* was afflicted with a *Quinsey*; which occasioned him to build several Monasteries, and to shew many other Acts of Devotion; particularly, he suffered himself to be scourged by *Dunstan* Abbot of *Glastonbury*, who had such an Ascendant over the King as to be entrusted with the Money which he intended for religious Donations: But the King dying, in 955, the Abbot impiously retained the Treasure, and was thereby enabled to carry on Works surpassing even royal Magnificence.

EDRED was buried at *Winchester*, and was succeeded by *Edwy*, the elder Son of his Brother *Edmund*; though *Edred* had Issue living at his Death.

XI. EDWY.

THIS Prince was only fourteen Years of Age when he ascended the Throne, and was crowned at *Kingston*. His Person was so beautiful that he obtained the Surname of *Fair*: He was passionately fond of a young Lady named *Athelgiva*; but whether the Conversation between them was criminal or not, his bitterest Enemies have not positively asserted; though this Passion was fatal to them both. A. D. 955.

DUNSTAN is represented as a Snake cherished in the Bosom of *Edred*, which not only stung his generous Successor, but shed the Poison of Rebellion all over the Face of the Land. This artful, ambitious Priest, was now too overgrown for a Subject; by his Interest, the Monks had got into the Ecclesiastical Benefices; for which they every where proclaimed him a great Saint, asserting that Heaven daily wrought Miracles in his Favour, and that he was frequently honoured with divine Revelations. But *Edwy* retained very different Notions of *Dunstan* from those of his Predecessors: The Priest had insolently offended the Prince, who was too generous to be a Bigot; having in his Temper all the gallant Openness, and noble Spirit, that adorns the Man, or dignifies the King. The rude Church-

man

A. D. man had violently tore the young Monarch from the Company of his beautiful *Abelgiva*, to whom he had happily retired on the Day of his Coronation; his royal Heart fired with the tender Passion of Love, and negligent of all the Pageantry of State: But the Prince only deferred his Resentment till a proper Opportunity, which soon happened, when he banished the Priest, and obliged him to retire into a Monastery in *Flanders*.

A. D. THE Monks, finding themselves deprived of their Patron, irritated the People against their Sovereign, whom they obliged to throw from his Bosom She who was most worthy of reigning there. In that infatuated Age, Priesthood was a very lucrative Profession, and the People were so superstitiously led by the Voice of the Clergy, as to be ready at their Incitement to throw off their Allegiance to their King. *Edwy* had banished the Monks, who in revenge formed a Conspiracy against him, headed by *Dunstan*: They inflamed the People against their Sovereign; and, having procured his Brother *Edgar* to countenance their Crime, they broke out into open Rebellion. The Consequence of this was the Deserion of *Mercia* and *Northumberland*, which *Edwy* was obliged to surrender up by Treaty in favour of his aspiring Brother, and to be contented with *Wessex* for himself.

BUT this Partition of *England* was of no Continuance; for the Triumph of *Dunstan* and the Monks, over his Misfortunes, fate so heavy upon the Mind of *Edwy*, as to throw him into an Excess of Melancholy, which occasioned his Death, after he had reigned four Years and some Months. He was buried at *Winchester*, loaded with every barbarous Invective that Monkish Arrogance could through on his Memory; though he enjoyed all the Virtues hereditary in the Blood of *Cerdic*, and was really possessed of the most amiable Qualities; whose Fate serves to shew us, that Virtue itself becomes dangerous in a Prince, when of an unpopular Complexion; and that the Resentment of the Monks has been frequently too powerful for Kings, as well as too fatal for the People.

By *Alfred's* Bounty fair *Oxonia* rose;
 And *Cambridge* to his Son its Glory owes:
 Yet ev'n the *Muses*, felt the *Danish* Pride;
 For, in her *Alfred*, *England's* Glory dy'd.

A. D.
957.

Brave *Edward* prov'd him worthy *Alfred's* Son;
 And *Athelstan* the fairest Laurels won;
 He curb'd the *Danes*, awhile sav'd *England's* Fate,
 And render'd *Wales* a tributary State.

Edmund with royal Virtues fill'd the Throne,
 And from *Northumbria's* *Danes* preserv'd his Crown.
 Unhappy Prince! the Wars whole Rage he try'd;
 But, in his Palace, by a Villain dy'd.

Edred still kept the *Danish* Race in Awe:
 But *Edwy* an intestine Rival saw;
 Ambitious *Dunstan*, with his Monkish Train,
 Disturb'd their Country's Peace, their Monarch's
 Reign;
 Nor ceas'd their Rage, till *Edgar* gain'd a Crown,
 And took possession of his Brother's Throne.

XII. E D G A R *the Peaceable.*

CONSPIRACIES are more dangerous to Monarchs than open War; more Princes having lost their Lives, and States their Liberties, by the former than the latter: Because few are able to make open War against Kings, but every one may conspire against them. The Conspiracy against *Edwy* might have proved fatal to *England*, if *Edgar* had not succeeded to the undivided Dominions of his Family; or if this Prince had not been endued with many Virtues; for he was only sixteen Years of Age when he was crowned Sovereign of all *England* at *Kingston*; besides he had *Dunstan* for his Tutor, who was now made Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and prevailed upon the King not only to recall the banished Monks, but to dispossess the secular Priests of their Benefices.

THERE are some Men born with such good natural Parts, that their Judgment is ripe before the usual Time; and such a Man was *Edgar*. He governed his Kingdom so

A. D. so well in Peace, that his Reign was undisturbed by War:
959. For he bridled the *Danes* and the *Scots* by a strong standing Army, and his glorious Navy intimidated any Foreigners from making Invasions.

A. D. His Care and Wisdom was so great in guarding his Coasts, that his Fleet was augmented to 4800 Ships, according to some Authers, or to 3600 according to others; which he divided into four Squadrons, and kept them continually cruizing round the Island; whereby the *Danes* were no longer the Plagues and Terrors of *England*. For the Support of this naval Armament, which *Edgar* intended for the Safety of the whole Island, he had eight Kings or Princes under him, who contributed to defray the Ex pense he was put to for their general Security; these being *Kenneth* King of *Scotland*, *Malcolm* King of *Cumberland*, *Maccuse* Lord of the *Isles*; with *Dinnal*, *Griffith*, *Hunald*, *Jacob*, and *Judethel*, Princes of *Wales*: All of whom met *Edgar* at *Chester*, where they went on board his Barge, and rowed him up the River *Dee*; himself guiding the Helm, as an Emblem of his Supremacy over them all.

ALFRED the Great endeavoured, by an extraordinary Act of Severity to prevent the venal Proceedings of his Magistrates, and to have Justice equitably administered among his Subjects; but the ensuing Wars prevented his Successors from executing his Laws. *Edgar* was blest with an unmolested Peace, and soon reformed this Iniquity, by taking a Circuit every Year through some Part of the Kingdom, on purpose to hear the Complaints that were made against those Judges who abused their Authority.

As *England* and *Wales* were greatly infested by Wolves, *Edgar* abolished the pecuniary Tribute of the *Welch*, and substituted in its Room a yearly Tribute of 300 Wolves Heads: He also gave such great Encouragement for the Destruction of those Animals in *England*, that in a few Years their very Species were exterminated throughout the whole Face of the Country.

EDGAR had been married to the fair *Elfleda*, Daughter to one of his principal Noblemen, and Mother to *Edward* his Son and Successor: But, on her Death, *Edgar* was enamoured with *Elfrida*, the Daughter of *Ordgar*,

Ordgar, Duke of *Devon*, by the Commendations he had A. D. heard of her Beauty. Indeed, *Edgar* was too much en- 961. slaved by his Passion for the fair Sex, though he knew it had been the Ruin of his Brother: However, what the Monks rendered so odious and criminal in one, they over- looked in the other. The King had never seen *Elfrida*; but sent *Ethelwold* his Secretary to her Father's Seat to see whether the Lady was as beautiful as Fame had reported her; who found her exceed the Description, and was pri- vately married to her by the Consent of her Father. *Edgar* was deceived by *Ethelwold*, who continued the Deceit by representing her as being far from a Beauty: Though the King soon discovered the Treachery, slew its Author, and married the Lady. Had *Edwy* been guilty of such Acts, the Monks would have strongly commented upon the Crime; which in *Edgar* they considered not as an Instance of arbitrary Cruelty, but of a great Revenge to injured Royalty.

HOWEVER arbitrary *Edgar* was in the Pursuit of his A. D. amorous Passions, his Conduct in public Life was just, 971. noble, and moderate: His naval Armament shews that he understood the natural Interests of his Country; and he invited many Foreigners over to improve his Manu- factures. He repeated the Ceremony of its Inaugura- tion, on the Death of his Son *Edmund*, in the Year 971; being crowned again at *Axminster*: But he died in 975, in the thirty-second Year of his Age, and the sixteenth of his Reign; being buried at *Glastonbury*, and succeeded by *Edward* his Son by his first Wife *Elfeda*.

Oh, *Edgar*! while *Britannia* rules the Main,
Thy Memory each *Briton* shall retain.
Conscious of *Britain*'s native Strength and Pride,
We see thy glorious Navy sweep the Tide.
From thee, the naval World does *Britain* own;
Her present Glory, and her past Renown:
Grant, Heav'n! that latest Ages yet may see
Britannia rule the World, and *Edgar* honour thee!

Edgar,

Edgar, alike, could guard the Sea and Land,
 The Race of Wolves were slain by his Command.
 No more the Shepherd watches out the Day,
 But lets the happy Flock securely stray :
 No more, at Night, he dreads the ravag'd Fold ;
 While the rich Fleece yields *Britain* Mines of
 Gold.

XIII. EDWARD II. *the Martyr.*

A. D. *EDGAR* was canonized by the *Monks*, because he
971. had built upwards of forty Monasteries, and strip't the
 secular Clergy to enrich the others; which brought on
 the Ruin of the Kingdom; for, henceforward, nothing
 is to be heard of it but its Decline under a double Con-
 quest, and the pre-occurring Causes.

A. D. WHEN *Edgar* died, the secular Clergy revived their
976. Dispute with the *Monks*; each Party was assisted by some
 of the Nobility, whereby the Succession of *Edward* was
 some Time prevented by *Elfrida* his Mother-in-law,
 who disputed his Legitimacy, and insisted that the
 Crown ought to descend to *Ethelred* her Son by *Edgar*.
 To settle this important Point, an Assembly of the States
 was held; where, by the Interest and Artifice of *Dunstan*,
Edward was acknowledged the lawful Successor to the
 Throne. But the young Prince, who was only fourteen
 Years of Age when he came to the Crown, was soon de-
 A. D. prived of it by his Mother-in-law; who, three Years after,
979. caused him to be assassinat'd and stabbed in the Back, as
 he was without Attendants drinking a Cup of Wine to
 her Health, at the Gate of her own Castle, called *Corfe-*
Castle, in the Isle of *Purbeck*, in *Dorsetshire*, where she
 kept her Court.

THE Body of this unfortunate Prince was at first
 thrown into a Well; but was afterwards buried at *Shaftes-*
bury, were such Miracles were represented to be perform-
 ed at his Tomb, that, by the Affection of the *Monks*, he
 was canonized, and soon got the Surname of the *Martyr*.

XIV. ETHELRED II.

ETHELRED was the only surviving Prince of the A. D. royal Family; and, though he was but twelve Years of 979. Age, he was crowned at *Kingston upon Thames*. He was too young to be accessory to the Murder of his Brother; but *Dunstan*, when he put the Crown upon his Head, told him, that, in Expiation of this Crime, the Miseries of *England* should exceed those she had ever known: Which, though the Archbishop was far from being endowed with the Gift of Prophecy, happened to be too fatally verified.

HITHERTO we have found the Descendants of *Egbert* worthy of the Blood of so illustrious an Ancestor: But in *Ethelred* we shall find all its Purity exhausted. From whence it may be observed, that the Successor of a great Man, though inferior in Qualities, may be able to maintain a State by the Valour of him that hath governed it before, and enjoy the Fruits of his Labours; as *Ethelwulf* did those of *Egbert*, and *Edward* those of *Alfred*: But if it happens, that two or three Princes follow without the Valour of their Ancestor, of Necessity that Kingdom must go to Ruin; which was the Case of *England*, after being governed by so peaceable a Monarch as *Edgar*, so young a Prince as *Edward*, and now coming under the Rule of the young and indolent *Ethelred*.

THE *Danes* were kept in Awe by the maritime Force of A. D. *Edgar*, which was neglected after his Death; and the 981. Reins of Government being now slackened in a Minority, the *Danes* took this Opportunity of renewing their Invasions. They landed at several Times, and in several Places; particularly at *Southampton*, and *Portland*: They penetrated far into the Country, where they were frequently joined by their Countrymen who were settled in *England*, and committed great Depredations for two Years together; during which Time they had several Engagements with the *English*; whereby the Kingdom was

A. D. was a Scene of Murders, Plunderings, and Conflagrations.
981.

ETHELRED had none of the Spirit and Generosity of his Ancestors: Bred up between his Mother, and her Priests, he had too much Cowardice to oppose his Enemies, and too much Avarice to equip out a naval Armament for the Protection of his Subjects. The Virtues or Vices of Kings form the Glory or Ruin of their Country; as the Subjects are either brave or spiritless, vigilant or indolent, according to the Example of their Prince: Thus *Egbert* founded the *English Monarchy*, and *Ethelred* was now bringing it to Destruction.

A. D. A GREAT Body of *Danish* Troops, commanded by *Justin*
991. and *Guthmund*, landed at *Ipswich* in 991: They were opposed by *Britnoth* Duke of *East Anglia*; but he was defeated, and his Defeat exposed the adjacent Country to the greatest Devastation. To add to the Miseries of *England*, *London* had been burnt to the Ground, and a Flux destroyed great Number of its Inhabitants; but their greatest Loss was in *Elfer* Duke of *Mercia*, who was the only Support and Defender of his Country, while its Monarch was supinely squandering away his Time and his Treasure; both of which might have been well employed in the Protection of his unhappy Subjects.

THE *Danes* were equally successful in their Engagements, and terrible in their Victories; they spread themselves every where, and the Person of the King was in Danger before he thought of the Danger of the Kingdom. But instead of honourably expending Money in levying an Army, he meanly applied it for the Purchase of that Peace from the *Danes*, which shameful Inactivity had prevented him from obtaining by the Sword. It cost him ten thousand Pounds, an immense Sum in those Times, to purchase Peace: But, instead of preventing the *Danish* Depredations, it was the Occasion of renewing them, and aggravating the Calamities of *England*: For the Present given to this Band, served only to allure others; who, being equally avaricious and necessitous, thought they had an equal Right to make Advantage of the Weakness of the *English* Government.

AT

At length, *Ethelred* was awakened from his Indolence; he A. D. put on the Resolution of a King, he equipped a strong Squa- 993. dron at *London*, and sent it against the *Danes* under the Com- mand of *Elfric*, Duke of *Mercia*; who came up with the Ene- my, but infamously betrayed his Trust by deserting to them, which gave them an Opportunity of entering the *Thames* and the *Humber*, of landing there, and spoiling the whole Country. An Army was sent against them by Land, headed by three Noblemen, *Fræna*, *Godwin*, and *Frithe- gis*, who deserted to the *Danes* in the same Manner as *Elfric* had done at Sea; whereby the *English* Army was destroyed.

SWEYN King of *Denmark*, and *Onlaf* King of *Nor- A. D. way*, invited by the good Success of their Subjects in Eng- 995. land, wanted to partake of the Spoil: Accordingly, they entered the *Thames* with Ninety-four Ships, and besieged *London*: But they were repulsed, and fell upon the adja- cent Countries with Fire and Sword. *Ethelred* had Re- course again to Money instead of Arms; but he was obliged to pay fifteen thousand Pounds to make his Enemies dis- continue their Ravages: After which, they retired to *South- ampton*, where *Onlaf* was converted by the Means of *Ethelred* to Christianity, and promised never to invade *England*, which Promise he faithfully observed.

BUT *Sweyn* continued the Scourge of *England*; for the A. D. *Danes* soon renewed their Incursions, and committed great 997. Barbarities, which they also extended to *Wales*. They continued their Ravages, till *Ethelred* found his Throne A. D. shook, and once more re-exerted the Spirit of his Ances- 999. tors. His Country was also invaded by *Gryme* King of *Scotland*; and he had a Quarrel with *Richard*, Duke of *Normandy*: But the *Scotb* Army was defeated by *Uthred*, Son of *Waltheof* Earl of *Northumberland*; and the Quarrel with the *Norman* was conciliated by Pope *John*. *Etbelred* then fitted out a Navy, and levied an Army; with an In- tent to exterminate the *Danes*; but he was so far from ac- complishing his Design, that after several Defeats given to many seperate Bodies of his Forces, the *Danes* threatened an Extinction of the *English* Name and Nation.

E THELRED was now married to *Elgiva*, Daughter A. D. of *Richard*, Duke of *Normandy*; and by this Alliance, vain- 1002. ly

A.D. ly imagined to intimidate the *Danes*. "But, according to
1002. " *Hollingsbed*, what is a King if his Subjects are not loyal;
 " or what is a Realm if the Commonwealth is divided?" Both of these happened to *England* and its King; for the *Danes* by living so many Years among, and intermarrying frequently with the *English*, became so intermixed with the principal Families, that there were scarce any without a strong Tincture of *Danish* Blood; which occasioned many of the Nobility to consider *England* as their Country, while they looked upon the new-coming *Danes* as their Countrymen: So that *Ethelred* was compelled to purchase a Peace at a still higher Rate; being now obliged to pay Twenty-four thousand Pounds to stop the Ravages of the Invaders. This Peace was effected by *Gunilda*, the Sister of *Sweyn*; who was married to *Paling*, an *English* Nobleman, had embraced Christianity, and looked upon herself as an *English* Woman: But the Remedy was a severe one; for a new Tax was laid upon the Kingdom for defraying such extraordinary Payments, and the Money so collected was called *Dane-gelt*; which was properly a Land-tax of twelve Pence for every Hide of Land, or as much as a Plough could till in a Year; and the Tax was continued in succeeding Ages, long after the Occasion was removed.

SOME of the *Danes* continued in *England*; while others returned to *Denmark*. The former found the *English* dispirited, and behaved with such Insolence as to acquire the Name of Lord *Dane*, or *Lurdane*: The meanest *Dane* assumed the Dignity of the greatest *Englishman*: They defloured the best Families, and starved the poorest: Their Will was Law; their Law, Lust and Murder. This roused the Resentment of the *English* King, and the Vengeance of the *English* Nation: The Monarch commanded a general Massacre of these imperious *Danes*; while the Subjects kept the Order with such Secrecy, and executed it with such Inveteracy, as to shed as much Blood among the *Danes*, as the *Britons* under *Boadicea* had done among the *Romans*; the Massacre being made on the Feast of St. *Brice*, with such Havock, as to spare neither Age nor Sex.

AMONG

AMONG the rest, *Gunilda* was put to Death; which A. D. was severely revenged by *Sweyn* her Brother, who was 1003. King of Denmark, and the next Year invaded England with 300 Ships. He took *Exeter*; defeated the *English* Army twice; and destroyed *Norwich*: But a Famine, which broke out in 1005, obliged him to return to Denmark.

SWEYN came back to *England* the next Year, ravaged the whole Country, and obliged *Ethelred* to pay thirty-1006. thousand Pounds for the Purchase of Peace; who took that Opportunity of restoring his Navy; which was again ruined by the Dissentions of his Commanders.

THE Loss of the *English* Fleet gave fresh Encou-A. D. ragement to the *Danes*, who landed with a large Fleet at 1009. *Sandwich*, scoured the Country, laid *Oxford* in Ashes, besieged *London*, and defeated the *English* Army in *Suffolk*; after which, they destroyed *Cambridge*, murdered most of the Inhabitants of *Canterbury*, and plundered all the Towns that lay in their Way: So that they over-ran the whole Kingdom; till they were obliged to retire by their own Dissentions.

BUT, in 1013, *Sweyn* arrived at *Sandwich*, with a A. D. strong Fleet, and with an Intention of taking the whole 1013. Island, while *Ethelred* was plunged in his Luxuries. *Northumberland* submitted to the *Danish* Monarch, who took *Oxford* and *Winchester*; but was defeated at *London*; though he reduced all the rest of the Kingdom, and was acknowledged its Sovereign. The *Londoners* would have been faithful to *Ethelred*, but he deserted them, and sought an Asylum, with his Wife and Children, in *Normandy*. Thus *Sweyn* made *England* a Prey, rather than a Conquest: But, instead of being crowned King, he was murdered by his Soldiers as a Tyrant.

THE Death of *Sweyn* occasioned *Ethelred* to return to A. D. *England*, where his Subjects received him with such Joy, 1014. that *Canute*, the Son and Successor of *Sweyn*, was obliged to return to Denmark. But *Canute*, the next Year, visited *England* again; which he soon overran: And, in A. D. 1016, *Ethelred* died, after an inglorious Reign of thirty-1016. seven Years, and in the fiftieth Year of his Age. He

A. D. was buried at St. Paul's in London; leaving Issue, by *Elgiva*
1016. his first Wife, *Edmund*, *Edwy*, and three Daughters; as
also by *Emma of Normandy*, his second Wife, *Alfred*, *Edward*, and one Daughter.

XV. EDMUND II. surnamed Ironside.

A. D. THIS Prince enjoyed the Virtues of his Ancestors: He
1016. had been many Years in Arms against the *Danes*, and was
now in the twenty-seventh Year of his Age; having ob-
tained the Surname of *Ironside*, on Account of his bodily
Strength, and indefatigable Pursuit of War. His Father
left the Kingdom in extreme Poverty and Desolation:
But *Edmund* revived the *English* Courage, and bravely
opposed the *Danes* under *Canute*, to whom the *English*
Clergy had swore Fidelity at *Southampton*.

AFTER an excellent Prince, a feeble one may subsist:
But after a feeble one, his Successor will find it difficult
to support his Authority. *Edmund*, like *Ancus* among the
Romans, was so endowed by Nature, that he knew how
to use the Blessings of Peace, and how to support the
Terrors of War: He had little Opportunity of shewing
the former, but he always shewed the latter. He relieved
London, when it was again besieged by *Canute*, and
soon afterwards defeated him in a pitched Battle near
Gillingham in *Somersetshire*: He also had another general
Engagement with him at *Sherston* in *Wiltshire*, which was
fought gallantly on both Sides, but neither could claim the
Victory. The same Year, he defeated them again at
Brentford in *Middlesex*, and at *Ottenford* in *Kent*; but, at
Ashdown in *Essex*, the *Danes* were victorious, entirely
through the Treachery of *Edric*, who deserted his Com-
mand. It was manifest that the *English* only wanted a
good Commander to chastise the *Danes*, to whom *Edmund*
became so formidable, that they were glad to terminate
the War by a single Combat between him and *Canute*:
Accordingly, the two Princes met in the little Isle of *Al-
ney*, in the River *Severn*, near *Deerhurst* in *Gloucestershire*:
They engaged valiantly in the Sight of both Armies:

But

But *Canute*, finding himself too weak to resist the strong ^{A. D.} ~~Arm of Edmund~~, desired a Parley, wherein he offered ^{1016.} to divide the Kingdom between them, which *Edmund* readily accepted: Whereupon the Combat ceased; and it was agreed, that *Wessex*, with the City of *London*, and Part of the ancient Kingdom of *Essex*, should belong to ~~Edmund~~, with the Title of King of *England*; while *Canute* was to have the Kingdom of *Mercia*, including also *East Anglia*, and *Northumberland*.

THE *Danes* were allowed to winter in *London*, where *Edmund* died the same Year in which he had so greatly distinguished himself; being assassinated by *Edric*, who was afterwards put to Death by *Canute* for his Treachery: so true it is, that though the Treason is desired, the Traitor is detested.

EDMUND left two Sons at his Death, named *Edmund* and *Edward*: But neither of them succeeded to the Possessions of their Father, which were now seized upon by *Canute*, who became absolute Monarch of all *England*. Thus the *Danes* accomplished their Views, after contending about 200 Years with the *English* for the Possession of so desirable a Country; which Contention cost the two Nations more than 300,000 Men, killed in 54 Battles by Land, and 38 Engagements at Sea, besides a Multitude of Skirmishes and Sieges.

EDMUND, like a glorious Comet, first appeared to shew his Virtues as a King, and suddenly disappeared; leaving *England* obscured by the *Danish* Cloud, which darkened the Island five and twenty Years, when the Gloom was dissipated by *Edward* the youngest Son of *Ethelred* the Second.

In *Edgar's* Issue droop'd the *English* Pride.
 Young *Edward* by his Mother basely dy'd:
 But her *Ethelred*, indolent and mean,
 Wasted a tedious and inglorious Reign.
 This was the Summer for the *Danes* to thrive;
 And now a mighty Swarm left *Denmark's* Hive:
 They plunder'd all the Sweets of *England's* Plains,
 Deflower'd her Nymphs, and massacred her Swains;

No Faith, no Treaty, could avert their Rage ;
No Family escape, no Sex, nor Age.
The proud *Lur-Dane* so insolent was grown,
As ev'n to shake *Ethelred* on his Throne :
Then *Engladn*'s Genius wak'd, with Vengeance glow'd,
And all the *Danes* lay welt'ring in their Blood :
But *Sweyn* appear'd, and, with a furious Band,
Compell'd *Ethelred* to desert the Land.

In vain, brave *Edmund* shew'd the *Cerdic* Race ;
In vain, retriev'd his Father's past Disgrace :
Unhappy *England* bow'd to *Canute*'s Sway,
And all the Kingdom was the *Danish* Prey.



The

The DANISH LINE.

XVI. CANUTE the Great, the first Danish King of England.

WHAT *Egbert*, the Founder of the *English* Monarchy, foretold to his Son *Ethelwulf*, was now ^{A. D. 1016} ~~fatal~~ verified; the Indolence of his Successor *Ethelred* destroyed the Kingdom, and not only transferred the Crown into another Family, but gave the Country to another People.

THE Inhabitants of *Denmark* were converted to Christianity, by *Ansgarius* Bishop of *Bremen*, in the Year 846; their King was now in Possession of *England*; he also conquered *Norway*; and was justly intitled to the Name of *Great*. He was crowned at *London*; after which, he divided the Kingdom into four Governments, *Mercia*, *Northumberland*, *East Anglia*, and *Wessex*. He cut off some of the *Cerdic* Line, and sent others into Exile; whereby he established himself in the Throne, and married *Emma* the Widow of King *Ethelred*.

He found the *English* strongly affected to the *Saxon* Line; therefore he took Care to govern them more like an *English* Monarch than a *Danish* Conqueror. He confirmed the *Saxon* Laws; and subjected the *Danes* to these Laws equally with the *English* themselves. He assembled a Parliament at *Oxford*, where it was agreed to give the King eighty-one-thousand Pounds for the Arrears of his Navy; who, in Consideration thereof, sent all the Ships back to *Denmark*, except forty, which he kept for the Defence of *England*. He administered Justice with great Impartiality; pursued every popular Measure; and

150 A NEW HISTORY

left no Means untried to efface from the Minds of the *English* the Barbarity of the *Danes*: So that the *English* People became pleased with their new Prince; and the *Danish* Monarch studied nothing so much as the Happiness of his new Subjects, who assisted him in his War against the *Swedes*.

A.D. *ENGLAND* was now in full Tranquility; for though ^{1020.} all *Wales* was subject to *Llewellyn*, and *Malcolm* the second governed *Scotland*, they were deterred by the Virtues of *Canute* from interrupting the Peace of his Country. Indeed *Robert* Duke of *Normandy* made some Preparations to restore the two exiled Sons of *Ethelred* to the Crown of *England*; but *Canute* entered into a Treaty with the *Norman*, and prevented any Disturbance from that Quarter.

A.D. *CANUTE*, having satisfied his Ambition, gave himself ^{1031.} up to Acts of Devotion. He made it his principal Business to enrich the Churches and Monasteries; he visited *Rome* with the Emperor *Conrade*, where he confirmed the Grants made by the *Saxon* Monarchs to the papal See, and the *English* College. He also built a Church at *Edmundsbury* to the Memory of St. *Edmund*, formerly King of East *Anglia*, who was murdered by the *Danes*: As if the Usurpation of the *English* Crown, in Prejudice of the Sons of *Edmund*, and all the consequent Evils, could be repaired by so slight a Satisfaction.

CANUTE, who had been nursed in Blood, passed the Decline of his Life in the Exertion of the mildest Virtues. Though he was the greatest Monarch in *Europe*, he had as much Humility as Power: For having many extravagant Compliments paid to him by his Attendants, while he was at *Southampton*, he ordered his Chair of State to be set within Flood-mark, as the Tide was flowing, and, to convince his Courtiers that a King as a Man, had no more Power than a Peasant, he addressed the Sea in this Manner: "Oh Sea, thou art under my Dominion, and the Land I sit on is mine; upon thy Peril advance no farther, nor presume to wet the Feet of thy Sovereign Lord." But the Waves, who obey only the Command of the great Lord of the Universe, rolled on as usual, to shew the Monarch how feeble is all human Power: From whence he

he took occasion to upbraid his Flatterers, and to let them A. D. know, " that the Title of Lord and Master belong only 1031." " to him who can bind up the Ocean, and say to its " Billows, *thus far, and no farther shall ye go.*" After this, he never could be prevailed on to wear his Crown again, but ordered it to be placed on the Head of the Crucifix at *Winchester*.

FROM the Time this Prince was thoroughly settled on the A. D. Throne of *England*, he gave daily Marks of Piety, Justice, 1035. and Moderation; which gained him the Affection of his Subjects, and an universal Esteem among foreign Princes, who, at his Request, exempted *English* Pilgrims from paying any Toll as they passed through their Dominions. Full of Years and Glory, he married his Daughter *Gunilda* to the Emperor *Henry IV.* and divided his Kingdoms among his Sons who were all of adult Age. He appointed his eldest Son *Sweyn* to be King of *Norway*; *Hardicanute*, his Son, by *Emma*, to be King of *Denmark*; and *Harold*, his Son by *Elgiva*, a *Hampshire* Lady, to hold the Crown of *England*. He survived this Partition but a short Time; for, in 1036, he died at *Shaftesbury*, in the nineteenth Year A. D. of his Reign, and was buried in the old Monastery at 1036. *Winchester*.

XVII. H A R O L D I. surnamed Harefoot, the second Danish King of England.

HAROLD, for his exceeding Swiftness surnamed A. D. *Harefoot*, was crowned at *Oxford*, by *Elothus* Archbishop 1036. of *Canterbury*: But, as he had not the same Virtues as his Father, his Reign was very different; for with *Canute* died the Glory of the *Danes* in *England*, which was long in acquiring by his Countrymen, but suddenly lost by his Children.

EMMA was the Mother of *Hardicanute*; she was Sister to the Duke of *Normandy*, and Widow to King *Ethelred*, by whom she had two Sons *Alfred* and *Edward*, who had taken up an Asylum in the *Norman* Court, while their Mother was paving the Way to put them in Possession of the *English* Crown. The famous Earl *Godwin* pretended

A. D. to assist the Queen in restoring the *Cerdic Family*; but he
1036. had the Exaltation of his own entirely at Heart; and to dignify his Blood, he became a Traitor to the *Saxon Princes*, whom he encouraged to come over to *England*. *Alfred* embraced the Invitation; but, instead of being assisted by *Godwin*, he was seized by the treacherous Earl, his Attendants murdered, and himself sent Prisoner to the Isle of *Ely*, where he suffered an inhuman Death: Though *Edward* still resided in *Normandy*, and lived to be afterwards King of *England*.

AFTER murdering the Son, *Harold* banished the Queen-
A. D. Mother, who retired to *Bruges* in *Flanders*; as *Normandy*
1039. was then governed by her Nephew, who was a Minor. The King was looked upon not only as an Usurper, but as a Tyrant. The *English* expected their Deliverance from *Edward* the surviving Son of *Emma*, by *Ethelred*, or from *Edward* the Son of *Edmund Ironside*, who had taken up his Residence in *Hungary*; and every thing was ripening for such an Event, when *Harold* laid a Tax upon *England* for maintaining sixteen large Gallies appointed for guarding the Coasts. The *English* found their Design prevented; but, wearied with the Government of *Harold*, they invited his Brother *Hardicanute* to come from *Denmark*, and take Possession of *England*, who fitted out a strong Fleet, and was coming over, when *Harold* died at *Oxford*, without Issue, in the third Year of his Reign, and was buried at *Winchester*; having done nothing either virtuous, popular, humane, or religious, to prove him the Son of *Canute*.

XVIII. HAR DICAN UTE, the third Danish King of England.

HARDICANUTE, on the Death of his Brother,
A. D. arrived in *England* with forty Ships, and was crowned
1039. with the Acclamations of both *English* and *Danes*; the Facility of his Accession being owing more to the Remembrance of *Ethelred's* Indolence, than the *Danish* Power.

HOWEVER

HOWEVER, the *English* in their new King, found all A. D.
their old Grievances continued. He renewed the Tax 1039.
for maintaining the fifteen Gallies, and extended it to the
Payment of his own Fleet. After this, he took an un-
manly Revenge on the Corps of his Brother, which he
ordered to be dug up, the Head cut off, and the whole to
be thrown into the *Thames*: But it was fished up, and pri-
vately interred in the Church of St. Clement's near London,
the common burying Place of the *Danes*.

HE invited *Edward*, his Brother-in-Law, from Norman- A. D.
dy, and received him with great Affection: He also de- 1040.
prived *Living*, Archbishop of *York*, of his Benefice, for
being concerned in the Murder of Prince *Alfred*; and
Godwin procured Pardon only by Corruption.

HARDICANUTE had some Virtues; but many Vices:
He was always oppressing his *English* Subjects with Taxes,
and encouraging the Insolence of the *Danes*, which was now
intolerable; for if a *Dane* and an *Englishman* met on a
Bridge, the latter was obliged to stand, and make a low
Reverence, till the other passed by; just in the same Man-
ner as the *Moors* are obliged to do to the *Turkish* Soldiers
in *Barbary*. But the Spirit of the *English* began to revive:
They refused to pay the Taxes; and two of the Tax-
Gatherers were slain at *Worcester*, which *Hardicanute* in
Revenge ordered to be levelled to the Ground. But he lived
only just Time enough to hear that his loyal Generals had
punctually obeyed their inglorious Orders; for he suddenly
finished his Life and Reign at *Lambeth*, in a Debauch, as
he was celebrating the Nuptials of a *Danish* Nobleman, and
was buried at *Winchester*, with more Joy to the *English* than A. D.
he was crowned, who observed the Day of his Death as 1041.
an anniversary Holiday.

THE Conduct of this Prince, and his Brother *Harold*,
were so reverse from that of their Father, that, instead
of conciliating the Affections of the *English*, they left the
Danish Race so universally hated, that *Edward*, surnamed
the *Confessor*, and Grandson to *Edgar*, found an easy Ac-
cession to the Crown, by the general Concurrence both of
Nobles and People, and with great Applause restored the

A. D. Saxon Race; while the insolent *Danes* were obliged to ~~a-~~
8041. ~~bandon~~ the Kingdom.

THUS expired, not only the Dominion, but all grand Attempts or Invasions of the *Danes* in *England*; which, though continued and often renewed, with mighty Numbers, for above 200 Years, left no Change of Laws, Customs, Language, or Religion, nor other Traces of their Establishments here, besides the many Castles they built, and many Families they left behind them, who, after the Succession of *Edward the Confessor* to the Crown, wholly submitted to his Government; and peaceably inhabiting came to incorporate, and make a Part of the *English* Nation, without any Distinction. But this was only a temporary Repose for *England*: She was doomed a Prey to another Conqueror; and just the Quarter of a Century after she was free from the *Danes*, she was more absolutely reduced by the *Normans*.

O'er Denmark, *England*, Norway, CANUTE reign'd;
 By Conquest these, and that by Birth he gain'd:
 But *England* was his Seat; where *Canute* dy'd,
 Ruling the Realm with truly royal Pride.

Not so, his Sons: *Alfred* by *Harold* bled,
 Who aim'd his Rage at royal *Edward's* Head.
 By *Hardicanute* was the Land oppres'd,
 And *England's* Sons were by the *Danes* distres'd;
 'Till Death remov'd the Tyrant from his Sway,
 And *English* Vengeance drove the *Danes* away:
 The Blood of *Cerdic* was restor'd again;
 But, ah! too soon to own the *Norman* Reign.

The RESTORATION of the SAXON LINE.

XIX. EDWARD III. surnamed the Confessor.

UPON the Death of *Hardicanute*, the *English* were determined to restore the Line of *Cerdic*. *Edward*, ^{A. D. 1043.} Son of King *Ethelred* and *Emma of Normandy*, was the only Prince then in *England*, who had any Pretensions to the Crown; though *Edward*, Son of *Edmund Ironside*, was the next in Succession; and *Sweyn*, King of *Norway*, Brother to *Hardicanute*, also laid Pretensions to the Crown: But the one being in *Hungary*, and the other in *Norway*, *Edward* ascended the Throne, chiefly through the Interest of Earl *Godwin*, who had more Power than any of the Nobility.

EDWARD was as unwarlike as his Father; but though he was no Soldier, he was a good Legislator. A constitutional Act was drawn up, by which the *Danish* Race was abjured, and a limited Time appointed for their leaving *England*: That is, those *Danes* who arrived with *Hardicanute*; for the other *Danes* were so far become *Englishmen*, that they are not mentioned in History any more than if they had never been known, though just before they were Masters of the whole Kingdom.

EDWARD, before he came to the Crown, promised to marry *Editha*, the Daughter of *Godwin*; but it was ^{A. D. 1044.} three Years before the Nuptials were celebrated, and they were

A. D. were never consummated; though the Lady was the most amiable Person of her Age, both for Beauty and Virtue. 1044. The King also confiscated the Effects of his Mother, and obliged her to suffer the ordeal Trial, on a Charge of Incontinency with *Alwin* Bishop of *Winchester*; from which she acquitted herself by walking bare-foot and unhurt over nine Plough-Shares of red-hot Iron: The Queen was certainly guiltless of the Charge, but this Way of proving it was owing to the Artifices of the Clergy; who had a Preparation of Oil which prevented the Fire from burning those religious Patients who could purchase their Friendship by the Gratification of their Avarice. From whence it appears, that *Edward* was a weak and bad Prince: For it is justly observed, that this endeared Son and happy Husband, was cruel to his Parents, and insensible to his Wife. However, he had the Address, by his apparent Sanctity, to procure to himself the glorious Titles of *Saint* and *Confessor*.

WHILE *Edward* was oppressing his Mother, he was terrified at an Invasion intended against him by *Sweyn* King of *Norway*. However, soon after, two *Danish* Sol-
A. D. diers of Fortune, *Lothen*, and *Yrling*, landed at *Sandwich* 1046. with twenty-five Ships, committed great Ravages, and carried off a great Booty. *Sweyn*, Son of Earl *Godwin*, who was banished the Kingdom for ravishing a *Nun*, also infested the Coast with eight piratical Ships; but the King restored him to Favour.

A. D. *GODWIN*, though hated by *Edward*, and envied by his Nobles, kept his Place as first Minister to the King, 1047. and his Rank as first Subject of the Kingdom; But being ordered by the King to destroy the Inhabitants of *Canterbury* with Fire and Sword, for insulting *Eustace* Earl of *Bulloign*, who came to pay *Edward* a Visit; the Order was neglected by *Godwin*; who gave this popular Reason for his Disobedience, “ That the Laws of *England* did not admit, that any *Englishman* should be put to Death not only unconvicted, but unheard.” This rivetted in the King an Aversion to the Earl, his Family, and Party. *Godwin* had great Popularity, he feared the royal Resentment, and therefore put himself in Arms, assembling his

his Men at *Beverston* in *Gloucestershire*. A civil War was A. D. ready to ensue : But *Siward* Earl of *Northumberland*, and 1047. *Leofric* Duke of *Mercia*, prevented it, by temporizing with *Godwin*, till they drew him up to *London*, where both the Earl and his Son were banished the Kingdom ; while the King ungenerously stript his own Queen of her Effects, and confined her in the Nunnery of *Werewel*, only because she was the Daughter of *Godwin*.

THE Rebellion of *Godwin* was founded on a Pretence A. D. that the King had too many *Norman* Favoarites in his Court, 1051. who endangered the Constitution : This was Fact ; the *English* perceived it ; they murmured, though they would not rebel ; and *Edward*, to prevent their Murmurs, acted with so much Popularity, as to abolish the heavy Imposition of *Dane-gelt*, amounting to Forty Thousand Pounds a Year, after it had been paid thirty-eight Years.

THE same Year, *William* Duke of *Normandy*, paid *Edward* a Visit ; which proved fatal to *England*, as it gave a Handle for *William* to pretend, that *Edward* then appointed him Heir to his Crown ; a Pretext upon which he afterwards founded the Claim that overthrew the *English* Constitution, by the Introduction of the *Norman* Customs.

GODWIN had taken immense Treasures with him to A. D. *Flanders*, where he fitted out a Fleet, and invaded *England*. 1052. The Royal Navy consisted of forty Ships ; but *Godwin*, being joined by some Ships from *Ireland* under his Son *Harold*, was superior in his naval Force ; which he brought up the *Thames*, and landed his Men on the *Surry* Shore, opposite to *Westminster*, where the royal Fleet and Army were posted along the *Strand*. Both Fleets, and both Armies, faced each other for several Days ; but neither of them were willing to act offensively ; which gave *Godwin* an Opportunity of being reconciled to the King, and all his Family of being restored to their respective Ranks, Power, and Possessions ; while the King agreed to expel his foreign Councillors from the Kingdom. But *Godwin* died suddenly, as he was at Dinner with the King, two Years afterwards ; which gave the *Norman* Monks an Opportunity of saying that it was a Judgment from Heaven ; because, they asserted, that the King charged the Earl with

A. D. with the Murder of Prince *Alfred*, for which he had been
1052. lately tried, and had commuted the Crime ; whereupon the Earl declared his Innocence, wishing that the Morsel he was going to eat might choak him if he was guilty ; and, according to them, it so happened.

A. D. *EDWARD* was now at Peace, fearless of the Ambition of *Godwin*, and free from foreign Enemies. He had lately punished the *Welch*, who had made some Inroads on the Frontier ; and, as *Scotland* was under the Tyranny of *Macbeth*, who had murdered *Duncan* his King, and usurped his Throne, *Edward* was determined to punish the Traitor and the Tyrant ; for a Regicide should always be punished by other Monarchs, because his Crime is not local, but universal, Majesty being held sacred in all Countries. The Blood of *Fergus* was as much revered in *Scotland*, as that of *Cerdic* was in *England*, where *Malcolm* the Son of *Duncan* was generously protected and assisted. *Sirward*, Earl of *Northumberland*, was sent against *Macbeth* with ten-thousand Men ; the *Scotch* Monarch was defeated, and put to the Sword ; whereby an *English* Nobleman had the Glory of restoring a King and a Grandson to the Throne of his Ancestors.

A. D. *HAROLD* the Son of *Godwin*, began now to be more
1056. troublesome to the King than his Father had been : His Ambition was higher, he aimed at the Crown, and he obtained it ; in the Defence of which he afterwards gallantly lost his Life. He was a brave Soldier ; and when *Griffith* Prince of *Wales* invaded *Herefordshire*, *Harold* was sent to oppose him twice : He penetrated as far as *Snowdon* in *Wales*, obliged *Griffith* to sue for Peace, the first Time ; and the next procured his Death ; when his two Brothers swore Homage to *Edward*. But the King was jealous of the Power of *Harold* ; he discovered his Intentions of succeeding to the Crown ; and therefore sent for Prince *Edward*, surnamed the *Out-law*, the Son of *Edmund Ironside*, from *Hungary*. This Prince was married to the Daughter of *Salomon* the *Hungarian* King, by whom he had Issue *Edgar Atheling*, and two Daughters, *Margaret* and *Christina* : He brought his Family into *England*, and the Nation was overjoyed at his Return ; but

he died soon after his Arrival. In the mean while, *Harold* paid a Visit to *William* Duke of Normandy, in Hopes 1056. of being assisted by his Interest in the Succession to the English Throne: But the *Norman* had the same View as *Harold*; and though the former succeeded first, the latter supplanted him afterwards: However, they departed with the strongest Assurances of Friendship, and *William* promised *Harold* to give him his Daughter in Marriage, who in Return swore to deliver up *Dover* to *William* as soon as *Edward* was dead.

EDWARD, the Remainder of his Reign, devoted A.D. himself to Acts of Religion; and a little before his Death 1065. he assisted at the Consecration of *Westminster* Abbey, which, from a small Monastery, he built in a magnificent Manner; and which being afterwards re-built by *Henry III*, has since been the general Repository for the Remains of the English Monarchs. He died the twenty-fifth of January 1065, in his Palace at *Westminster*, and was buried in the Abbey which he had so elegantly built. He reigned twenty-four Years, and died without Issue; being the last Heir Male of the *Cerdic* and *Egbert* Line that sat upon the English Throne; which now, from the Effeminacy of the People in their Imitation of French Manners, and their Use of the French Language, was made easy for *William* the *Norman* to ascend.

EDWARD was the first King of *England*, who touched for the King's Evil; but, whether he cured or not, his Character was greatly magnified for it by the *Monkish* Writers; though *Clovis* the first Christian King of *France*, is also said to work the same Miracle. *Edward* was remarkable neither for his Virtues nor his Vices: His natural Parts were mean, but all his Defects were covered by that Garb of Piety, which made Pope *Alexander III.* canonize him, under the Name of *Edward the Confessor*. Had not this weak Prince, says *Rapin*, preposterously abstained from conversing with his Queen, he might perhaps have had Children, and thereby prevented a Revolution, which involved the English in Slavery. However, he reduced the West Saxon, Mercian, and Danish Laws, into one Body; the first were in use in *Wessex*, the second in *Mercia*,

A. D. Mercia, and the last in Northumberland: They were not 205 very different, and from this Time became common to all England, under the Name of the Laws of Edward, to distinguish them from those of the Normans, introduced afterwards; though the Laws of Edward are still in Force as the common Law of the Land.

XX. HAROLD II.

KING Edward, sometime before his Death, was troubled about the Succession to his Crown: In his own Mind he was for the Duke of Normandy; the Right was manifestly in Prince Edgar Atheling his Nephew, whose Name signified truly noble, to denote his Royal Blood; but Harold had the Hands and Hearts of the People.

A. D. HAROLD alledged, that he was appointed by Edward the Confessor to succeed him; he was beloved by some, and allowed by more, who followed his Power, rather than his Right; so that he was unanimously elected, without Regard to the lawful Heir. The great Abilities of Harold made him capable of holding the Reins of Government, and he began his Reign with many Acts of Popularity: He eased his People of their Taxes, was liberal to the Churches, and impartial in the Distribution of Justice: He created young Edgar Atheling Earl of Oxford, and won the Love of his Subjects in such a Manner that they quietly submitted to his Government.

His first Trouble was from his own Brother Tosti, who was banished by King Edward; but, being the elder Brother of Harold, had obtained Assistance from Norway, to set up a Title or Pretence to the Kingdom; though he could have no other, but that his Brother had usurped the Crown from the right Saxon Heir. Befides, Harold Harfager, King of Norway; and William Duke of Normandy, laid separate Claims to the Crown of England: The former in Right of his Descent from the Blood royal of Denmark; the latter on a Pretence that Edward had appointed him his Successor, and that Harold, when in Nor-
mandy

mandy, had solemnly engaged to assist him in ascending the A. D. Throne.

1065.

T O S T I, after ravaging the *English* Coast from *Sandwich* to *Lincolnshire*, joined his Ships with those of *Harold Harfager*, who brought their united Forces up the *Humber* in 300 Ships, landed their Men, and advanced towards *York*, which they took; while *Harold* assembled an Army to oppose his Invaders, and met them at *Stanford-Bridge* in the East Riding of *Yorkshire*, where a Battle ensued. The Bridge was defended by a brave *Norwegian*, who singly maintained the Pals, for a considerable Time, against the *English* Army; and like *Cæsar's* *Scæva*, slew forty of the Assailants with his Battle Ax: But at last this brave Man fell, and the *English* opened their Way to the *Norwegian* Camp, where the Dispute was long, bloody, and obstinate. But *Harold* slew *Harfager* with his own Hand; *Tofti* was also slain, and the *English* were victorious; the *Norwegians* being permitted to return to their own Country, after taking an Oath never again to invade *England*.

BUT *Harold* was recalled from his Conquest in the A. D. North, to be defeated in the South: For *William Duke* 1066. of *Normandy* sent an Ambassy into *England*, to remonstrate to *Harold* and his Council, the Injustice of seizing the Crown in prejudice of a prior Right, both by the Promise of *Edward*, and the Concessions of *Harold*; threatening a speedy Invasion if *Harold* would not resign the Government, who, being in Possession, admitted neither of these Claims; alledging, that the Succession could not be appointed without the Consent and Decree of the Great Council of *England*: Though this was plainly acknowledging himself an Usurper, unless he put the Merit of his Right upon his Election, which, if done by the unanimous Consent of the States, was constitutional.

THE Duke of *Normandy*, in an Assembly of his States, laid before them his Claim to the Crown of *England*, and desired their Assistance to invade that Kingdom; which they refused: Whereupon the Duke declared his Intentions to the World, opened a Subscription, published his Proposals, and every Man in *Europe* was invited to be an

Adven-

162 A NEW HISTORY

A.D. Adventurer. The Duke also prevailed with *Robert Fitzosborn*, and several of the greatest Bishops and Nobles of Normandy, to make him a voluntary Offer of what Money, Men, and Ships they would each of them furnish towards this Enterprize; as well of their own personal Attendance upon him, in so noble a Design. This free and magnanimous Offer of the greatest among them, in some Degree, spirited not only the rest of the Assembly, but had much Influence upon the People in general, who grew confident of the Success from the Greatness and Boldnes of the Undertakers; so as they fell into Emulation who should engage soonest, and contribute farthest upon this Occasion.

THE Duke, assisted in his Expectation by his Subjects, began to practise upon the Hopes and Ambition of his Neighbours, who, weary of the long Quiet they had lived in at Home, since the Part they had taken in the French and Norman Wars, began to grow fond of some new Action, and to look for new Adventures. William had gained and deserved such high Esteem and general Reputation, by the wise Conduct of his Government, both in Peace and in War, by his Justice and Bounty, by his Valour and Clemency, that he was renowned not only among his Subjects and his Neighbours, but in the remote Regions of Germany and Italy; which made him find a Concurrence in this Design from many Princes his Friends, and some who had been his greatest Enemies. He was favoured and assisted with Money, or Soldiers, by the Dukes of Bretagne and of Brabant, the Counts of Bologne and Flanders, as also by his ancient Competitor the Earl of Anjou: By many Princes of France, the most considerable in that Court; as the Duke of Orleans, the Earls of Poitou and Maine. The Emperor of Germany sent some choice Troops, and experienced Commanders, to serve in this Expedition; and the Pope sent him a Banner he had blessed, with several Relics, which, according to the Devotion of those Times, seemed to have justified his Title, and even sanctified his Arms. The Princes trusted his Faith and Promises, which he had never forfeited: The Knights and Soldiers relied upon his Valour and

and his Fortune, which had never failed in the long and happy Course of his Reign.

A. D.
1066.

THE general Rendezvous of the *Norman* Forces was at *St. Valory*: They consisted of about 50,000 Men, and were transported to *England* in upwards of 900 Ships, which safely arrived at *Pevensey* or *Pemsey-bay*, in *Sussex*, on the 28th of *September* 1066. The Duke himself is said to have been the first Person who jumped ashore, when his Foot slipped, and he fell down in the Mud, which soiled his Hands: But this Accident was turned into a good Omen by one of his Soldiers, who told him, "Sir, you have only taken Seizin of that Land where you will soon be King."

THE *Norman* Duke, to convince his Followers that their Safety was only in Conquest, immediately on his Landing sent one Part of his Fleet back to the Continent, and destroyed the other: After which, he encamped at *Hastings*, where he expected *Harold*, who advanced from the North, elated with his Conquest over the *Norwegians*, and full of Hopes of being equally successful against the *Normans*.

HAROLD mustered his Army at *London*: They amounted to 50,000 Men; but most of them were new raised Troops, ill-disciplined, and worse affected: However, with these *Harold* prepared to attack the *Norman* with great Intrepidity, advanced into *Sussex*, and encamped within eight Miles of his Enemy; so that both Armies were in View of one another.

WILLIAM sent several Propositions to *Harold*; one of which was, that they should try their Cause by single Combat, in the same Manner as had been done by *Edmund Ironside* and *Canute*: But *Harold* declined it, saying he would leave it to God to determine: Upon which, both Parties disposed their Armies for a pitched Battle the next Morning; the *English* passing the Night in Songs and Feasting, the *Normans* in much Devotion.

THE next Day was the 14th of *October*, which was the Birth-day of *Harold*, and was to be the Day of his Death. Early in the Morning both Armies were prepared for Battle: The *English* being headed by their King, and his Brothers

A. D. Brothers *Girth*, and *Leof-wine*; the *Normans* by their Duke,
1066. *Roger Montgomey*, *William Fitz-o-born*, and *Geoffry Martel*.

The Battle was led up by *Robert Fitz-beaumont*, a young Gentleman of *Normandy*; it began about Seven o'Clock, with great Fury, and equal Bravery, as well as Order on both Sides. The *English* were cruelly galled by the Showers of Arrows from the *Norman* long Bows before the Battle joined; which was a Weapon then unused in *England*, and thereby the more surprizing, by Wounds coming from Enemies out of Reach, and not suddenly to be revenged. But when they came up to close Fight, the *Normans* where hewed down by the *English* Bills, which of all Weapons gave the most ghastly and deplorable Wounds. Besides, their Points were so strong and so close together, that no Charges of the *Norman* Horse could break the *English* Foot; though the Duke assaulted them so often, and with such great Bravery, that he had three Horses killed under him in the Attempt. However, finding them continue firm, he caused a sudden Flight to be feigned by the *Normans* who were most advanced: Upon which, the *English*, easily deceived by their own Courage, as well as Hopes, began such an eager Pursuit, as to dissolve their Ranks, which had been otherwise impenetrable. The *Normans* returned with greater Fury, broke into the disordered Body of the *English*, routed, and pursued them to a rising Ground where their broken Forces made a Stand, fell again into Order, and encouraged by the Speeches, but more by the Example of *Harold*, they renewed the Fight, and made a mighty Slaughter of the *Normans*.

VICTORY never beheld a fairer Prize, so never had Death a richer Triumph. The Fierceness and Obstinacy of this ever memorable Battle, as important to *England* as that of *Pharsalia* was to *Rome*, was often renewed by the Courage of the Leaders, wherever that of the Soldiers began to faint; till the *Normans*, about Noon, fell again to their Arrows, with one of which *Harold* was shot in the left Eye quite through the Head, and fell to the Ground. The Death of the *English* Monarch gave the Victory, and the Field to the *Norman* Duke, which had hitherto

A.D.
1066.

hitherto continued doubtful on both Sides, seeming thus far to have been fought with equal Courage, and with equal Loss : But the Flight of the *English*, upon the Fall of their King, soon determined the Fate of the Kingdom ; being followed by a long and bloody Pursuit from the *Normans*, which lasted till Night, and left mighty Numbers of the *English* slain in the Flight, that had been safe in the Battle ; and the rest of them wholly dispersed, though covered by the Night.

THIS Victory was won where the Town of *Battle* now stands, so called from the Action of this Day, wherein most of the *English* Army were killed either in the Fight or the Pursuit : But the *Normans* lost only 6013 Men. With *Harold* fell also his two Brothers *Girth* and *Leofwine*, besides most of the *English* Nobility : While *William* took Possession of the Crown, and his Followers of the Land. The Body of *Harold* was delivered to his Mother, who buried it at *Waltham-Cross*, within a Monastery founded by himself : His three Sons fled first into *Ireland*, and afterwards into *Denmark*, where one of his Daughters was married to *Waldemar* King of *Russia*, by whom she was Mother to a Princeps who married *Waldemar* King of *Denmark*, from whom the *Danish* Kings for many Ages after succeeded.

WHAT was left of the *English* Army retired to *London*, under the Conduct the Earls of *Morcar* and *Edwin* : But *William* advanced towards that Metropolis, where was all the Strength then left in the Kingdom ; believing, if he could be Master of the Head, the rest of the Body would follow without any Struggle or Resistance.

In his Way, the Vanguard was met by a large Body of *Kentishmen*, who had concealed themselves in a Wood, by carrying every Man a great Bough of a Tree, like a Shield, in his Hand. When they approached the *Normans*, they threw down their Boughs, and discovered a great Multitude of brave armed Men : The *Normans* were astonished ; but the *Kentishmen* sent the Abbot of St. *Austin's* to tell the Duke, " That all the Men of that Province were assembled there, to defend their Country and their Liberties, or to sell their Lives as dear as " they

A.D. "they could: That if he would swear to preserve
 1066. " them in those ancient Laws and Customs, under which
 — " they and their Ancestors had so long lived, they were
 " all ready to lay down their Arms, and become his Sub-
 " jects; if not, he must prepare to fight with Men who
 " were resolved to lose their Lives, rather than their
 " Laws and Liberties:" Upon which the Duke granted
 their Request, and pursued his March to *London*, where
 the Nobles, the Clergy, and the Citizens were in the
 greatest Consternation.

THE Clergy, as well as the Citizens, thought the *Norman* Torrent was not to be resisted; that a faint and fruitless Opposition would but exasperate the Victor, and make him continue as well as begin his Reign like a Conqueror; therefore, they esteemed it to be the wisest Part, to acknowledge his Claim, and thereby tempt or persuade him into a safer and easier Form of Government, both for himself and his Subjects, as a just and lawful King. The Clergy had the chief Sway in the State: Indeed, they were the principal Instruments in all those many Revolutions of State, irregular Successions, and even Usurpations of the Crown, that happened between this Time, and the Reign of *Henry the Third* in 1216: The Opinions and Councils of the Clergy easily prevailed; they dreaded the victorious *Norman*, and forgot the Right of *Edgar Atheling*: Therefore it was unanimously resolved, not only to submit to a Power they could not oppose, but to acknowledge a Title they would not dispute. After some Time spent in Attempts to oppose him, the Duke, upon his Approach to the City, was received with open Gates and open Arms: He claimed the Crown at his Arrival by the Testament of King *Edward the Confessor*, without any mention of Conquest, which was infinitely grateful to all the Nobles and Commons of the Realm; whether it was a Strain of his own Prudence and good natural Sense, or Apprehension of so great and brave a People, if offended by the Name of Conquest, and irritated by the Dangers or Fears of a lawless arbitrary Power, to which they had not yet their Hearts or Strength broken enough easily to submit.

THUS

THUS ended the *Anglo-Saxon Government*, and thus a A. D. new Race of People took Possession of *England*. This was 1066. the Man, these the Forces, and such the Circumstances that contributed to so famous an Enterprize; whereby the *Saxons*, after enjoying the Kingdom 580 Years, found themselves deprived of it much more suddenly by one bold *Norman*, than they had gained it by several Princes from the *Britons*; who had now the Pleasure of seeing their Invaders invaded, and their Conquerors conquered; while themselves, the ancient Inhabitants of the whole Island, retained their Freedom in a small Part of it; which rendered their mountainous Country, as delightful as the most fertile Plains and Vallies: For the Blessings of Liberty, are preferable to the Bounties of Nature.

Edward, by *Godwin*, gain'd the *English Throne* ;
Though *Edmand's* Offspring should have wore the Crown,
Bred in the *Norman Court*, to *England's* Bane,
The pious *Edward* spent an idle Reign:
Transferr'd the Crown from *Egbert's* royal Race,
Which *Harold* feiz'd, and held with no Disgrace;
Till the brave *Norman*, with his valiant Band,
Defeated *Harold*, and posses'd the Land.

A long Farewel to all the *Saxon Fame*,
Its martial Glory, and its civil Frame :
New Men, new Laws, new Customs, *William* brings,
And a new Language hides the Face of Things.

A NEW

111

th

I

F

A NEW
HISTORY
O F
ENGLAND.

The SECOND PART.

From the *Norman Conquest* in 1066 to
the Reign of *Henry the Fourth* in
1399.

ш а н и я

У Я О Т З И Н

т о

д м а л ь з

т и ч с к о е в и

о ё д о т и м а л ь з

• 998 •

The NORMAN LINE.

I. WILLIAM surnamed the Conqueror, the twenty first King of England, and the first of the Norman Line.

THE Romans, Saxons, and Danes, conquered England Inch by Inch: But William by one Blow got Possession of all. The English were in the same Condition after the Battle of Hastings, as the Romans were after the Battle of Cannæ: But they were far from having the same Fortitude. The Romans renewed their Vigour by their Defeat, though they had neither Soldiers nor Generals; and Polybius observes, that the Romans both in general and particular, were never more terrible, than when they were exposed to the greatest Dangers, and seemed most upon the Brink of Destruction: At this Time, when Hamibal was so terrible to them, when he had killed as many at Cannæ as William had at Hastings, the Roman People shewed no Footstep of Weakness, nor Sign of Discontent; all in general conspired to promote the public Good: The Resolution being as quick as unanimous to defend themselves, and not lend an Ear to any Proposition of Accommodation: So that the Consequence was happy, and worthy of their Conduct. Whereas the English People were lost to all Spirit of Honour and Liberty: If the Dissoluteness of their Clergy, and the Degeneracy of the Laity, rendered the Britons an easy Conquest to the Saxons; the same Vices and Effeminacy are laid

laid to the Charge of the *English* when they were subdued by the *Normans*; they soon lost all Thoughts of Opposition, had no Notion of struggling for their Liberties, and what was the Consequence? A potent Nation enslaved by a small Dukedom! Though it was attended with worse Effects to the conquering Power, than to the Conquered; for *Normandy* became a Province to *England*; so that the *Norman* People were ruined by the Ambition of their Prince.

THIS *Norman* Prince was natural Son of *Robert* the Sixth Duke of *Normandy*, by *Arlette*, a very beautiful Virgin of *Falaize*, the Daughter of a Furrier, with whom he fell in Love, according to some Authors, as she stood gazing at her Door, whilst the Duke passed through the Town; or, according to others, as she was one Day dancing, with other young People, in the Fields. His Family was of *Danish* Extraction, being descended from *Rollo*, who, with some *Danes* and *Normans*, first made a Descent on *England*, and then in *France*, about the Year 900; and, after committing great Ravages, compelled *Charles the Simple*, to cede the Province of *Neustria*, called afterwards *Normandy*, from these *Norman*, or North-Country-Men, to him and his Heirs; on Condition, that *Rollo* should turn Christian, and hold the Duchy of the Crown of *France*. Notwithstanding *William* was a Bastard, *Robert* prevailed on his Nobility, to acknowledge him as his Successor, when only nine Years of Age: The States swore Fealty to him, and he was carried to do Homage to *Henry the First King of France* for his Duchy, who had the Tutelage of the young Prince, while his Father, in a Fit of Devotion, paid a Visit to the holy Sepulchre, where he soon after died; leaving his Son to be the Founder of his own Fortunes, rather than the Heir to those of his Father, which he found exposed to all Sorts of Danger, from the Tenderness of his Age, the Reproach of his Brother, a suspected Guardian, a disputed Title, and a distracted State.

As he was the Issue of a sudden and strong Inclination; he was like a noble Plant, raised in a hot Bed, which gave it such Force and Vigour, as made it prosper and grow

grow to an extraordinary height. At 17 Years of Age, he was obliged to appear in Arms, to quell a Rebellion among his own Subjects; but he had no sooner reduced them to Obedience, than he was attacked by *Martial* Earl of *Anjou*, aided by the King of *France*, who was jealous of the *Norman* Greatness: He twice defeated the *French*, and occasioned their King to die with Grief; after which, *William* enjoyed a calm and peaceable Reign, till he disturbed his own Quiet and that of his Neighbours, by new and greater Adventures.

THE *Anglo-Saxon* Government, at the Time of the ^{A. D.} *Norman* Invasion, like a delicious Fruit, over ripe, was 1066. perishing away. *Edgar*, the indisputable Heir to the Crown, was prevailed upon to acknowledge the Conqueror, who was afraid of asserting his Right by Conquest: He, at first, seemed to refuse the Crown; but, at last, accepted it, being elected King both by the *English* and *English Normans*, and crowned in *Westminster-Abbey*, by *Aldred* Archbishop of *York*. on the 25th of December; when he took the Oath usual in the Times of the *Saxon* and *Danish* Kings; which was, to protect and defend the Church, to observe the Laws of the Realm, and to govern the People justly: After which, he caused Fealty to be sworn to him by all the Bishops, Barons, and Nobles, with the Magistrates of the City of *London*, who attended at his Coronation.

THIS King was about 52 Years of Age, upon his Accession to the Crown; being perhaps, the only Instance in History, of a Prince who began and atchieved any great and famous Enterprize after that Age; for *Cæsar*, though about the same Years when he defeated *Pompey*, had been several Years in attempting it. It is a certain Principle, and the Foundation of all the Laws that can be laid down in Matter of Politics, that no Prince can govern a State well, without a strict Observation of Justice in particular. And it was the Maxim of the *Romans* to treat the People, who submitted to them, with Mildness and Clemency. *William* began his Reign in this Manner, acting like a legal Monarch; but he concluded it more like a Tyrant.

A. D. 1066. HE knew, that the Peace and Safety of his new acquired Dominions, could be preserved only by the general Satisfaction, and Security of his *English* Subjects: This was his first Care, and the best provided for by the two first Actions of his Reign; one was, that as he had claimed the Crown only from the Testament of King *Edward*, and like *Canute*, wholly avoided the odious Name of Conquest; so he expressed upon all Occasions, his Resolution to govern the Kingdom as a lawful Prince, and leave the ancient Laws and Liberties of the *English* Nation, as they had before enjoyed them: The other was, that as he drew no Blood, but what was spilt in the Field; so he seized only the Lands and Estates of those who had been in Arms against him before his Accession to the Crown, or after that Time, by any new Opposition. This Conduct reconciled him to the *English*, who looked upon him to have every Right to the Throne, except that of Blood; and they universally submitted to his Government. While the King divided the Lands of the *English* Barons who opposed him, among the *Norman* Barons who attended him; those of the Commoners among his Soldiers; those whom he had not Lands or Money to reward, he quartered in the rich and numerous Abbies of the Kingdom till he could make them a proper Provision; and others he promised to reward in *Normandy*: For they were all Soldiers of Fortune, and all equally entitled to the Spoils they had won by their Valour.

A. D. 1067. AFTER he was settled on the Throne of *England*, he paid a Visit to his ducal Dominion, which was one of the fairest Branches of *France*: But he had first the Precaution to erect several Fortresses, and put *Norman* Garrisons in most of the strong Places throughout the Kingdom; as also to take with him *Edgar Atheling*, and such of the *English* Nobility whose Fidelity he suspected. He appointed a Regency, the principal Members of which were *Odo*, Bishop of *Bayeux*, and *William Fitzosborn*; the former being made Governor of *Dover*, and the latter of *Winchester*; the one with the Title of Earl of *Kent*, the other with that of *Arundel* and *Hereford*: So that the King set sail from *Peversey* in the Spring, and arrived safely in *Normandy*,

Normandy, where he made a magnificent Appearance, A.D. and was received with the greatest Acclamations of Joy.

WHILE he was giving the *Normans* Marks of his Affection, his Regents oppressed the *English*, who took up Arms against their Oppressors, and for the Recovery of their Liberty. They were assisted by *Eustace* Earl of *Boulogne*, who landed in *Kent*; and were headed by *Edric* an *English* Lord, surnamed *the Forester*, who plundered the *Normans* about *Hereford*. But *William* returned from *Normandy*, and appeased the Storm, with little Difficulty: After which, he treated the *English* with such Severity, that he is charged with a settled Design of reducing the Kingdom to a State of Slavery. So that, from this Time, all Confidence was broke between the King and his new Subjects; all Thoughts of friendly Intercourse were banished between the *English* and the *Normans*, whose Interest it was, that the former should be reduced by Force of Arms, rather than won by Acts of Lenity.

SOON after the Return of *William* from *Normandy*, *Matilda* his Wife came into *England*, and was crowned Queen with great Solemnity. The Dependants of *William* were numerous, and were to be rewarded for their Services: The *English* were to pay them, and the odious Tax of *Dane-gelt*, abolished by *the Confessor*, was revived by *the Conqueror*; being levied with such Rigour, that from thenceforward nothing was heard but Murmuring and Complaints.

INSURRECTIONS arose in several Parts: The first was A.D. at *Exeter*; but was soon suppressed: After which, *Wil-* 1068 *liam* confiscated the Estates of those who sided with *Harold*. This was the most remarkable Event of his Reign; because the confiscated Lands passed into the Hands of those *Normans*, and other Foreigners, who followed the Fortunes of the Conqueror, and being thus rewarded out of the Possessions of the Conquered, became more considerable in *England* than the *English* themselves; from whom descended a new Race of People, and most of those noble Families, which afterwards flourished in the Kingdom.

A.D. THIS brought on a second Insurrection, headed by Ed-
1068. win Earl of Chester, and his Brother Morcar Earl of Nor-
tumberland, assisted by their Nephew Blethwin, King of
Wales: But William marched against them into Yorkshire,
and obliged them to submit. He gave many of their Lands
to his Followers, erected Castles in many Parts of the
Kingdom, and garrisoned them with Normans; which
obliged Edgar Atheling, the right Heir to the Crown, to
fly from the Kingdom, and retire with several Noblemen
into Scotland, where they were well received by Malcolm
Canmore, the King of that Nation, who also married Marg-
aret the Sister of Prince Edgar; from which Marriage
sprung Matilda, Grandmother to Henry the Second, King
of England, in whose Person, eighty-six Years after, the
Saxon and Norman Royal Families were united.

As the Force and Influence of Authority grows weaker
by the Change of Hands and Distance of Places, the new
King resolved to make England the Seat of his Person as
well as Empire, and to govern Normandy by his Lieute-
nants; thereby forcing the common Affection of Birth, or
Education and Custom, to yield and comply with Reasons
of State; preferring a foreign to his natural Soil, though
seated in as good a Climate, and at that Time more adorned
and civilized by the Commerce of France, and other Coun-
tries upon the Continent.

As he had sworn at his Coronation to govern by
the Laws of the Realm; so he continued the ancient Cus-
toms and Liberty of the People, that were called the com-
mon Law of the Land, which he caused in Substance to
be observed, though he introduced several new Forms in
their Administration or Execution, as well as some of the
Norman Laws: However, he preserved to the English their
two most fundamental Laws; the Trial by Juries of twelve
Men, wherein consisted the chief Safety of Life and Pro-
perty; and the Borough Law, which was the greatest Se-
curity that had been invented by the Saxons for the Peace
and Order of the Realm, each Shire being divided into
Hundreds and Boroughs, and every Hundred into Tyth-
ings: Both of which Laws have been inviolably trans-
mitted to their Posterity. He appointed Justices to preserve
the

the Peace, and administer Justice in every County, pursuant to what was practised in the *Saxon Reigns*: He ordained four Terms in the Year for the Pleas of the Crown, and those of greater Moment between the Subjects. He also instituted the Courts of Chancery and Exchequer; the first for tempering the Rigour of the Laws, according to the Duties of Conscience and Equity; the other for determining all Actions concerning the Revenues of the Crown.

BUT, at the same Time, to prevent Insurrections as much as in his Power, he disarmed his *English* Subjects, and forbid them any Lights in their Houses after Eight o'Clock at Night, when a Bell was rung, called *Curfew*, or Cover-fire, at the Sound of which they were obliged to put out their Fire and Candle; but the *English* submitted to this Order with extreme Grief, considering it as a Badge of their Slavery. Besides, if the Feodal Law was not observed by the *Saxons*, it was now not only introduced, but extended by the *Norman*, who, by granting Lands to be held hereditary by military Tenures, or Knights Services, made his Followers Proprietors of the Soil, and turned the ancient Feuds into Inheritances, which made them the more valuable to the Possessors, and gave more Encouragement for their Defence.

WILLIAM bridled all *England* by strong Forts, garrisoned by *Normans*, and he took every Occasion of confiscating the Estates of *Englishmen* to bestow them on his Followers; which occasioned many of the *English* Nobility to join the Fortune of *Edgar Atheling* in *Scotland*, where they were well received, and intermarried into the principal Families; so that when the Crown of *England*, 535 Years after, became subject to a King of *Scotland* in the Person of *James I*, the Descendants of these ancient *English* Families became again united to their ancient Kingdom. A strong Confederacy was also formed against the *Norman* from three different Quarters: The first was from *Ireland*, headed by *Godwin*, *Edwin*, and *Magnus*, Sons of the late King *Harold*, who fled there upon his Death: The second was from *Sveyn King of Denmark*, whose Forces were headed by *Harold* and *Canute*, his Sons, and by *Osborn* his Brother: And the third was from *Scotland*, headed by

A. D. King Malcolm and Edgar Atheling: But their Schemes were
1068. destitute of that Uniformity which was necessary for Success.

A. D. THE Sons of Harold, with some Troops, lent them by
1069.

Dermot a Prince of Ireland, landed in *Somersetshire*, where they defeated a Body of English Forces sent against them, plundered the Country, and retired. The Scotch encouraged a Revolt in *Northumberland*, where *Cumin* the Norman Lieutenant of that County, and all his Retinue, consisting of 700 Persons, were massacred. The Danes, in 240 Ships, arrived in the Mouth of the *Humber*, where they landed, in September, and were joined by *Edgar Atheling*, with most of the other illustrious English Exiles, as also by the *Northumbrians* under *Gospatrick*, who marched all in one Body to *York*, which they took, and put 3000 Normans to the Sword.

A. D. THIS alarmed the English Monarch, who, by politically paying a Deference to the Laws of *Edward the Confessor*, prevented an Insurrection in the Southern Counties, and was entirely at Liberty to oppose the Commotion in the North. He advanced into *Yorkshire*, and laid the whole Country between *York* and *Durham*, in Blood and Ruins. He took the City of *York*, and put all the Inhabitants to the Sword, as well as the Garrison, without Distinction of Sex, Age, or Party: For, as the Inhabitants of *Northumberland*, were of Danish Extraction, he thought of exterminating the whole Race. He purchased the Neutrality of the invading *Danes*; upon which, the Scotch returned into their own Country, leaving the revolted English to the Resentment of a revengeful Monarch, who took *Durham* and pass'd the Winter at *York*.

A. D. IN the Spring, he advanced into *Cheshire*, to curb the *Welsh*; and, having entirely suppressed this dangerous Rebellion and Invasion, he held a great Council, or Synod, at *Winchester*, where *Stigand* Archbishop of *Canterbury* was deprived of his Dignities; the Bishoprics and Abbies, possessed of Baronies, were obliged to exchange their Tenure, and, instead of holding them free of all secular Servitude, to hold them by military Tenure; which was a wholesome, though a violent Innovation; besides, he seized all the Gold, Silver, and Plate, in all the Monasteries

stories of *England*, suspended several Bishops and Abbots, A.D. ^{1071.} and replaced them by *Normans*.

As the *English* King had disbanded Part of his Army, the King of *Scotland* renewed his Invasion, by penetrating into *Yorkshire* and *Durham*, where he committed the greatest Devastations, murdered many of the Inhabitants, and took more with him as Slaves into *Scotland*, where he returned without any Opposition from the King of *England*. Immediately after this *Scotch* Invasion, *William* was perplexed with an *English* Insurrection, headed by *Frederick* Abbot of *St. Albans*, who had sent for Prince *Edgar* out of *Scotland*: But the King by the Advice of *Lanfranc*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, appointed the Abbot to meet him at *Berkhamstead* in *Hertfordshire*, where *William* swore to observe the Laws of the Kingdom, particularly those of King *Edward*; which were the Terms of Submission, and suppressed the Commotion.

THE *English* having disarmed themselves, their Persons were seized, and their Estates proscribed: But *Edgar* escaped into *Scotland*, and *Frederick* retired to the Isle of *Ely*, where many other Exiles repaired, and formed a numerous Body, commanded by *Hereward de Wake*, a young *English* Nobleman, whose military Virtues, if properly assisted by others, would have greatly endangered the *Norman* Power, and promised fair for the Recovery of *English* Liberty. This gallant Nobleman so greatly distressed the *Normans*, that their King was obliged to go in Person against so enterprizing an Enemy, whom he had blocked up in the Isle of *Ely*, which was delivered up to him by the Monks, when the disaffected *English* were obliged to submit: Though *Hereward*, with a few faithful Followers, cut his Way through the royal Army, and escaped into *Scotland*.

THE *English* Monarch now found himself at Leisure A.D. ^{1072.} to return the Hostilities which his Subjects had received from the King of *Scotland*: But as the Northern Countries were depopulated, he invaded *Scotland* by Sea, and landed in *Solway-Firth*. He marched towards *Lothian*, where he was met by *Malcolm*: Both Armies stood at *Bay*, seeming both prepared for a fierce Encounter, and

yet

A. D. yet both content to delay it, from a mutual Respect that
1072. each Monarch had for the Forces and Dispositions of the other. Both Princes were valiant, inured to Arms, and bred up to Dangers: They were not much unequal in Numbers, nor in the Bravery and Order of their Troops: But, as the Loss of a Battle might prove the Loss of a Crown, and as the Fortune of one Day might determine the Fate of a Kingdom, both Kings began to think of ending their Quarrel by a Peace, rather than a Battle. The *Scotch* began the Overture, which was embraced by the *English*: The first Parley was followed by a Treaty, and the Treaty by a Peace, concluded as between equal Forces, and upon equal Conditions: The ancient Bounds of both Kingdoms were preserved: Prisoners were to be released; and Subjects, who desired to return, to be on both Sides restored to their Country and Possessions: Prince *Edgar* was to return to *England*, make his Submission to *William*, and renounce any farther Claim to the Crown. Thus this Storm was succeeded by a general Calm in the whole *Island of Britain*; *William* returned with his Army to *England*, and *Edgar* followed him to perform what was stipulated for him by the Treaty.

A. D. THE *French* also invaded *Normandy*; but *William*, leaving his *Normans* to awe the *English*, took an *English* Army to oppose the *French*, whom he defeated, returned to *England*, and suppressed an Insurrection. After this, he acted more arbitrarily, engraving more of his *Norman* Laws upon the *English* Stock: His Court of Exchequer was turned into a Kind of Inquisition; and all Places of Emolument were conferred upon the *Normans*.

A. D. BUT *William* was unsuccessful in an Expedition he made
1077. against *Brittany*, and had the Mortification to find his eldest Son *Robert* in open Rebellion against him in *Normandy*: The Father opposed him in Person, and in a general Battle had like to have been killed by his Son, who discovered his royal Antagonist, and submitted to him in the Heat of the Engagement, though he was victorious.

AFTER this, *William* obliged the *Scotch* to preserve the A. D.
1077. Peace which they had broke: He compelled the *Welch* to 1077. pay him Tribute: Refused himself to pay Homage to the See of *Rome*: And built the Tower of *London* to awe the Citizens, whose Fidelity he suspected.

HE ordained, that no Bishop or Archdeacon should sit A. D.
1078. as Judges in the County, or Hundred, and Sheriff's Courts, as they had done in the *Saxon* Reigns; but that every one who transgressed the Episcopal Laws should be judged in such Place as the Bishop should appoint; which gave Rise to the Ecclesiastical Courts. But his predominant Passion was Avarice; and, in order to know, of how much more Wool the *English* Flocks might be fleeced, he commanded an exact Survey to be taken of the Lands, Goods, and Chattels of all his Subjects; which was registered in a Book, called *Dooms-day Book*, and deposited in the Exchequer. The royal Revenue consisted of a *Land-Tax*, called *Hidge*, being Six Shillings for every *Plow-Land*; *Reliefs*, consisting of Customs, Excise, and Fines; and the *Crown-Lands*, being 1422 Manors; amounting in all to 400,000*l.* Sterling annually, which was equal to Six Millions now of the same Money. The Subjects were oppressed by these Taxes, and this Oppression was increased by the Game Laws, which were so rigorous, that whoever killed a Deer was to have his Eyes put out: Besides, the King was so fond of Hunting, that he depopulated the Country for about thirty Miles in Compafs, for inclosing the *New-Forest* in *Hampshire*; which was a great Grievance to many Families at that Time, but has been of great Utility to the present Age, as its Timber serves to build the Royal Navy. The King was also desirous of making the *Norman* Language general in *England*; but though all public Acts were made in the *Norman* Tongue till the Reign of *Edward* the Third, the *English* still preserved that of their own Country: And he also first introduced the *Jews* into *England*.

WILLIAM having reigned some Years at Peace, was A. D.
1087. again threatned by an Invasion from *Denmark*; but he 1087. had the Address to prevent it, and then prepared to invade *France*, which cost him his Life: For having taken

Mantes

A. D. *Mantes* in *August*, and ordering it to be reduced to Ashes, he 1087. approached so near to the Flames, that the Warmth of the Season, and the Heat of the Fire, threw him into a Fever, which was afterwards increased by a Fall from his Horse in his Return to *Roan*, so that he died at *Hermentrude*, a Village near that City, on the 9th of *September* 1087, in the sixty-fourth Year of his Age, after a Reign of fifty-two Years in *Normandy*, and twenty-one in *England*; being buried at *Caen*, without any Ceremony.

KING *William* had four Sons, and five Daughters, by *Matilda* his Wife, Daughter to the Earl of *Flanders*. *Robert* was Duke of *Normandy*; *Richard* was killed by a Stag in the *New-Forest* in the Life-time of his Father; *William* mounted the Throne of *England*, and was succeeded by *Henry* his Brother. *Cicely* his eldest Daughter was an Abbess; *Constance* was married to *Alan Fergeant* Duke of *Bretagne*; *Adela* was Wife to *Stephen* Earl of *Blois*, by whom she had a Son of the same Name, who was afterwards King of *England*; *Adelisa*, promised to King *Harold*, died young; and *Agatha* was married to *Alphonso* King of *Galicia*.

WILLIAM was arbitrary in his Government of *England*, where he may be considered in the Light that *Augustus* was at *Rome*; neither of them coming to the Government entirely by Conquest, Usurpation, Inheritance, or Election, but by a strange Mixture of those Rights together. He left *Normandy* to his eldest Son *Robert*; he recommended *William* to succeed him in the Throne of *England*, which he did not pretend to dispose of by Will, as he did *Normandy*, though his only Pretension to that Kingdom was founded on the Will of *Edward the Confessor*; but to *Henry* he left only a small Annuity.

“*THUS* died this great King, commonly called the *Conqueror of England*. His Stature was tall, his Size large, his Body strong, and his Passions violent.

He was the bravest of all the *Norman* Dukes, the most powerful of all the *English* Kings, and the most glorious of all his Predecessors. He had much Wisdom, but more Dissimulation; great Wealth, but greater Avarice; fond of Fame, and brave enough to deserve it; severe to Opponents

ponents in War, but humble before the Servants of the Church.

A.D.
1087.

By this Conquest of the Kingdom, or Change of Government, *England* lost the true Line of its *Saxon* Monarchs, the Flower of its Nobility, and the Simplicity of its Commoners: But it gained Strength at Home, and Dominion Abroad; increased its naval Power, obtained more Learning, and acquired more Civility: From all which Circumstances, the succeeding Monarchs have done this Conqueror the Honour of dating from him the first Period of their Reigns.

THE Norman Duke, who claim'd the *English* Throne,
In *Hastings'* bloody Field obtain'd the Crown;
Where *Harold* bravely held the martial Strife,
And, with his Kingdom, nobly lost his Life.
The Norman Victors made the *English* Swains,
Their servile Slaves, and feiz'd their fertile Plains.
The royal *Edgar* seeks the *Scottish* Court,
Where *England's* Nobles to their Prince resort:
While their Possessions are the *Normans* Spoil,
Who with a Kingdom crown their martial Toil.

Yet *William* knew that Freedom still remain'd
In *English* Bosoms, though its Fire restrain'd;
Which made him shun a Conqu'r'or's hateful Name,
And in Election fix a fairer Claim.
Awhile he mildly wore the conquer'd Crown;
But soon made *England* tremble at his Frown:
The *English* Courage burst the *Norman* Bound,
And bloody Conflicts fill'd the Nation round:
But still the *Norman* Fate superior rose,
And hapless *England* felt augmented Woes;
Her Nobles banish'd, and her Country waste,
Her Freedom fled, and all her Fame disgrac'd.

Though, from this *Conqu'r'or*, future Monarchs date
The well-known *Era* of the *English* State.

II. WILLIAM II, surnamed RUFUS, the twenty second King of England, and the second from the Norman Conquest.

A. D. THE Norman Branch was too firmly planted, in the rich
 1087. Soil of *England*, to be easily rooted, where it bloomed
 fairly; while the original Stock was perishing away in
France.

THE hereditary Succession was disregarded by the late King, in Prejudice of his eldest Son *Robert*; so that *William Rufus*, thus called from the red Colour of his Hair, and sanguine Complexion, got Possession of the *English* Throne by the Assistance of *Lanfranc* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and *Eudo* the High-Treasurer; being crowned by the former at *Westminster*, on the twenty-seventh of *September*.

THIS Prince was thirty Years of Age when he ascended the Throne: He had the Bravery of a Soldier, but few of the other Qualifications necessary for a Prince; and the *English*, who expected an Abatement of the *Norman* Severity, soon found themselves more rigorously treated by the Son, than they had been by the Father.

A. D. ROBERT succeeded to the Duchy of *Normandy*; he
 1088. was a Prince worthy of the *English* Crown, the *English* Crown was worthy his Ambition, and he was determined to assert his Right of Primogeniture. His Cause was espoused by several of the *Norman* Nobility in *England*; particularly by his Uncle *Odo*, who had been formerly one of the Regents of *England*, *Robert de Mowbray* Earl of *Northumberland*, *Roger* Earl of *Arundel* and *Shrewsbury*, with several other powerful Barons, who were to arm all their Followers, and take the Field against the King.

ROBERT, to assist him in his Invasion, mortgaged the *Contantin*, being a third Part of *Normandy*, to his younger Brother *Henry*, for a Loan of 3000*l.* The Conspirators appeared in Arms in several Parts of the Kingdom, particularly in the Eastern and Western Counties, as also in the North, where the Bishop of *Durham* headed the Insurrection.

surrection. But the King relied more upon his own Policy, and the Credulity of the English whom he promised to restore to their Liberties, than on the Strength and Fidelity of his Norman Subjects. He confided all his Power in the Hands of the old English, who were now expert Masters of the Long-bow; for, as they had lost their Kingdom by that Weapon, they were very ready to make use of it for the Preservation of their Lives. He had the Address to win over some of the principal Conspirators: And he first led his Army against Odo, who was at the Head of the Conspiracy in Kent, whom he reduced; which put an End to the Rebellion, because the Rebels received no Assistance from Normandy.

UPON the Extinction of this Rebellion, the King was determined to invade Normandy, and deprive his Brother of his ducal Dominion: Which was the more easy to be accomplished, because the principal Norman Families, though they had large Possessions in that Country, had much larger in England, and now looked upon themselves as Englishmen. William built a potent Fleet, raised a numerous Army, corrupted the Norman Governors, sailed from England, landed at St. Valory, and had most of the Norman Castles put into his Possession by the treacherous Governors. The Norman Duke applied to the French King for Assistance; but William also sheathed the Sword of that Monarch by a Present of Gold; and the next Year concluded a Peace with his Brother Robert, whereby the County of Eu, and several Towns of Normandy, were put into the Possession of William.

AFTER this Reconciliation the two Brothers united their Forces against their younger Brother Henry, whom they besieged in Mount St. Michael. But this Siege had like to have been fatal to William; who, single, and unattended, fell in with a Party of Henry's Soldiers: His Courage and Strength made him disdain a Retreat; he spurred his Horse, more rashly than bravely, against a whole Squadron; when his Horse was wounded, himself dragged on the Ground by the Foot, and had been slain by a Soldier, who had his Sword lifted to dispatch him, if he had not cried out, " Hold, Fellow, I am the King of England:"

The

A. D. The Soldier dropt his Sword, the Monarch was raised from the Ground, and great Marks of Submission paid him by the whole Party. Here the Generosity of the Prince, was equal to the Bravery of the Trooper, who told him he did not take him for a King, but for a common Man: Upon which *William* replied, with a Smile, and his usual Oath, “ By St. Luke’s Face, thou shalt be my Knight, “ and have a Fee answerable to thy Worth.”

THE three Brothers were soon after brought to a Reconciliation: But *William*, on his return to *England*, conceived a Jealousy of *Edgar Atheling*, banished him his Dominion, and confiscated his Effects. The Saxon Prince retired again to the Court of *Malcolm* King of *Scotland*, who resented the Injustice shewn to his Brother-in-law, and invaded *Northumberland*. *William*, not only marched an Army against the Invader by Land, but sent a large Fleet to invade *Scotland* by Sea: The latter was wrecked, and perished on the northern Coasts; while the former had like to have been ruined for want of Provisions, after they were advanced as far as *Lothian*, in the Country of their Enemy. However, a Peace was concluded, by the Intervention of *Mowbray* Earl of *Northumberland* for *William*, and the Interest of *Edgar Atheling* with *Malcolm*; whereby *Edgar* was restored to the Possessions of which he had been so lately deprived.

A. D. THIS Peace was of no long Continuance; for, in 1093, *Malcolm* came from *Edinburgh* to visit *William* at *Gloucester*: But the English Monarch refused to admit the Scotch Monarch into his Presence, till he had done him Homage; which *Malcolm* resented, returned to *Scotland*, and again invaded *England*. The Scotch Army besieged *Alnwick*; and they were opposed by *Mowbray* the Governor of *Northumberland*; who, by an Ambush in the Field, or, according to the Scotch Account, by Treachery in capitulating for the Town, slew both the King of *Scotland*, and his Son; after which the Scotch Army was defeated, and put to the Sword.

THE Crown of *Scotland* was seized by *Donald Bane*, the Brother of *Malcolm*, who banished all the English out of his Kingdom, and obliged *Edgar* the surviving Son of the late

late King to seek Protection, with his Uncle *Edgar Atheling*. A.D. 1093.
ing, in the Court of *England*, where *William* received him with as much Hospitality as *Edgar Atheling* had formerly received from the King of *Scotland*.

WILLIAM thought he had nothing now to fear from *Scotland* and *Wales*; he placed a new King on the Throne of the former; and *Rees* King of *Wales* was slain by the *English* in a Battle, near *Brecknock*: Which made *William* reinvoke *Normandy*; but, while he thought of conquering that Duchy, he was obliged to return into *England*, to quell the *Welsh*, who were ravaging *Shropshire* and *Cheshire*.

THE King penetrated into the Heart of the *Welsh* A.D. Territories, but lost more of his Men, than he destroyed of the Enemy: So that he soon returned from this Expedition, to encounter a more dangerous Foe. *Robert de Mowbray* had done the King signal Service by his Victory over the *Scots*: But the King had no Generosity in his Temper, and expressed so little Gratitude to the Earl, that nothing less would satisfy *Mowbray* for this Contempt, than the dethroning of *William*, and setting the Crown on the Head of *Stephen*, Earl of *Albemarle*, Grandson to *William* the Conqueror. *Mowbray* had gained several other disaffected Noblemen to his Interest, who took Possession of some strong Places in the North; and the Conspiracy was so alarming to the King, that he directed his March into *Yorkshire*, reduced *Bamborough Castle*, took *Mowbray* Prisoner, and put an End to the Rebellion; not without much Severity to the Rebels, among whom the Count of *Eu* was condemned to lose his Eyes, and be castrated.

ABOUT this Time, the famous Crusade was undertaken for the Recovery of the *Holy Land* out of the Hands of the *Saracens*, which for many Years greatly interested the *English* Nation. This Project was first set on Foot by *Peter the Hermit*, Pope *Urban the Second* recommended it to the Council of *Clermont*, and many Princes of *Europe* zealously embarked in this religious Piece of Knight Errantry; which, after draining Christendom of immense Blood and Treasure, at last left the Country so religiously contented

A. D. tended for in those superstitious Times of Christianity to 1096. the *Mahomedans*. Among the Princes who wore the Red Cross, or Badge of the Crusade, *Robert Duke of Normandy* greatly distinguished himself, who mortgaged his Duchy to his Brother *William*, for Ten Thousand Marks of Silver, to enable him to set out upon the Expedition among the *Croisees*: But, for the Advancement of this Sum, *William* very arbitrarily distressed his *English* Subjects, who were now made to consider his Request as equivalent to a Command.

As soon as *Robert* departed on his Expedition, *William* took Possession of *Normandy*, where he had some Disputes with the *French* Monarch, which were supported by War, but soon adjusted by Peace.

WILLIAM was desirous of conquering *Wales*, where the *Normans* had settled themselves in different Parts. He again invaded that Country; but the *Welch* were not to be conquered; and he was once more obliged to desist from his Undertaking, with little Prejudice to these ancient *Britons*, but with great Loss to those modern *English*.

A. D. THOUGH the *English* Monarch could not reduce the 1098. *Welch*, he could restore the right Heir of *Scotland* to the Throne of that Kingdom, where *Donald* had regained the Crown: But *William* sent *Edgar Atheling*, with an Army to place his young Nephew *Edgar* on the Throne of his Ancestors, in which he succeeded. In the mean Time *William* reduced a Revolt in *Normandy*; and some of his Noblemen extended their Possessions in *Wales*.

A. D. AFTER which, *William* returned to *England*, where, 1099. while he was taking his favourite Diversion of Hunting in the *New-Forest*, a Messenger arrived with Intelligence that the City of *Mans* in *Normandy* was besieged by the Earl *Hely de la Flesche*. The King enquired of his Attendants, in what Situation the Castle of *Mans* stood from the Spot where he was upon; and, being informed, he rode directly to *Dartmouth*, the next Sea-port Town, where he found himself much in the same Situation as *Caesar* is represented to be when he attempted to pass the

Adriatic from the Anio to Brundufum. The King could A. D. get only a crazy Vessel for his Passage, though the Weather was rough and the Sea high: However, like *Cæsar*, he was determined to sail; and his Behaviour to the Pilot was like that of the *Roman* to *Amyclas*: For the Master of the Vessel being ordered to sail, and representing the Danger of the Sea, “ Set sail, says the Monarch, didst thou ever hear of a King that was drowned?” and compelling him to sail, he safely arrived at *Barfleur*, where he suddenly assembled a Body of *Normans*, relieved *Mans*, and took the Earl *de la Flesche* Prisoner; who told the King that “ he had no Reason to glory in an Advantage which he had gained by Surprize;” adding, “ if he was at Liberty again, he would let him see, it would not be so easy a Matter to vanquish him another Time:” Upon which the gallant Monarch immediately set his Prisoner free, telling him, “ he desired no Return, but exhorted him to do his worst:” And in this he also acted like *Julius Cæsar*, when he set *Domitius* at Liberty: And therefore, says *William of Malmesbury*, “ if the Soul of *Euphorbus* is said to have been transformed in the Body of *Pythagoras*, it may also be said that the Soul of *Julius Cæsar* informed the Body of this *William*. ” It is true, some particular Actions of *William* were similar to some mentioned by *Cæsar* of himself: But they are no more fit to be compared together in the general, than the Defeat of *Pompey* at *Pharsalia* is fit to be compared with that of *la Flesche* at *Mans*, or the Duchy of *Normandy* to the Empire of *Rome*: Though a modern Writer has endeavoured to establish a different Opinion; who also ventures to compare *Robert* to *Pompey the Great*; though one was the first of *Romans*, the other at most but the first of *Normans*. After this, *William* returned into *England* with the same Expedition as he left it, where he pursued his Diversion, which had been thus interrupted.

THE same Year, the *Croisees* took *Jerusalem* by Storm, and put 40,000 *Saracens* to the Sword. They elected *Robert* Duke of *Normandy* King of the conquered Country; but he declined that Honour, in hopes of enjoying the Crown

A. D. Crown of *England*; where, instead of ascending the 1099. Throne, he was afterwards confined in a Dungeon: And, upon his refusing the Crown of *Jerusalem*, it was conferred upon *Godfrey of Bologne*.

A. D. WILLIAM Earl of *Poitiers*, to enable him to join the 1100. *Croisées*, offered to mortgage his Dominions of *Guienne* and *Poitou* to the King of *England*, in the same Manner as *Robert* had mortgaged *Normandy*: But while *William* had this Opportunity of increasing his Power, Death suddenly put an End to his Reign. For as he was Hunting, near *Chorringham* in the *New-Forest*, the Company dispersed, when the King was left only with *Walter Tyrrel*, a French Knight of great Worth, and the particular Favourite of *William*. As they were together, a Stag happened to pass by, at which the King shot, and gave it a slight Wound; while *Tyrrel* shot at another Stag, but missed the Deer, and struck the King full in the Breast with his Arrow, who immediately expired. It is certain that the King was killed in this Spot, and in this Manner; but whether by Chance or Design is uncertain; for some Writers say, that his Death was predicted to him by a Monk, whom the Monarch justly disregarded; because this seems to be too much of a Piece with the rest of his Comparison to *Caesar*, whose violent Death was also foretold by a Soothsayer, and disregarded by the Emperor. *Tyrrel* fled from *England*, if he was innocent; and if guilty of the Murder, he escaped with Impunity: Though it can hardly be credited, that he would thus assassinate a Prince who held him highly in Favour and Regard. The royal Coarse had no better a Conveyance than a Collier's Cart to *Winchester*, where it was interred. Thus died *William Rufus*, on the Second of *August*, in the Year 1100, aged forty-four, after reigning thirteen Years: His Death being considered, with that of his Brother *Richard* who died in the same Manner, as a Judgment from Heaven; because, both *William* and his Father were so severe in the Forest-Laws, and so cruel to those Inhabitants whose Lands they inclosed for their Forest-Division: But this Reflection seems to give no more

more grounded upon Monkish Resentment, than historical Truth. A. D.
1100.

WILLIAM RUFUS had great Bravery, with little Learning; though his Father was used to say, "That an unlearned Prince, was but a crowned Ass." He had as much Avarice as his Father, but less Religion; he had most of his Vices, with few of his Virtues. He sold the spiritual Benefices, and heavily taxed the temporal Lands: He disregarded the Pope, and over-awed the Clergy; for he would not permit *Anselm* Archbishop of *Canterbury* to enjoy an Authority equal to that of Royalty itself; and he insisted upon as much Obedience paid to him as a King, as to the *Roman* Pontiff as a Priest: Therefore it may be reasonably supposed, that the Monks have not represented his Character with Justice and Impartiality.

THIS Prince was of a middle Stature, but very fat: His Hair inclining to red; and his Countenance ruddy.

HE built *London-Bridge* and *Westminster-Hall*; endowed some Hospitals, but plundered many Monasteries: Upon the whole; he lived *unbeloved*, and died unlamented.

Rufus succeeded to the English Throne;
Though *Robert* was the Conqueror's first-born Son.
To Birth, and Virtue, no Respect was paid,
When *Rufus* did the Norman Soil invade:
While *Scotland*'s Monarch, with his martial Train,
Invading *England*, is by *Mowbray* slain.
Then slighted *Mowbray* fills the North in Arms;
But this Rebellion *William* soon disarms:
Awes the revolting *Normans*: But, in vain,
Attempts o'er *Wales* to throw the Norman Chain:
The *Britons*, still, with Love of Freedom fir'd,
Repell'd their Foes, and made their Worth admir'd.
Rufus, who oft' had fac'd the bravest Death
That War could form, now tamely yields his Breath;
Amid the humble Slaughter of the Plain,
Himself, the royal Hart, untimely slain;

The

The stately Deer escap'd from *Tyrrel's* Dart,
Which, wing'd with Death, struck to the Monarch's
Heart.

Stretch'd on the Earth the royal Victim lies,
Without a Friend to close his dying Eyes :
Unmourn'd, unhonour'd, falls brave *Rufus* here,
Without a Brother's, or a Subject's Tear !

16 MA 64



The



The UNION of the NORMAN
and SAXON LINES.

III. HENRY I, surnamed Beauclerc, the twenty-third King of England, and the third from the Norman Conquest.

WILLIAM the Conqueror left only an Annuity of A.D.
5000 Marks to his youngest Son *Henry*; and when 1100
the young Prince murmured at this scanty Provision, the King, though far from being endowed with the Gift of Prophecy, comforted him, by saying, that he should one Day succeed to the whole of his Dominions, and excel both his Brothers in Power and Opulence. However, this accordingly came to pass, on the Death of *William Rufus*, and the Absence of *Robert*; for *Henry* was at that Time in *England*: He was born at *Selby* in *Yorkshire* in 1073, the *English* looked upon him as their natural Prince, and the *Normans* were backward in asserting any hereditary Right in Favour of *Robert*: So that *Henry* was approved by the common People, and put in Possession of the royal Treasury of *Winchester* by the Nobility, which was the most essential Step towards the Possession of the Crown, wherein he was principally assisted by *Henry de Beaumont*, Earl of *Warwick*.

HENRY was surnamed *Beauclerc* on Account of his great Learning; he was now 30 Years of Age; he had shewn Bravery enough to win a Crown, and Virtues enough to wear it: So that his Coronation was solemn-

A.D. nized at *Westminster*, on Sunday the fifth of *August*, within
 three Days after the Death of his Brother. He was
 crowned by *Maurice Bishop of London*, when he swore,
 at the high Altar, “ before God, and all the People,
 “ to abolish all unjust Measures which had prevailed in
 “ the Reign of his Brother; and to establish the very
 “ best Laws, which the People had enjoyed under any
 “ of their former Kings.”

If he obtained the Kingdom by Artifice, he maintained his Prerogative with Discretion. He abolished the *Curfew*; and confirmed his Coronation Oath by his royal Charter, on the Day of his Coronation; whereby he assured his Subjects that he would not dispose of the Revenues or Benefices of the Church: He confirmed the Inheritance of Land, the Safety of Wards, and the Right of Dower; prohibited the Use of bad Money, forgave the Debts of the Crown, granted his Subjects the Privilege of disposing of their Effects by Will, restored the Laws of *Edward the Confessor*, with such Amendments as had been made by *William the Conqueror*. To compleat the whole, Copies of this valuable Monument of *English Liberty*, were deposited in the most eminent Abbeys in every County throughout *England*; whose Inhabitants began to feel the mild Ray of Government, and to hail the Return of Freedom, from both of which they had been so long estranged: For this Charter confined the royal Authority within its ancient Bounds, and skreened the Subjects from arbitrary Power.

To render the King more popular, *Anselm Archbishop of Canterbury* was recalled from his Exile at *Lyons* in *France*; while *Ralph Bishop of Durham*, the mean Tool to *Rufus* in all his Oppressions, was sent Prisoner to the Tower, to answer to his Country the Baseness he had shewn to his Countrymen; though he evaded Justice by escaping into *France*.

ROBERT was now returned from *Jerusalem*; the Term for which he had mortgaged *Normandy* was expired; and he quietly repossessed himself of his ducal Dominions. But he now laid Claim to the regal Crown of *England*, both by Primogeniture of Birth, and by Compact

pact with *William Rufus*, who had mutually agreed with A. D. Robert that the Possessions of both should descend to the 1100. Survivor of either. Robert had a strong Party in *England*, headed by *Robert de Belleme* Earl of *Sbrewsbury*, a Nobleman of great Power and Abilities: *Henry* was not ignorant that Robert had Friends in *England*, but he knew that the *English* were averse to a *Norman Government*; therefore he not only made himself looked upon as an *Englishman*, but sought effectually to confirm that Title, and perpetuate his Right to the Throne, by uniting the *Norman* and *Saxon Lines*. The Princess *Matilda*, Daughter to *Malcolm* King of *Scotland*, by *Margaret* Sister of *Edgar Atheling*, was now in *England*: The King courted, and married her, in November 1100; whereby a stronger Affinity was cemented between his *English* and *Norman* Subjects; the former looking upon this Marriage as a Restoration of the *Cerdic Race*, and the latter esteeming it as the national Ratification of all their Possessions. Both People began to consider themselves as one, and from this Time to lose all national Distinction, except that of *Englishmen*, which the conquered Nation had happily preserved from the Violence of their Conquerors. Besides, this Marriage was attended with another happy Consequenee to *England*; because *Edgar*, Brother to *Henry's Queen*, was now upon the Throne of *Scotland*, and preserved that Peace to both Nations, which was necessary to preserve the Crown to *Henry*.

IN the mean Time Duke Robert declared his Pretensions to the Crown of *England*; he fitted out a Fleet, and landed at *Portsmouth* in *August*; a Part of the Fleet fitted out by *Henry* to oppose him, having joined him at Sea; and he was soon joined by a great Number of People when he came to land, who flattered him that his Brother would soon find himself deserted by most of their Countrymen. But the misguided Duke, who relied more upon the Assistance of the People of *England*, than on the Forces he brought with him from *Normandy*, was soon convinced of his Mistake: For the *English* persisted in their Allegiance to their Prince, and *Henry* assembled a numerous Army at *Hastings* for the Defence of his People. Propo-

A. D. 1100. *sals of Peace* were sent by the King, and accepted by the Duke ; who could not expect to obtain a Crown by Treaty, which he could not acquire by Arms : So that it was agreed, that *Henry* should retain his Kingdom, and relinquish to *Robert* the entire Possession of *Normandy*, with the Payment of an Annuity of 3000 Marks : Besides, it was stipulated, that if one of the Brothers died without Children, the other should succeed him in his Dominions. This Agreement was ratified by twelve Lords of each Side, who were sworn to the Observance of it ; both Armies were disbanded ; and *Robert* went to the Court of his Brother, with whom he lived two Months in perfect Union.

A. D. 1102. *HENRY* found he had much to dread from some of his Nobles, if their Power was not diminished. Opportunities of Revenge are seldom wanting to those who have Inclination to act, and the Power to execute. The Earl of *Sbrewsbury* was the first Object of his Resentment, whom he expelled the Kingdom, as also his two Brothers, and confiscated their great Possessions. *William* Earl of *Mortagne* and *Cornwall*, Son of Duke *Robert*, the eldest of *William* the Conqueror's half Brothers, was also deprived of his Earldom of *Cornwall*, and banished to *Normandy*, where, in Conjunction with the Earl of *Sbrewsbury*, he created so formidable an Insurrection that Duke *Robert* was unable to suppress it ; which occasioned the *Normans* to apply to the King of *England* for Assistance.

A. D. 1105. *HENRY* was desirous of depriving his Brother of *Normandy* ; who, indeed, had already deprived himself of all that Duchy, except the City of *Roan*, by mortgaging his Demesnes to pay his Debts, and supply his Extravagancies. Accordingly, *Henry* imposed a heavy Tax upon *England*, levied an Army, and passed into *Normandy*, seized *Caen*, and some other Cities ; after which he returned to *England* ; where he was followed by his Brother, as a Suppliant to a Conqueror for Mercy and Protection, not as a Prince and a Brother for Welcome and Civility.

But *Robert*, who was of a generous Disposition, found *Henry* deaf to all his Intreaties ; whose Ambition broke the

the Ties of Nature, spurning from his Throne a Prince A. D. and a Brother, for the Sake of accumulative Power. 1105. Robert returned to *Normandy*, where he entered into an Alliance with the Earls of *Shrewsbury* and *Mortagne*: While *Henry* severely taxed the *English*, particularly the Clergy, and then with the chief Nobility passed over into *Normandy*, where he was at the Head of a numerous Army, composed of Mercenaries and Auxiliaries, as well as *English*.

ROBERT was assisted by the King of *France*, and A. D. some of the neighbouring Princes; so that he was also at 1107. the Head of a powerful Army. The King besieged *Tinchebray*; which the Duke attempted to relieve; and this brought on a general Battle before the Town; wherein the Duke and his Allies were totally defeated, the Duke himself taken Prisoner, with the Earl of *Mortagne*, three *Norman* Barons, four Hundred Knights, and ten Thousand common Men: Besides, *Edgar Atheling*, who had very imprudently sided with *Robert*, was also taken Prisoner; but *Henry* generously set him at Liberty; after which, *Edgar* ended his Days in Retirement, without Marriage, or Issue. It was more owing to a Strain of Policy in *Henry* to release the *Saxon* Prince, than to his Affection for him, though he was Uncle to his Queen: For, at the same Time, he carried his own Brother Prisoner to *England*, confined him in *Cardiff Castle* in *Wales*, and seized upon all his *Norman* Dominions: Though he restored the Earl of *Shrewsbury* to all his *English* Possessions.

HENRY acted with becoming Resolution against the papal Supremacy, and made several Laws for the Security of his Subjects; but he also revived the heavy Tax of *Dane-Gelt*. *Robert* was still a Prisoner; but he had a Son, named *William*, who was educated in *Normandy*; and, being suspicious that his Uncle wanted to seize his Person, he took Refuge in the Court of *Lewis* the Sixth, King of *France*, who was jealous of the growing Power of *Henry*, and was ready to invade *Normandy*. The *English* A. D. Monarch found a Confederacy was forming against him 1110. on the Continent, and he strengthened his Interest there

A. D. by entering into an Alliance with *Henry the Fourth, Emperor of Germany*, to whom he gave his Daughter *Maud* in Marriage.

HENRY endeavoured to form a Barrier against the *Welch*, by introducing a Colony of *Flemings*, who settled **A. D.** themselves in *Pembrokeſhire*. But in 1111, he was obliged to go to *Normandy*, which was invaded by *Fulk Earl of Anjou*, and his Confederates. After taking some Towns, and burning others, a Peace was concluded; whereby *Henry* was restored to the quiet Possession of *Normandy*, and returned into *England*, in 1113. He also made a Treaty with the King of *France*, which for some Time deprived the young *Norman* Prince of all Hopes of being restored to his Father's Dominions; though his Interest was rather depressed, than extinguished.

A. D. THE *Flemish* Colony being disturbed by the *Welch*, 1114. *Henry* invaded their Country with a numerous Army; being assisted by *Alexander King of Scotland*. The *Welch* were headed by *Griffith Prince of North Wales*, who so gallantly defended his Country, that *Henry* was compelled to end this Expedition with great Loss to himself, and no Disadvantage to the *Welch*. But the same Year, he went into *Normandy*, and obliged the States to swear Fealty to his Son *William*, who was then about twelve Years of Age; he also got the young Prince declared Heir to his Crown, in a great Assembly at *Salisbury*.

A. D. *REES Prince of South Wales* gave much Trouble to 1116. the *English*; while *Henry* was threatened with another Storm in *Normandy*, where the War was renewed between him and the King of *France*, who was also assisted by the Earl of *Flanders*, the Duke of *Burgundy*, the Earl of *Blois*, and the Earl of *Nevers*: Besides, the confederate Princes were joined by the disaffected *Norman* Noblemen. The *English* Monarch was assisted by the Earl of *Bretagne*; but he was obliged to act on the Defensive. Both Armies were drawn up on each Side of the River *Epte*; when the *French* King challenged *Henry* to single Combat; which the latter refused, sending his Antagonist Word, "That true Valour was best seen by their Conduct in the Field,

" Field, at the Head of their Armies; in which Cha- A. D.
" rafter he never would decline to meet him, when 1116.
" Time, proper Place, and Opportunity permitted."

THE declining of this Combat was not for want of A. D.
Courage in *Henry*, who wanted only to distress his Ene- 1119.
my: He acted like *Fabius*, in the Preservation of his
Army; his Officers urged him to a Battle; but he defer-
red coming to a general Engagement throughout two
whole Campaigns, when he advanced against the King
of *France*; and shewed that he had as much Pru-
dence to command the whole Body of an Army, as he
had Courage to encounter a single Foe. The *French*
Monarch gave the Command of his Army, under himself,
to the young Prince of *Normandy*: *Henry* met them in the
Plain of *Brenville*, where a desperate Battle began, and
continued for a considerable Time; in the Heat of which
Henry was attacked by *William de Crispin*, a brave *Norman*
Knight in the Interest of *Robert*; but the King first de-
feated his Antagonist, then obtained a complete Victory,
and returned to *Roan* in Triumph; carrying with him the
royal Standard of *France*.

THE *French* Monarch levied another Army: But, A. D.
being unable to effect any Thing in the Field, he had 1120.
Recourse to the Cabinet. The Pope was called in for
his Mediation; through whose Means the two Kings had
an Interview at *Gisors*; and as they were both weary of
a burthensome War, they soon adjusted all their Differen-
ces by an equitable Peace.

AFTER this Peace, *Henry* set sail from *Barfleur*, at-
tended with a large Navy, and returned to *England* in a
Kind of naval Triumph. But this Tide of Joy was
quickly suppressed, and the *English* Monarch was struck
with the deepest Misery. His Son *William*, and the
Countess of *Percbe* natural Daughter to the King, stayed
behind their Father, and embarked on board a new Ves-
sel, which struck on a Rock; when the Prince and his
Attendants took the Boat, and were all drowned; among
them being *Richard* his natural Brother, and *Richard*
Earl of *Chester*, with above one hundred and fifty Per-
sons of Distinction. Though *Henry* considered this Loss

A. D. as the greatest Affliction that could happen to him, his
1120. Subjects imagined that it was directed all for their Happiness; because the young Prince was of a vicious Disposition, and so full of Contempt towards the *English*, that he threatened to rule them with a Rod of Iron, and to make them labour in their Ploughs like Oxen.

A. D. 1121. *HENRY* was not only deprived of Male Issue; but he had also lost his Queen, the excellent *Matilda*, who died two Years before, and was buried at *Westminster-Abbey*. He foresaw what Disputes might arise about the Succession, if he died without a Son; and therefore he married *Adeliza*, Daughter to the Duke of *Louvain*, who was crowned Queen, at *Windsor*, by *Ralph* Archbishop of *Canterbury*.

A. D. 1122. THE *Welch* had renewed their Incursions, and plundered *Chestire*. This occasioned *Henry* to re-enter *Wales*, who penetrated as far as *Snowdon-Hills*; but was obliged to return as unsuccessful as formerly.

A. D. 1124. THE Troubles in *Normandy* were also revived in favour of his Nephew, who had married the eldest Daughter of the Earl of *Anjou*: But *Henry* left his Palace of *Woodstock*, set sail from *Portsmouth*, and arrived at *Roan*, where he put himself at the Head of his *Norman* Troops, ravaged the Country of such Noblemen as had revolted, declared War against the King of *France*, and defeated the Enemy near *Bellmont*. After which, *Normandy* remained in Tranquility, and *Henry* returned to *England*, accompanied with his Daughter the Empress *Maud*; the Death of whose Husband had left her a beautiful Widow, and the Mistress of an immense Fortune.

A. D. 1127. *HENRY* assembled his States at *Windsor*, when they took an Oath to pay their Allegiance to the Empress *Maud*, as Queen of *England*, if the King died without Issue Male. After which, he married her to *Geoffry Plantagenet*, Earl of *Anjou*, the Son of his old Enemy, to preserve his Power on the Continent, where it was now more endangered than ever, as his Nephew was invested with the Earldom of *Flanders*.

A. D. 1129. THE *French* Monarch had again espoused the Cause of the Prince of *Normandy*, and *Henry* invaded *France*: But

But the *French* acted on the defensive, and the *English* A. D. could obtain no Advantage. However, *Henry* was soon ^{1129.} in the quiet Possession of *Normandy*, by the Death of his Nephew, who was wounded in the Thum^b, by a Lance, at the Siege of *Alost* in *Flanders*, which mortified, and occasioned his Death.

HENRY returned to *England*, where he found him- A. D. self entirely at Peace, and levied a large Sum by taking ^{1130.} Fines from Priests for the Use of Women. His Daughter was brought to-bed of a Prince, and the *English* not only renewed their Fealty to the Mother, but extended it to the Son, who was christened *Henry*; and who, after being for a Time supplanted in the Throne of his Grand-father, ascended it with all the Virtues of a Prince that could render a People glorious and happy. But, to form the Circle of his Felicity, *Henry* was now free from every Competitor in Power, by the Death of his Brother *Robert*, who died in Prison after a Confinement of twenty-seven Years, and the severest Treatment shewn him by an only Brother that could have been expected from a cruel Conqueror; being buried at *Gloucester*.

THE *Welch* disdained the *Flemings*, and plundered the A. D. *Normans*, under the Command of *Cadwallader* and *Owen* ^{1135.} *Guineth*, Sons to *Griffith ap Conan* the Prince of North *Wales*, who had Courage enough, and wanted only the Fortune, to restore the *British* Name to its former Glory. They defeated the united Army of *English*, *Normans*, and *Flemings* at *Abertivy*; while *Henry* was obliged to continue in *Normandy* to check the Ambition of his Son-in-law the Earl of *Anjou*, who wanted to be put in Possession of that Duchy. But the Prince of South *Wales* withdrew his Forces from the Prince of North *Wales*, and civil Dissentions put an End to their Conquests, which threatened the Expulsion of the *Norman* Race.

THE Death of Duke *Robert* was soon followed by that of his Brother King *Henry*, who fell ill by eating to Excess of some Lampreys, at his favourite Castle of *Lyon*, near *Roan*, in *Normandy*, which carried him off in seven Days. During his Illness, he nominated his Daughter to succeed him both in his regal and ducal Dominions.

A. D. He died on the first of *December*, having lived sixty-eight Years, and reigned thirty-six. His Body was dissected, or rather butchered, according to the unskillful Manner of embalming in those Days; and being wrapped up in Ox-hides, was sent over to *England*, and interred at *Reading* in a Monastery of his own founding: But, on the Suppression of Abbies, his Bones were thrown out, to make Room for a common Stable for Horses.

THE Empress *Maud*, was the only legitimate Child that *Henry* left at his Death; but he had twelve natural Children, who survived him; among whom *Robert Earl of Gloucester* made the greatest Figure, who was Patron to *William of Malmesbury*, and encouraged him to write his excellent History. *Elizabeth* married *Alexander King of Scotland*, and *Maud* married *Conan Earl of Bretagne*.

THERE was a strong Mixture of good and bad Qualities in *Henry*; who had great Bravery in the Field, and great Wisdom in the Cabinet. His Learning was also great; and he retained so great a Regard for the Sciences, as to build a Palace at *Oxford*, where he often retired to amuse himself with the Conversation of the Learned. He was of a middling Stature, and his Hair black: His Person was so handsome, and his Deportment so engaging, that these Qualities would have rendered him an accomplished Prince, if they had not been fullied with many Faults, among which Cruelty, Avarice, and an inordinate Love of Women, were the most predominant: The first appeared in the barbarous Confinement of his elder Brother; the second in his exorbitant Taxes on the People; and the third in his great Number of illegitimate Children by several Mistresses.

BEFORE this Time, the *Saxon Wittenagemot* was turned into the *Norman Parliament*; and though this Prince might not have first instituted a Parliament in the Form it now stands, it is certain he raised Money in a Parliamentary Way. But the Charter, which he granted at the Beginning of his Reign, endeared the Memory of this Monarch, and formed the Happiness of his People; as arbitrary Power was now bounded by legal Right; and as the Arm of Tyranny was not too strong to be checked by the Voice of Freedom.

IN the Year 1132 London was destroyed by Fire; and
in 1134 a great Earthquake happened in *England*.

When *Rufus* dy'd, brave *Henry* seiz'd the Crown;
Whose Reign was long, and spent with great Renown:
The *Saxon Laws*, and *Saxon Line* restor'd,
Made him acknowledg'd *England's* happy Lord:
The *Cerdic Heiress* grac'd his nuptial Bed;
And *Norman Terrors* from the *Englifb* fled.

Robert attempts his Brother to dethrone;
But, envying *Henry's* Greatness, lost his own:
Born to a Crown, he claim'd his Title well;
Yet dy'd a Captive in a dismal Cell.
His Son expir'd amid the martial Strife:
While *Henry's* Heir by Shipwreck lost his Life.
In vain the States his Daughter's Title own:
Death seiz'd the Monarch; *Stephen* seiz'd the Throne;



The House of BLOIS.

*IV. STEPHEN, the twenty-fourth King
of England, and the fourth from the Norman
Conquest.*

A. D. 1135. **T**HE Norman Government had existed sixty-nine Years in *England*, and *Henry* had taken the wisest Precautions for its Continuance; but in vain: Oaths being seldom regarded by the whole Body of a People, if they consider them as Rivets against their Principle and Interest.

THE Empress *Maud*, or *Matilda*, succeeded her Father in his Dutchy of *Normandy*; but the Kingdom of *England* was seized upon by a bold Adventurer. This was *Stephen* Earl of *Bulloign*, third Son of the Earl of *Blois*, by *Adela* Daughter to *William the Conqueror*. He had been bred in *England*; he was highly respected by his Uncle *Henry*; and he had Royalty in View before his Death. He had a strong Party in his Interest, headed by his younger Brother *Henry* Bishop of *Winchester*; and, on the Death of the King, he privately hastened to *England*, where he declared his Pretensions to the Crown.

MAUD had been bred up in the arbitrary Maxims of her Family: Her Husband, the Earl of *Anjou*, was a Prince of little Power, and much Ambition: The *English* dreaded that he should have any Command over them, and *Stephen* found little Difficulty in obtaining the Crown, before *Maud* could arrive in the Kingdom. *William* and *Henry*

Henry had both disregarded the Right of Primogeniture: A. D. Therefore, the English Nobles thought they had an equal 1135. Right to elect Stephen their King, as they found him most proper for governing the Kingdom; especially as he promised to restore England to her Liberties.

NOTWITHSTANDING Maud had a strong Party in England, Stephen was crowned on the twenty-second of December; being twenty-two Days after the Death of Henry. The new Monarch was in the thirty-first Year of his Age, and one of the best Soldiers in Europe; but, as he knew the Interest of Maud, he took Care to strengthen his Right to the Crown by taking a mercenary Army into his Pay, consisting of Bretons, Picards, and Flemings. He also endeavoured to please the English by convening a general Assembly at Oxford, where he signed a Charter, "acknowledging his being elected King, by the Assent of the Clergy and People; confirming the Rights of the Church; abolishing the Forest Laws; and reviving the favourite Laws of Edward the Confessor."

THIS Charter was very advantageous to the People, A. D. had it been punctually observed by the King: But as the 1136. English elected Stephen purely for their own Interest; so Stephen granted all they required, rather to be an Amusement for them, than an Obligation upon himself. The Charter was considered as a public Right due to the People; but there were private Persons to be rewarded; and all the Favours that Stephen could confer were looked upon as insufficient. The Nobles took this Advantage of the King, who suffered them to fortify their Castles, and build new ones; so that there were above a thousand Places of Defence in several Parts of the Kingdom; which were so many Bridles upon the royal Prerogative.

STEPHEN was soon made sensible of this Error, by the Revolt of the Earl of Devonshire: But the King besieged him in Exeter, which he reduced, and banished the Earl. This was the Beginning of those intestine Commotions which made England a Prey to contending Armies, and its Crown the Sport of Fortune: But before the Thunder burst at Home, the Lightening was seen at a Distance. The Welch made an Irruption into the Frontiers,

A. D. tiers, and carried away a great Booty: While *David*
1136. King of *Scotland* ravaged the Northern Counties, under
 Pretence of revenging the Injustice shewn to the Empress
 his Niece. The *Welch* obtained a Battle near *Cardigan* ;
 and the *Scotch* advanced to *Durham*: But a Peace was
 concluded between *Stephen* and *David*; whereby the lat-
 ter was to have *Carlisle*, and Prince *Henry* his Son the
 Earldom of *Huntingdon*.

A. D. *STEPHEN*, on his Return to *London*, fell ill of a Le-
1137. thargy. The *Normans* imagined he was dead, and in-
 vited *Theobald* his elder Brother to seize their Duchy, for
 fear of falling under the Government of the Earl of *An-*
jou. But *Stephen* recovered, went over to *Normandy*, and
 expelled his Brother.

A. D. THE *English* Monarch concluded an offensive Treaty
1138. with the *French* King, and resigned *Normandy* to *Eustace*
 Earl of *Bulbign*, his eldest Son: After which, he returned
 to *England*, where he was threatened with the most im-
 minent Danger. The Friends of *Maud* were now ready
 to declare in her Favour; and the King of *Scotland* was to
 give them Assistance. The disaffected Barons were head-
 ed by *Robert* Earl of *Gloucester*; and, while *Stephen* was
 opposing the *Scotch* in *Northumberland*, the Revolters took
 Possession of several fortified Places in the Southern Coun-
 ties; which were built for the Security of the Crown,
 but served now to put it in Danger. The Defection be-
 came general: The *English* Barons invited the Empress
Maud to come and take Possession of the Crown; and the
Scotch Monarch ravaged *Northumberland*, which *Stephen*
 was obliged to quit, to appease the Commotions in the
 Heart of the Kingdom. However, he shewed himself
 worthy of the Crown: For, when he was informed of
 this Revolt, among the Barons, he said, “ Since they
 “ have chosen me their King, why do they now forsake
 “ me ?” swearing, “ by the Birth of God,” his usual
 Oath, “ he would never be called an abdicated King.”

SOME of the Malecontents were Friends to *Maud*, on
 Account of her Right to the Throne: But more were Ene-
 mies to *Stephen* because he had not made them Provisions
 according to their Expectations. The King confided in
 his

his mercenary Army of *Flemings*, commanded by *William A. D. d'Ipres*: The Barons trusted to their strong Fortresses, and 1138. the Conduct of the Earl of *Gloucester*. But the Barons were unable to take the Field, which gave the King an Opportunity of reducing them one after another: While his Troops in *Northumberland*, commanded by *Walter de Espec*, and *William Earl of Albemarle*, defeated the *Scotch* Monarch at *Northallerton* in *Yorkshire*, who attacked the *English* in their Intrenchments, but was repulsed with the Loss of twelve Thousand Men. After this *Stephen* invaded *Scotland*, and compelled *David* to enter into a Treaty of Peace at *Durham*; whereby Prince *Henry of Scotland* was put in Possession of the County of *Northumberland*, and the Earldom of *Huntingdon*; in Return for which, King *David* swore never more to intermeddle in the Quarrel between *Stephen* and the Empress *Maud*.

As *Stephen* had defended his Crown with great Bra- A. D. very, he wore it for some Time in great Tranquility: 1139. But the Bishops, who had been so instrumental in his Election to the Throne, were now as instrumental in stripping him of every Mark of Royalty, and throwing him into a Prison. The Power of the Clergy was equal to their Pride, and the King suspected he could not be safe while the Bishops were so formidable. He therefore seized the Castles belonging to the Bishops of *Salisbury*, *Lincoln*, and *Ely*: But the spiritual Power could not bear this Deprivation of its Temporalities: The Prelates not only wanted Palaces, but Garrisons; and the Bishop of *Winchester*, lately made Legate of *England*, under Pretence of maintaining the Rights of the Church, took this Opportunity of troubling the State.

THOUGH the Legate was Brother to the King, he concerted his Ruin: For mortified Ambition was more prevalent than fraternal Affection; and as the Monarch had refused him a Share in his Councils, the Bishops even summoned him to appear before a Synod, to give an Account of his Actions. The Legate proposed to excommunicate the King, who sent some of his Nobles to appear for him; but the other Bishops were afraid to act with so much Rigour, and sent a Deputation to *Stephen*, desiring he would prevent

A. D. prevent a Rupture between the ecclesiastical and secular
1139. Power: Or, in other Words, that he would render the Church independent of the Crown.

THE King was willing to retain his Prerogative; and the Clergy made their Ambition the Cause of the People. While the Church was divested of an unnecessary Part of its Power, the People were taught to believe that they would be deprived of their Liberties. The Spirit of Rebellion prevailed, and the Empress *Maud* took this Opportunity of personally asserting her Right to the Throne.

A. D. THE Empress *Maud* soon gained the discontented Clergy
1140. and Nobility to her Interest. These were followed by the Generality of the People: So that the King found himself without Subjects: However, a few Barons adhered to their Sovereign; and his foreign Army, though ill paid, served him with Fidelity. The Bowels of *England* were now torn by all the Rage of civil Fury: The whole Kingdom was divided; every County, City, and Person, declaring in Favour of the King, or the Empress, according as they were swayed by Passion, or directed by Interest. The Barons acted in a very arbitrary Manner, and all the Calamities of War fell upon the poor People; who were plundered by both Parties: For Treachery and Cruelty took Place of Honour and Bravery.

BUT the King faced the Storm with a noble Fortitude: He besieged the Empress in *Wallingford*, pursued her to *Lincoln*, and gave Battle to the Earl of *Gloucester* before that City. The Engagement was fought with great Courage, and much Effusion of Blood; but the Earl was victorious, and the King was taken Prisoner, after defending himself with an astonishing Valour: For he had broke his Battle Ax and his Sword all in Pieces by the Force of his Blows, and was knocked down on his Knees with a Stone before he could be taken: After which, he was confined in the Castle of *Bristol*, and ignominiously laid in Irons.

A. D. THE Victory of *Lincoln* seemed at once to place *Maud*
1141. on the Throne of *England*. While *Stephen* was in Prison, the Legate excommunicated his Adherents; the Duke of *Anjou* seized upon *Normandy*; and *Maud* was every where acknowledg-

acknowledged Sovereign. The Queen of the captive A. D. Monarch petitioned only for his Liberty: But this was 1141. cruelly and impolitickly denied; because that unhappy Prince promised to renounce the Crown, and pass the Remainder of his Life in a Monastery. Thus low in Affliction, he bore the Insolence of *Maud* with Patience; till the Gloom dispersed, and the Clouds began to brighten over his Head.

THE Empress retained that *Norman* Pride, which made her Father, Uncle, and Grandfather, consider their *Englifh* Subjects as so many Slaves. She refused to mitigate the Severity of the *Norman* Laws, which was the only Thing requested of her by the Citizens of *London*. Her Haughtiness lost her all Respect; and the *Englifh* began to think that *Stephen* was only fit to be their Sovereign. A Revolt ensued: The Empress was obliged to quit *London*, fly to *Oxford*, and seek Security at *Winchester*.

THE Bishop of *Winchester* had been offended by the Empress, and he was now intent upon restoring his Brother to the Crown: For which Purpose he assembled an Army in *Kent*, and besieged the Empress in *Winchester* Castle. The King of *Scotland*, and the Earl of *Gloucester*, were with the Empress; and *Stephen's* Queen, *Eustace*, his Son, and *William d'Ipres*, conducted the Siege; which continued two Months; when the Besieged attempted to hew themselves a Passage with their Swords, for the Security of the Empress. The Success was equal to the Spirit of the Enterprize: The Empress escaped; but the Earl of *Gloucester*, in bravely providing for her Safety, was himself taken Prisoner, and sent to *Rochester*, where he continued six Months in Confinement, and was then exchanged for the King, who being now released, both Parties were at Liberty to pursue the War.

THE Legate now excommunicated all the Adherents of A. D. *Maud*, whose Party declined immediately upon *Stephen's* 1142. recovering his Liberty: So that the Earl of *Gloucester* was obliged to seek Assistance from the Earl of *Anjou*, who sent over a small Force, with *Henry* his Son, to try if his Presence would have any Influence on the *Englifh*.

A. D. IN the mean Time, the King besieged the Empress in
1144. *Oxford*; from whence she escaped to *Wallingford*, where
she was met by her Son Prince *Henry*, and the Earl of
Gloucester. Many Conflicts ensued in different Parts of
the Country: But the King was every where attended
with Success: The Earl of *Gloucester* died, and with him
all the Hopes of *Maud* were extinguished.

A. D. THE Empress and her Son retired to *Normandy*: But
1149. the young Prince had Ambition enough to gain the Crown
which he had lost by the Haughtiness of his Mother.

A. D. *Lewis King of France* had been divorced from his Wife;
1151. and she soon after married the young Prince; with whom
he had *Guienne*, *Poitou*, and *Saintoinge*. This gave Um-
brage to the King of *France*: However, *Henry* conciliated
his Affairs on the Continent, came over to *England* with
three thousand Men, was joined by several of the Nobi-
lity, and took Possession of thirty fortified Castles.

A. D. THE royal Forces were besieging *Wallingford*; *Henry*
1152. came to its Relief, and *Stephen* came up to assist the Be-
siegers. Both Princes were preparing for Battle: But,
by the prudent Advice of the Earl of *Arundel*, a Confe-
rence was held between them; when they agreed upon a
Truce, in order to have Time to negotiate a Peace.

A. D. THIS Truce was fatal to *Eustace the Son of Stephen*,
1153 who found that *Henry* would have Power enough to sup-
plant him in his Succession to the Crown, and fell into a
Frenzy, which occasioned his Death, in the eighteenth
Year of his Age. He was buried in the Abbey of *Fever-
sham*, with the Queen his Mother, who died a few Months
before. This double Loss gave the King inexpressible
Concern; which was increased by most of the Barons
abandoning his Cause: So that he found himself under a
Necessity of making a Peace with *Henry* upon his own
Terms; which were, that the King should enjoy the Crown
during Life; and that after his Decease Duke *Henry*
should succeed him as his lawful Heir.

THIS Treaty was executed at *Winchester*, about *Chris-
mas*, in an Assembly of all the Lords spiritual and tem-
poral. As soon as it was signed, the King adopted the
young Duke, who paid him the Respect due to a Fa-
ther:

ther: While *William*, the King's Son, did Homage to A.D. the Duke. After this, the two Princes visited most of ^{1153:} the principal Cities together, where they were received with great Demonstrations of Joy. And thus Peace and Tranquility were restored to *England*, after it had been torn to Pieces so many Years by intestine Troubles and Confusion.

HENRY returned to *Normandy*; and *Stephen* was now A.D. desirous of healing the Miseries which his Kingdom had ^{1154:} endured. But Death prevented him from executing so generous a Design. He died on the twenty-fifth of *October*, of the Cholic and Piles, at *Canterbury*, eleven Months after the Treaty with *Henry*, in the fiftieth Year of his Age, and the nineteenth of his Reign: Being buried in the Abbey of *Feverham*; where he lay till the Suppression of the Abbeys, when his Ashes shared the same Fate with those of his Predecessor; for they were taken up, and thrown into the next Water, only for so small a Gain as the Leaden Coffin in which his Body was inclosed.

STEPHEN was remarkable for Valour, Clemency, and Generosity; but some Historians have deemed him an Usurper; while others ground his Right to the Crown upon his Election by the People. He had many amiable Qualities as a Man; and many Virtues as a King. Under his Reign *England* had been happy, if she had not contributed to her own Misery: For, if he gained the Crown by Violence, he only followed the Example of all the *Norman* Princes, and should be considered no more as an Usurper than his Predecessors since the Conquest.

STEPHEN left Issue *William* his Son, by *Maud* the Daughter of *Eustace* Earl of *Bulloign*, the Brother of *Godfrey* and *Baldwin* Kings of *Jerusalem*. Her Mother was *Mary*, Sister to *Maud*, the Queen of *Henry the First*, and Mother of the Empress *Maud*. *William* married the Daughter of *William Warren* Earl of *Surry*; so that he became Earl of *Bulloign*, *Surry*, and *Mortagne*: He was highly regarded by *Henry the Second*, and died without Issue in 1160. *Stephen* left also a Daughter named *Mary*, who was Abbess of the Nunnery at *Rumsey* in *Hampshire*. Besides he had two illegitimate Children, named

A. D. named *William* and *Gervase*; the latter of whom was
1154. Abbot of *Westminster*.

IN 1136, there was a great Fire in *London*; and the next Year the City of *York* was burnt to the Ground: But this Reign is more remarkable for the Introduction of the Canon-Law into *England*, on Account of the Contests, about the Legateships, between the Bishop of *Wim-*
chester and the Archbishop of *Canterbury*.

In *Maud*, the *Norman* and the *Saxon* Blood
 United ran, and made her Title good:
 But *Stephen* gain'd the Sceptre in his Hand,
 And civil Rage polluted all the Land.
 The gallant Monarch fell a noble Prey,
 And like a Slave in long Confinement lay;
 Till valiant *Gloucester* shar'd an equal Fate,
 For whose Exchange the King regain'd his State.
 Then civil Discord all her Flames renew'd;
 But Peace the rival Princes soon conclude:
 The Monarch, during Life, the Crown retains;
 And, at his Death, to *Henry* it remains.

Brave *Stephen*! had the Olive grac'd thy Throne,
 The Arts had flourish'd, and the Muses shone:
 But, though the Land was curst with Civil Rage,
 One glorious *Writer* * dignify'd the Age:
 His *Patron* † too, of Arts and Arms the Pride,
 Liv'd in great Glory, with great Honour dy'd:
 And future Times his bright Resemblance ‡ saw,
 When great *Eliza* gave the Nations Law.

* *William of Malmesbury.*

† *Robert Earl of Gloucester.*

‡ *Sir Philip Sydney.*

The RESTORATION of the SAXON
and NORMAN LINES.

The HOUSE of ANJOU, or
PLANTAGENET.

V. HENRY II. the twenty-fifth King of England, and the fifth from the Norman Conquest.

THIS Prince came to the Throne with an indisputed A. D. Title of Blood ; and high in Reputation for his personal Merit. He came over from Normandy on the seventh of December, and was crowned at Westminster, on the nineteenth, together with Eleanor his Queen, by Theobald Archbishop of Canterbury. He was also in Possession of Normandy, Poitou, Guienne, Saintoinge, Maine, Anjou, and Touraine : So that he was more powerful than any of his Ancestors, and more respected by his own Subjects at Home, as well as by the neighbouring Princes Abroad.

HENRY was now in the twenty-third Year of his Age : The English chearfully submitted to his Government, and beheld with extreme Satisfaction a Prince descended by his Mother from their ancient Saxon Monarchs :

A. D. *narchs*: While the *Normans* were equally pleased to find
1154. the Descendant of *Rollo* invested with such additional
 Power. The *English* and *Norman Stocks* were now en-
 tirely engrafted; forming one fair, strong, and flourish-
 ing Body: But the Root still coveted the Soil of *England*;
 and the foreign Branches may be considered as no more
 than the Luxuriancy of Nature, which in Time required
 pruning, and at last to be quite lopp'd off, for the Preser-
 vation of the ancient Stem.

WHAT *Stephen* intended, *Henry* executed. *England* required Repose, and the King applied himself solely to the Interest of his new Subjects. He first demolished the Castles erected in the former Reign; then disbanded the foreign Troops employed by *Stephen*, who were obliged to quit the Kingdom; and next he revoked all the Grants made by his Predecessor for alienating the Demesnes of the Crown. But in resuming these Lands, he made no Distinction between the former Friends of *Stephen*, and the Adherents of *Maud*; which gave great Discontent to *Hugh Mortimer*, and some other Noblemen; though the Vigilance of *Henry* deterred them from raising an Insurrection.

A. D. IF the King displeased the Nobility, he rendered him-
1155. self very popular among the People: For, in a Parlia-
 ment held at *Wallingford*, he revived the Laws of *Edward
the Confessor*, and confirmed the Charter of *Henry* the First his Grandfather. The Empress *Maud* was at the Head of his Council, who had gained Wisdom by Experience and Misfortunes: *Robert Earl of Leicester* was chief Justiciary of the Realm; and the Administration was so well conducted, that the Licentiousness introduced in the Times of civil Commotion, was now daily plucking up by the Roots.

AFTER settling the Peace of *England*, the King returned to *Normandy*, and paid Homage to the King of *France* for the Provinces he possessed in that Kingdom; which made him the most powerful Vassal of that Crown, and almost equal to the Sovereign. But these Domi-
 nions occasioned many Wars between the *English* and *French*;

French; till the latter dispossessed the former of all their A. D. Acquisitions on the Continent.

GEOFFRY Earl of Anjou, the Father of King Henry, A. D. left Anjou, Touraine, and Maine, to Geoffry his second Son, 1156. when Henry should have the Possession of Normandy; and the Earldom of Mortagne to his third Son, named William. Henry had sworn to the Observance of this Will: But Power soon made him disregard his Oath: For he now affirmed the Will was void, and that his Father could not deprive the First-born of his Patrimony received from his Ancestors. He obtained a Dispensation from Pope Adrian the Fourth, who was an Englishman; which released him from his Oath: He then invaded Anjou, and drove his Brother out of the Country: But Geoffry obtained the Earldom of Nantz, whose Inhabitants offered him their Government.

AFTER reducing *Anjou*, *Henry* returned to *England*; when *Malcolm* King of *Scotland* resigned to him *Carlise*, *Newcastle*, and *Bamborough-Castle*; which had been yielded to *Scotland* when *Stephen* regarded his private Interest more than the public Good.

THE next Year, the *Scotch* Monarch paid Homage to A. D. *Henry* at *Chester*; who was then upon an Expedition 1157. against the *Welch*; but returned with as little Success as his Grandfather met with before.

HENRY was afterwards employed in the Acts of A. D. Peace; though he was more inclined to the Toils of War. 1158. However, the Death of his Brother *Geoffry* gave him an Opportunity of entering upon Action.

THE Duke of *Bretagne* seized upon *Nantz*; and *Henry* A. D. claimed it as Heir to his Brother. The latter passed into 1159. *Normandy*; visited *Lewis the young King of France*, and concluded a Marriage between his eldest Son, and *Margaret* the Daughter of the *French* Monarch; though the young Prince was only five Years of Age, and the Princess but six Months old. This Alliance intimidated the Duke of *Bretagne*; who not only surrendered *Nantz*, but also gave his Daughter *Constance* in Marriage to *Geoffry*, another Son of *Henry*, who was then in his Cradle; but, in Virtue of this Marriage, which was celebrated five Years after

216 A NEW HISTOR Y

A. D. after, became Duke of *Bretagne*, upon the Death of *Conan*
1159. his Father-in-law.

THE Ambition of *Henry* increased with his Power, and he now thought of adding the Earldom of *Tholouse* to his Dominions; which he claimed in Right of his Queen. *Raymond* the Vth was then in Possession of that Earldom, which he claimed by Purchase, and was determined to defend by Arms; especially as he was assisted by the French Monarch, who grew jealous of *Henry*, and was alarmed at his extensive Power.

A. D. THE English Monarch imposed a heavy Tax upon his Subjects, levied a great Army, and besieged the City of *Tholouse*: But the French King had thrown such a powerful Succour into the Place, that *Henry* was obliged to raise the Siege, and return into *Normandy*. *Henry*, in Revenge, seized some Castles belonging to the King of France; which obliged him to renew the Peace, without mention of *Tholouse*: So that *Henry* preserved his Pretensions to that Earldom during his Life; and by his Death left them to his Successor, who thought fit to relinquish his Claim.

LEWIS took an Opportunity of renewing the War; which was soon ended by the Mediation of Pope *Alexander* the Third; but *Henry* was detained four Years Abroad, before he could settle his Affairs, and return to England.

A. D. ENGLAND was now in a profound Tranquility:
1163. The People satisfied with their Sovereign, and the Sovereign happy in his People: But both were disturbed by a Storm blown up by spiritual Pride and Obstinacy. The King, from a mean Degree, had conferred on *Thomas Becket* the Dignity of High Chancellor, and also promoted him to the See of *Canterbury*. *Henry* wanted to suppress the Insolence of the Clergy; and, by putting *Becket* at their Head, he apprehended he would assist him in his favourite Scheme: But the Archbishop aspired to an independent Power, and gave his royal Benefactor more Uneasiness than all his Enemies.

THE Immunities of the Clergy gave great Offence to A. D. the Laity; as the former committed many Outrages on 1163. the latter with Impunity; at least without incurring a Punishment adequate to the Crime; every Clergyman being tried in the ecclesiastical Court, from which there was no Appeal, though the greatest Partiality was shewn to such Delinquents. Murder was Death by the Laws of the Land: But if a Clergyman was the Murderer he escaped with Degradation. The King wanted to redress this Grievance: But the Archbishop told him, that an Ecclesiastic ought not to suffer Death for any Crime whatever: And the Monarch replied, that it was improbable God should authorize Offences in his Ministers. The King convened the Bishops together to debate upon this Subject: But the Clergy were intractable, and insisted on their Privilege. This occasioned the King to assemble a Parliament at *Clarendon*, with the Hopes of reducing the spiritual Power, by the temporal Authority. The Nobility were glad of this Opportunity to clip the Wings of the Clergy, who were always endeavouring to soar above the Rest of the Nation: So that a Regulation was made, consisting of sixteen Articles; whereby the Clergy were deprived of those Immunities which had protected them from the Law.

BECKET had signed the Constitutions of *Clarendon*; but soon repented: While the Pope condemned them as very prejudicial to the Church, and destructive of her Privileges. The King endeavoured to mortify the Archbishop, by accusing him of several Crimes; particularly of Perjury and Treason: He was convicted of Perjury, and condemned to Imprisonment: But he evaded the Sentence by Flight, and took Protection in *France*.

THE French Monarch was pleased with these Troubles A. D. in *England*, as it might afford him an Opportunity of reducing the exorbitant Power of *Henry* upon the Continent. He not only gave a Sanctuary to the fugitive Prelate, but interested the Pope in his Favour; who considered this Dispute as the Cause of the universal Church, not as a particular Contest between a Subject and his Sovereign. *Henry* prohibited all Appeals to *Rome*, because the Pope

A. D. refused to have this Affair tried by his Legates in *England*:
1164. The King also suspended the Payment of *Peter-Pence*, seized the Revenues of *Canterbury*, confiscated the Effects of the Archbishop, and banished all his Relations.

A. D. THE Pope, intimidated by the Boldness of the King,
1167. sent Legates to *England* to examine into this Affair: But *Becket* refused to put his Cause into their Hands; rather chusing to languish in a melancholy Exile Abroad, than restore Tranquility to his Country at Home.

THE Pope encouraged *Becket*; and, as *Henry* had now formed the Resolution of conquering *Ireland*, he was willing to offer the Archbishop favourable Terms. For this Purpose, a Meeting was held near *Paris*, between the Kings of *England* and *France*; before whom the Archbishop boldly pleaded his Cause; saying he was ready to pay Obedience to his Sovereign in all Things, *saving the Honour of God*. This was too extensive a Reservation: Upon which *Henry* replied, “ There had been Kings in “ *England* not so powerful as himself, and Archbishops “ that had been great and holy Men: Therefore, says “ he, let the Archbishop pay me the same Regard as the “ greatest of his Predecessors paid the least of mine, and “ I will be satisfied.”

A. D. *BECKET* rejected this Offer; and a second Conference was held at *Paris*; which ended as ineffectual as the former.

A. D. *HENRY* returned to *England*, where he found the Clergy excommunicated by *Becket*: But the King ordered them to perform their Functions. He then convened a Parliament at *Windsor*, when *Henry* his eldest Son was elected his Successor, who was immediately afterwards crowned at *Westminster*. At the Feast made upon this Occasion, the King carried up the first Dish, and told his Son, “ Never was a Monarch served in a more honourable Manner:” which Compliment was badly returned by the young Prince, who told the Archbishop of *York*, “ It was no such great Condescension in the Son “ of an Earl, to serve the Son of a King.” The Son was now fifteen Years of Age; the Father was thirty-nine:

The

The former was of a very hasty Spirit, and gave the latter A. D.
infinite Trouble. 1170.

As *Henry* had appointed a Successor to the Satisfaction of his People, he went over to *Normandy* to suppress an Invasion from the King of *France*. A Peace was soon concluded; after which, *Henry* was seized with a violent Fever, and made his Will; whereby he gave *England*, *Normandy*, *Anjou*, and *Maine* to his eldest Son *Henry*; *Guienne*, and *Poitou*, to *Richard* his second Son; and *Bretagne* to his third Son *Geoffry*; recommending his fourth Son *John* to be provided for by his elder Brother. But the King recovered, and became reconciled to *Becket*, who returned to *England* with more Pride and Haughtiness than he left it: For he had excommunicated several Bishops, who carried their Complaints to the King in *Normandy*. The Monarch was justly offended at this Insolence of a Subject; saying, “I am very unhappy, “that, among the great Numbers I maintain, there is “not a Man that dares undertake to revenge the Affronts “I perpetually receive from the Hands of a wretched “Priest.” These Words were fatal to the Archbishop: For four principal Domestics belonging to *Henry*, went over to *Canterbury*, and murdered the Archbishop at the Altar of the Cathedral; who died a Sacrifice to his Pride in the fifty-third Year of his Age, being afterwards honoured with the Title of a Martyr; though he gained it more for the Interest of the Pope and Clergy, than for the Cause of God and Religion. However, he was canonized by the Pope, in Gratitude to the Memory of so faithful a Servant, by the Name of *St. Thomas of Canterbury*: Fifty Years after his Death his Body was laid in a Shrine, enriched with a prodigious Quantity of precious Stones; and Miracles were pretended to have been so common at his Tomb, as to draw Votaries from all Parts of *Christendom*.

HENRY returned to *England*; where he found that *Becket* when dead, gave as much Inquietude as when alive. The King of *France* charged *Henry* with the Death of *Becket*; while the Pope threatened to excom-

A. D. municate him, and put the Nation under an Interdict; 1171. whereby the religious Functions would have been suspended, unless he gave Marks of a sincere Repentance. The Pope had lately shewn a remarkable Instance of his Authority in *Germany*, and he thought he could have as easily extended it to *England*: But at this Time he was mistaken; for though he had shamefully treated the Emperor *Frederick Barbarossa* at *Venice*, by excommunicating him, and insolently treading upon his Neck, before he would receive him again into the Bosom of the Church; yet he found King *Henry* had Resolution enough to oppose all the pontifical Power, by ordering, that if any Person brought Letters of Excommunication into *England* from the Pope, he should be proceeded against as a public Enemy. So that *Henry* by his Courage at Home, and his Presents to the Cardinals Abroad, or rather his corrupting the Members of the Vatican, averted this terrible Blow; which gave him an Opportunity of resuming his Project for the Conquest of *Ireland*.

HENRY had formerly obtained a Bull from Pope *Adrian the Fourth* to permit him to undertake the Reduction of *Ireland*, which he pretended to do only on religious Motives, by obliging the *Irish* People to acknowledge the papal Authority; and he also promised to pay the Pope a yearly Acknowledgment of a Penny out of every House; who, in return, charged the Natives of *Ireland* to submit to the Jurisdiction of *England*, and own *Henry* for their Sovereign Lord. But the real Motive which induced *Henry* to this Expedition, was the same that brought *Cæsar* into *Britain* 1226 Years before, being the Desire of enlarging his Dominions by the Conquest of an Island adjacent to *England*; and the *English* Monarch was more successful than the *Roman* General, for he soon united *Ireland* to the *English* Monarchy.

THE Natives of *Ireland* had embraced Christianity; but in all other Respects were in much the same Circumstances when *Henry* invaded them, as the *Britons* were when invaded by *Cæsar*. The Country had been divided into several petty States, which were now reduced to the seven Kingdoms of *Connaught*, *Cork*, *Leinster*, *Offory*, *Meath*,

Meath, Limerick, and Ulster. Roderick King of Con-A. D.
naught was the principal of these petty Sovereigns; ha-1171.
ving much the same Authority as the Anglo-Saxon Mo-
narchs enjoyed during the Heptarchy.

IRELAND had suffered several Invasions from the Northumbrians, Norwegians, Germans, and Danes; But was never subdued, till a civil Dissention between Dermot King of Leinster and O-Roric King of Meath, brought on the Subjection of the whole. Dermot applied to the King of England for Assistance; who encouraged Richard de Clare, surnamed Strong-bow, Earl of Pembroke and Striguil, with Robert Fitz-Stephen, and Milo de Coggeham, to assist Dermot with 1700 Men. They invaded Ireland, and with this small Number of Men became Masters of the Cities of Wexford, Waterford, and Dublin: For though the Irish were very numerous, they were easily subdued; which is imputed to their great Dread of the English Cross-bows; the Use of them being at this Time as much unknown to the Irish, as they were to the English at the Norman Invasion.

As the English Adventurers had reduced the principal Places in Ireland, Henry determined to subject the whole to 1172. his Obedience: For this Purpose he assembled a Fleet at Pembroke, consisting of 400 Sail; with which he arrived in Ireland, and landed at Waterford, on the eighteenth of October. The Irish Princes chose a voluntary Submission; they all attended the English Monarch at Waterford; and strove with Emulation who should first swear Allegiance to a foreign Prince, who became Master of a populous Kingdom, without unsheathing his Sword, or spilling one Drop of Blood: But though this Country was so easily won, it was afterwards very troublesome to keep.

HENRY made but a short Stay in Ireland; where he left Hugh Lacy at Dublin, to govern the Kingdom, in his Name, with the Title of Justiciary of Ireland; and soon after divided the Country among the English Nobles and Adventurers, from whom the principal Families of Ireland are descended. Hence it appears, that auxiliary Friends are the most dangerous Enemies: Thus the Irish lost their Liberty, by one of their Princes inviting the Eng-

A. D. ~~1172.~~ *libe* to his Assistance: Thus the *Roman* Mercenaries reduced the *Capuans* and *Rbegians*; the *Moors* conquered *Spain*, and the *Saxons* subdued *Britain*.

THIS Success of *Henry* in *Ireland*, was attended with great Disgrace in *Normandy*; where he went the same Year to meet the Legates from *Rome*, who were sent to examine into the Murder of *Becket*. They had Orders to give the King Absolution; though not without submitting to the greatest Indignities that could be imposed by the Pope: For *Henry* not only bound himself to restore the Privileges of the Church; but also, much beneath his Dignity and Spirit, meanly consented to go barefoot to the Shrine of *Becket*, and permit himself to be scourged by the Monks of St. *Augustin*: Which he as meanly performed on his Return to *England*, and which was as rigorously inflicted by the Monks, who gave him four-score Lashes.

THE Fortune of *Henry* began now to decline: He was the greatest Monarch in *Europe*, and soon became one of the most unhappy Men in the World; for he found in his own Wife and Children, the most inveterate Enemies. Queen *Eleanor* was extremely jealous of the King; especially with fair *Rosamond* Daughter of the Lord *Clifford*, whom the King kept in a Labyrinth built on Purpose at *Woodstock*, to secure her from the Rage of the Queen: Thongh it is reported the Queen found Means to dispatch her Rival out of the Way by Poison. The young Princes wanted to be invested with that Power which the Father had appointed by his Will: Particularly young *Henry* was much disgusted with bearing the Title of King without any Means to support the Dignity. Several of the Nobility entered into a Conspiracy, which was alio fermentated by the Kings of *France* and *Scotland*. So that the King of *England*, when he thought of spending the Remainder of his Days in a Calm of uninterrupted Peace, was suddenly furrounded with all the Storm of War.

A. D. ~~1173.~~ *NORMANDY*, *Guienne*, and *Bretagne*, were attacked all at once by the King of *France*, the Earl of *Flanders*, *Bulloign*, and *Blois*: *Cumberland* was invaded by the King of

of Scotland: While *England* was divided into two Parties, A. D. one for the young King, brought from *France*, under the ^{1371.} Earl of *Leicester*; and the other for his Father. The young Princes joined the *French*: But their Father exerted all his Virtues, and triumphed over all his Enemies.

THE Earl of *Leicester* was defeated, and taken Prisoner, by *Humphry Bohun*, High Constable in *England*; in a Battle fought at *Fornham* in *Suffolk*, where above 10,000 *Flemings* were slain. The *English* General also gave Battle to the King of *Scotland* at *Alnwick* in *Northumberland*, where he routed his Army, and took the King Prisoner, who was sent over to *Normandy*, and imprisoned at *Falaise* with the Earl of *Leicester*.

IN the mean Time, the King was equally successful Abroad, where he became Master of the principal Places in *Guienne*, *Saintonge*, *Anjou*, *Poitou*, and *Bretagne*. He then returned to *England*, and suppressed the Rebellion: went over again to *Normandy*, and obliged the *French* Monarch to raise the Siege of *Roan*.

HENRY now saw his Affairs in a more flourishing A. D. Condition than ever; which obliged his Enemies to sue ^{1174.} for Peace. A Treaty was concluded between him and the King of *France*: He restored the young Princes to Favour, and pardoned all the Revolters: But obliged the King of *Scotland* to pay him Homage for his Kingdom.

ENGLAND now saw her Monarch return in Peace A. D. and Honour: He sought to promote the Happiness of his ^{1175.} Subjects, and assembled a Parliament at *Northampton*, where he renewed the Constitution of *Clarendon*, and revived the Laws of *Edward the Confessor*. He divided the Kingdom into six Districts, or Circuits, for Judges to hold Assizes twice a Year in every County. He ordained several salutary Laws, and was now in such high Esteem, that the Kings of *Castile*, and *Navarre*, submitted their Contests to his Arbitration; as also did *Philip* King of *France*, and *Philip* Earl of *Flanders*.

AFTER this Tranquility, *Henry* was again disturbed A. D. by the Ambition of his Sons: But his eldest Son *Henry* ^{1184.} was carried off by a Fever, and the royal Family conti-

A. D. nued in Peace; though the King kept his Queen in Con-
1184. finement ever since the Rebellion in 1173.

A. D. PRINCE *John*, the youngest, and the favourite Son of
1185. *Henry*, was sent Governor into *Ireland*: But he so much
estranged the Affections of the People, that his Father
was obliged to recal him soon afterwards.

A. D. PRINCE *Richard*, who was now the Heir apparent to
1186. the Throne, began to give his Father as much Uneasi-
ness as his Brother had formerly done. He levied Forces
in *Guienne*; and *Henry* was obliged to threaten him that
he would disinherit him of the Crown of *England*, if he
did not return to his Allegiance; which obliged him to
submit.

A. D. PHILIP King of *France* was greatly discontented that
1187. *Henry* should possess such large Territories in the *French*
Dominions, and was preparing to recover them: But the
Loss of *Jerusalem* by the *Christians*, who had been in Pos-
session of *Palestine* for almost a Century, and were now
dispossessed by the *Saracens*, prevented the *French* Mo-
narch from renewing the War with the King of *England*.
Both Princes, together with the Earl of *Flanders*, had an
Interview in *Normandy*, when they engaged to renew the
Crusade for the Recovery of *Jerusalem*. However, this was
prevented by a fresh Rupture, occasioned by a Quarrel

A. D. between Prince *Richard* and the Earl of *Tholouse*. This
1189. brought on a War between *England* and *France*; when
Prince *Richard* revolted again from his Father, and assisted
the *French* Monarch; who was so successful, that *Henry*
was obliged to accept of a Peace upon very disadvanta-
geous Terms.

A MONARCH, like *Henry*, who had acquired so much
Glory, must have been extremely mortified to see his
Power so much diminished, and to find his greatest Enemy
in his own Son. This Mortification was augmented by
discovering that his favourite Son *John* was also conspir-
ing to remove him from the Throne. His Grief occa-
sioned his Death: He fell sick at *Chinon*, in *Touraine*; and,
perceiving his End was near, he caused himself to be carried
into the Church, where he expired, on the sixth of *July*,
before

before the Altar, in the fifty-seventh Year of his Age, and A. D.
the thirty-fifth of his Reign.

1189.

THIS Prince, who, both for Greatness of Genius and Extent of Dominion, was one of the most illustrious Persons of his Time, was stript by his Domestics as soon as his Eyes were closed, and left quite naked in the Church: But he was buried at *Fonteveraud* in *Anjou*, pursuant to his own Order.

THOUGH this King came to the Crown by the most absolute Title, and clearest Right, he never pretended to impose upon his People any arbitrary Power: While his Conquest of *Ireland*, and his Possessions in *France*, made his Subjects very formidable. He not only reformed the Laws, but governed himself by them. If he curbed the Church, the State had no Reason to complain; for he suffered neither his Wars, nor his Pleasures, to be chargeable to the Nation, nor his Concubines to be a Load to the People. It is true, he had all the Pride and Ambition of the *Norman* Line: But they were well attempered with the Clemency and Moderation of the *Saxon* Blood. He was valiant and learned, prudent and politic, generous and mild. Among his Vices, Lust was his predominant Passion: But the Affection he shewed to his disobedient Children, with his other Virtues, turned the Balance greatly in his Favour. The Beginning of his Reign was encircled with Glory and Honour, the End of it with Misfortune and Misery.

He was of a middle Stature. His Eyes were mild as those of the Dove when pleased; and when angry sparkling like those of the Lynx. His Hair was bushy: His Nose was rising and graceful: His Chest was full, his Arms strong: But his Hands were coarse, and his Legs somewhat deformed. He was a good Horseman, and excessively fond of Hunting; though he never enforced the Forest Laws.

HENRY had Issue by Queen *Eleanor*, Daughter of *William* Duke of *Aquitain*, five Sons and three Daughters. *William* the eldest died an Infant; *Henry* his second Son died in 1184, aged thirty; and *Geoffry* the fourth Son died in 1186, aged twenty-eight, *Richard* the third Son

226 A NEW HISTORY

was born in 1157, and *John* the youngest in 1166; both of whom succeeded to the Crown. *Maud* the eldest Daughter was married to *Henry Duke of Saxony* in 1167: *Eleanor* married *Alphonso King of Castile* in 1169: And *Joan* was married to *William King of Sicily* in 1176.

His illegitimate Children by *Rosamond* were *William* surnamed *Long-sword*, and *Geoffry*, afterwards Archbishop of *York*: Besides, he had a Son named *Morgan* by the Daughter of Sir *Ralph Ble-wet*.

IN 1185, a great Earthquake happened, which destroyed the Church of *Lincoln*, and several other Churches: But most of the other Accidents related by Historians to have happened in this Reign, are more proper for Fable than History.

The Saxon and the Norman Blood combin'd
In *Anjou's* Heir; who *England's* Laws refin'd.
Henry Plantagenet with Glory reign'd,
And many States of *France* to *England* gain'd:
He conquer'd *Ireland*, curb'd the Pride of *France*,
And *Scotland's* Monarch bow'd beneath his Lance.
In Arms victorious, wise and just in Peate,
A Prelate's Pride made all his Glory cease;
Insolent *Becket* shook his Monarch's Throne,
And *Papal* Vengeance lost him his Renown.
His Sons rebell'd, and their unnat'r'l Strife
Ended with Grief the royal Father's Life.

Henry, who, like the bright meridian Sun,
Had his illustrious Course of Glory run;
Declining, sees the gath'ring Tempest rise,
And, all his Lustre veil'd, obscurely dies.

Learn hence, Ambition, what is regal Pow'r!
At best the glaring Sun-shine of an Hour;
Cool'd by each Wind, defac'd by ev'ry Cloud,
Till one collected Storm shall all its Splendor shroud.

VI. RICHARD I, surnamed Coeur de Lion,
the twenty sixth King of England, and the sixth
from the Norman Conquest.

TWO continued Successions of brave Princes may be of A. D. Force sufficient to conquer the whole World; which is 1189. entirely seen in *Philip of Macedon*, and his Son *Alexander the Great*; as also partly in *Henry the Second of England*, and his Son *Richard the Lion-hearted*, a Title which he gained by his Bravery, and deserved as well as that which has rendered *Alexander* so illustrious: Their personal Courage, Ambition, and Love of Conquest, were equal: Their Age was much the same, and so was their Fate: The *Macedonian* Prince invaded and conquered *Darius* and *Porus*; the *English* Monarch conquered *Isaac King of Cyprus*, and defeated *Saladine Emperor of the Saracens*.

RICHARD was thirty two Years of Age when his Father died: He concluded a Peace with *Philip King of France*; and, after being solemnly inaugurated in the Duchy of Normandy at *Roan*, he arrived in *England* about the Middle of *August*, and was crowned in *Westminster Abbey*, on the third of *September*, by *Baldwin Archbishop of Canterbury*. The People were overjoyed at his Accession to the Throne; and the King at his Coronation swore to observe the Peace and Honour of the Church, to exercise Justice to his People, to abrogate all evil Laws and Customs, and to make those that were good and laudable. Indeed, from *William the Conqueror*, there was no King but what had taken the same Oath; though not one had been careful to perform it, which was also neglected by *Richard* as well as his Predecessors.

THE *Crusade* was now the prevailing Passion, and an Aversion for all Infidels became general: Yet the *Jews*, who were now very numerous in *England*, were daring enough to appear at the Coronation in rich Habits and Equipages. The *Londoners* were so much exasperated at their Behaviour, as to murder all the Infidels they met with

A. D. with, plunder their Houses, and set them on Fire: Nor
1189. could the Tumult be appeased without the Presence of the King, who went into the City, and caused some of the Ring-leaders to be executed, before the Commotion could be suppressed. However, the Example of the *Londoners* was afterwards followed in several Parts of the Kingdom, particularly at *York*, where five hundred *Jews*, besides Women and Children, shut themselves up in the Castle, and massacred themselves, rather than submit to the Fury of the *English*. This bloody Act shewed a noble Spirit in the *Jews*; who were censured for it by the Monks: Though they well knew that the *Saguntines* have been celebrated in History for committing the same Act, rather than submit to the *Carthaginians*. Perhaps the whole Race of *Jews* would now have been exterminated in *England*, if the Preparations for the *Crusade*, and the Recovery of *Jerusalem*, had not turned the Fury of the People against the *Saracens*: This Zeal, especially in *England* and *France*, running so high, that the Number of the *Croises* were prodigious; for every one gloried, either in lifting himself to go in Person against the Infidels, or in advancing Money for the War: Especially as the two Monarchs agreed to join their Forces, and go to the Assistance of the Christians of *Palestine*; which Agreement had been made in the Reign of *Henry the Second*, but neglected till now.

PETER the Hermit first projected the *Crusade*, in 1096, for the Recovery of the *Holy Land* from the *Saracens*, whom he pretended exercised all Manner of Cruelties over the Christians in that Country. The Pope recommended it, many Princes undertook it, and as Persons of all Ranks and Nations in *Europe* zealously embarked in it, they soon got Possession of *Jerusalem*; which they erected into a Kingdom, and retained it about ninety Years, when the *Saracens* recovered it again.

To know simply how to slaughter Men, to be more capable than others of rooting out Society, and destroying Nature, is the excellency of Warriors; but it is to excel in a very fatal Science. The Application of this Science ought to be just, or at least honourable: It should turn to the

the Good of those whom it has subdued, if possible; always to the Interest of the State, or the Necessity of private Advantage. When it becomes the Employment of Fancy, it serves for Irregularity and Fury: When its End is to prejudice all the World, then that Glory which is ascribed to it ought to be taken away; and the War rendered as shameful as unjust. Upon these Considerations, the *Croises* were justly to be condemned: For the *Crusade* arose only from the intemperate Brain of an enthusiastic Priest; though it ended with the Loss of many Princes, and more than a Million of their Subjects, without any Advantage to the Interest of *Europe*, or the Honour of Christianity.

KING Philip of *France* undertook the *Crusade* more from a Principle of Devotion, than a Desire of Fame: But the King of *England* was prompted to it more by the Love of Glory, than for the Sake of Religion. Richard was so entirely bent upon this Expedition, as to take Measures for raising of Money, that were destructive to the Rights of the People, and prejudicial to his own Prerogative: He sold almost all the Crown-lands to the moneyed Clergy; disposed of the public Offices by Sale; and said he would also sell *London*, if he could find a Purchaser. He exacted Money on several Pretences from his Subjects: And for 10,000 Marks discharged the King of *Scotland* from the Homage extorted from him by *Henry the Second*. By which means, Richard amassed about 1,100,000l. amounting to about Eight Millions of the present Money. He collected a numerous Army; appointed *Longchamp* Bishop of *Ely*, and the Bishop of *Durham*, to be at the Head of the Regency for governing the Kingdom in his Absence; and then undertook his Expedition into the *Holy Land*.

THE King of *England* passed into *France* with all his Troops; being joined by the *French* King and his Army at *Vezelai*: The combined Forces consisting of above 100,000 Men. The two Monarchs ratified their Alliance; obliging themselves to protect and defend one another upon all Occasions. They marched together as far as *Lyons*, where they separated their Forces: Philip taking

230 A NEW HISTORY

A. D. 1190. ing the Route to *Genoa*, and *Richard* continuing his March to *Marseilles*, where they were to embark on board their respective Fleets, and meet at *Messina* in *Sicily*, which was appointed for the general Rendezvous of the *Croises*; and the two Monarchs saw their Armaments united on the 20th of September.

A. D. 1191. *TANCRED* was now King of *Sicily*; being bastard-Brother to *William* who had married *Joanna of England*, Sister of King *Richard*. The Sicilian Monarch had imprisoned the English Princess, and affronted her Brother: Upon which *Richard* violently entered *Messina*, and fixed his Banners on the Walls. This gave Offence to the French Monarch; who was also disgusted at the formidable Army which *Richard* commanded, and displeased to see the Forces of his Vassal superior to his own. However, *Tancred* appeased the Anger of *Richard*; and the three Mouarchs were reconciled: *Richard* presented the King of *Sicily* with the Sword of King *Arthur*: *Tancred* agreed to pay the Princess of *England* her Dower, and to assist the *Croises*: And *Philip* consented that *Richard* should marry *Berenguella*, or *Berengera*, Daughter of *Sancho* the Fourth King of *Navarre* instead of *Alice of France*, to whom the King of *England* had formerly been contracted. But *Tancred* sowed such Dissentions between *Richard* and *Philip*, by making each mistrust the other, that their Friendship was entirely dissolved.

THE two Monarchs spent the Winter at *Messina*, and pursued their Voyage in the Spring. *Philip* sailed on the 30th of March: But *Richard* stayed four Days after him, to wait for his Mother *Eleanor*, and the Princess *Berenguella*; the latter of whom, with his Sister *Joanna*, accompanied him to the *Holy Land*. *Richard* set sail from *Messina*, with a Fleet of 150 sail, fifty-two Gallies, ten large Ships of Burden laden with Provisions, and many small Vessels for the Service of the Fleet: But Part of the Fleet was drove on Shore on the Isle of *Cyprus*, about thirty Miles West of the Coast of *Syria*. *Iaac* the King of the Island, treated the English with Inhumanity: Upon which, *Richard* landed his Troops, and took *Iaac* and his Daughter Prisoners, loaded the Cyprian Monarch with

with silver Fetters, and sent him Captive to *Tripoli*, in A.D. Syria; transferred his Right to *Guy Lusignan*, titular King 1191. of *Jerusalem*, who had obtained his Liberty by surrendering *Aascalon* to the Saracen Sultan; and the Descendants of *Lusignan* afterwards transferred the Crown of *Cyprus* to the State of *Venice*, from whom the Turks took it in 1570.

WHILE King *Richard* continued in *Cyprus*, he consummated his Marriage with the Princess *Berenguella*, and then continued his Voyage to *Palestine*, where the *Croises* were besieging the City of *Acre*, the ancient *Ptolemais*.

THE Conquest which the Christians had made from the Saracens in *Palestine* and *Syria*, were erected in a Monarchy in 1099. *Godfrey of Bulloign* was the first Christian King of *Jerusalem*, and was succeeded by eight other Princes; the last of whom was *Guy Lusignan*, who had lately received the Crown of *Cyprus* from the King of *England*. *Guy* had no Right to the Crown of *Jerusalem*, which he usurped from *Baldwin* the Fifth, whose Mother he had married: The Earl of *Tripoli*, Guardian to *Baldwin*, prepared to dethrone *Guy*; and the latter invited *Saladine*, Sultan of *Egypt* to his Assistance; who was fond of embracing so fair an Opportunity of recovering a Country from whence his Predecessors were expelled ninety Years before; and, like all other auxiliary Friends, having first took Possession of the Country in the Name of his Ally, afterwards retained it for himself.

THIS was the State of the *Holy Land*, when the English Monarch arrived in the Camp before *Acre*, on the eighth of June. The *Croises*, consisting of some German, Flemish, and Italian Troops, had besieged the City above a Year. The King of *France* continued the Siege with little Success: But when *Richard* landed, he so violently assaulted it, that it surrendered in July; after upwards of 200,000 Pilgrims had perished before the Walls. At this Siege, *Leopold Duke of Austria*, carried one of the Towers, and stuck his Flag upon it; which *Richard* ordered to be pulled down, and trampled upon: The Duke had

A. D. had no immediate Opportunity of shewing his Resent-
1191. ment; but the King fatally felt it afterwards.

A. D. THE City of *Acre* was chiefly won by the personal Va-
1192. lour of *Richard*, who gained the Esteem of the whole Ar-
my. The French Monarch envied this Distinction shew-
ed to the King of *England*; and as the Christian Army
expected to sit down before *Jerusalem*, the Dissention
which was renewed between the two Leaders, frustrated
their Expectations. Both Monarchs, in the Height
of their Difference, were seized with the same Distemper,
called *Arnaldia*; which had like to have proved fatal to
them: But they recovered with the Loss of their Hair;
when *Philip* returned to *France*, as his Weakness prevented
him from entering upon Action. Though this was con-
trary to his Agreement with *Richard*, because one of the
Articles was, that neither should desert the Cause without
the Consent of the other. The King of *England* in vain
insisted that *Philip* should continue in *Palestine* till the Re-
duction of *Jerusalem*: However, the French Monarch, at
his Departure, left 10,000 Men under the Duke of *Bur-
gundy*, with Orders to pay the same Obedience to *Richard*
as to himself.

RICHARD King of *England*, and *Saladine* Sultan of
Egypt, were now to contend for the Kingdom of *Jerusa-
lem*. They were both the bravest Princes of their
Age, equally remarkable for personal Courage, and mili-
tary Discipline: But the infidel Forces were much supe-
rior in Number to the Christian Army. *Saladine* and
Richard behaved, in other Respects, with great Polite-
ness and Generosity to each other: But, after the Re-
duction of *Acre*, they both exhibitted a Spectacle of Hor-
ror to their Armies, by commanding the Prisoners each
had in his Power to be put to Death; being about 2000
Christians, and as many Infidels.

AFTER this, *Richard* undertook the Siege of *Ascalon*;
When *Saladine*, with an Army of 300,000 Men, posted
himself advantageously in the Way. But *Richard* led
his Troops against the Infidels; and a Battle ensued.
James de Avesnes commanded the right Wing of the Chri-
stians, the Duke of *Burgundy* the left, and the King
headed

headed the main Body. The two Wings were broke and A. D. defeated: The *Saracens* thought themselves secure of Victory; but *Richard* recovered all by his Bravery, performing such astonishing Acts of Valour as to intimidate *Saladine*, whom he personally engaged, and had taken him Prisoner if the *Saracens* had not rescued him out of his Hands: Howver, his Troops were routed by the Valour and Conduct of *Richard*, who obtained a complete Victory, and left 40,000 of the Infidels dead in the Field of Battle: *James de Avesnes* being the only Officer of Distinction that was slain on the Side of the Christians.

RICHARD immediately took the Advantage of this Victory, by seizing *Ascalon*, *Joppa*, and *Cæsarea*, all maritime Places. But, near *Joppa*, he fell into an Ambush of a Squadron of *Saracen* Horse, as he was asleep under a Tree, with only six Attendants. His Bravery would not suffer him to seek Security in Flight; he defended himself with incredible Valour, till four of his Attendants were killed; and he was upon the Point of being taken or slain himself, when *William Despreaux*, one of his Company, cried out, in the *Saracen* Language, “ I am ‘the King of *England*.’ ” The Assailants left the real King, to have a Hand in taking the imaginary one; whose Device gave *Richard* Time to ride off full Speed; while *Despreaux* was conducted to *Saladine*, to whom he ingenuously confessed what he had done to save his Master. The imperial *Saracen* was charmed at the Fidelity of the Christian Soldier, and shewed him great Honour: While *Richard* ransomed his faithful Servant in Exchange for ten Emirs, or *Saracen* Princes.

THE English Monarch then marched to *Jerusalem*, which he was determined to besiege. In his Way, he met the *Babylon* Caravan, escorted by 10,000 Horse; which he attacked with 5000, and became Master of the Caravan, with an inestimable Booty of rich Merchandizes and Provisions of all Kinds, which he distributed among his Soldiers.

THE Reduction of *Jerusalem* was the chief End of this Expedition: But as the French Monarch had deserted the Confederacy, the Duke of *Austria*, the Duke of *Burgundy*, and

A. D. and the Marquis of Montferat, took off the German, French,
1193. and Italian Troops, when the King of England was within
 View of the City. Saladine took this Opportunity of proposing a Truce for three Years to Richard, which was accepted by him, and acceded to by all the Christians, who were to retain all their Possessions in Palestine, and enjoy the Liberty of a free Pilgrimage to Jerusalem.

UPON the Conclusion of the Treaty, the English Monarch sent Word to the Egyptian Sultan, "that he would certainly visit Palestine again, and try to recover it out of his Hands." The Sultan politely replied, "he took the Law of the living God to witness, that if it was his Fate to be deprived of this Part of his Dominions, he would rather have them conquered by the King of England than by any other Monarch in the World; so much he held his Courage, and Greatness of Soul, in Admiration." But Richard never executed his Threat; and, instead of returning to conquer Palestine, went to Europe first to be made a Captive in Austria, and afterwards to lose his Life in France. However, his Memory was always honoured by Saladine, and his Name long feared by the Saracens, whose Wives used to quiet their crying Children with the bare Mention of his Name.

WHILE Richard was preparing for his Departure, he received Intelligence of what was passing in England; which made him resolve to hasten thither as a private Gentleman, without waiting for his Fleet, which was not in Readiness to sail. He sent his Queen and Sister before him; and, about the Beginning of October, embarked on board a Ship bound from Acre for the Island of Corfu, where he safely arrived; but was afterwards shipwrecked on the Island of Ragusa, on the East Coast of the Gulph of Venice; from whence he intended to go by Land through Istria and Austria, where Duke Leopold ordered him to be seized: But the King at first escaped, pursued his Journey, and after several Difficulties was taken while he was asleep in a poor Lodging near Vienna, to which City he was conducted with many Indignities shewn him by the Populace, on Account of the Insult he had shewn

to

to their Duke in *Palestine*. It was also rumoured that A. D. the King was accessory to the Murder of the Marquis of 1192. *Montferrat*, who was chosen General of the Christian Forces on the Departure of *Richard* from the *Holy Land*. The Emperor *Henry* the Sixth demanded the royal Captive of the Duke of *Austria*, on Pretence of accusing him with that Murder, and other Crimes prejudicial to the Christian Interest. The Duke delivered up the royal Prisoner, who was afterwards tried as a Criminal before the *German Diet*: Though neither the Emperor, nor any Monarch upon the Face of the Earth, had the least Right to call the King of *England* to an Account for any of his Actions.

WHILE *Richard* was acquiring immortal Reputation Abroad, his Government was greatly perplexed at Home. The two Regents came to an open Rupture, and *Longchamp* excluded the Bishop of *Durham* from the Administration: After which, he treated the *English* with such intolerable Insolence, that while the Laity found him more arbitrary than a King, the Clergy found him prouder than a Pope. But Prince *John*, assisted by the Bishops and Barons, divested him of all Authority, in 1191, and banished him the Kingdom. This gave Prince *John* an Opportunity of paving his Way to the Crown: He was sensible that *Ar'ur Duke of Bretagne*, Son of his elder Brother *Geoffry*, was the next Heir to the Crown if the King died without Issue: Therefore he aimed at, and won great Popularity; with a View of securing the Crown when his Brother died, if he had no Intention of seizing it while he was alive.

RICHARD, whose Fame extended over the Earth, A. D. and whose noble Actions had exalted him above all his 1193. cotemporary Princes, heard that his Kingdom was in this Situation; while he found himself basely deprived of his Liberty to gratify the Resentment of one Prince, and satisfy the Fordid Avarice of another. The Emperor at first treated him with Civility; but soon after chained him like a Slave; “with more Irons upon his Limbs,” according to the King’s own Expression, “than a Horse ‘could have borne.” His Imprisonment alarmed all

Europe,

A.D. Europe, particularly his Subjects of *England*, among
1193 whom it caused a great Consternation: But the Exhortations of Queen *Eleanor* his Mother, his own unhappy Condition, and the Glory he had acquired, concurred to keep his *English* Subjects in the Fidelity due to their Sovereign. The aspiring Hopes of *John* were frustrated by the Attachment of the Nobility to their King; and *Normandy* also preserved its Loyalty. This obliged *John* to seek Assistance from the Kings of *France* and *Scotland*: He succeeded with the former, but the latter held *Richard* in too much Reverence than to become his Enemy; especially while he was surrounded with too many other Afflictions: For the Scotch Monarch had formerly been long confined as a Prisoner in *Normandy*, and his generous Heart felt the present Misfortunes which the King of *England* suffered in *Germany*.

WHEN the King of *France* quitted *Palestine*, he made an Oath to give no Molestation to the Dominions belonging to the King of *England*: But while *John* was endeavouring to supplant *Richard* of his Kingdom, *Philip* disregarded his Oath, and invaded *Normandy*. However, the Queen prevented any Revolution in *England*, and the Earl of *Leicester* preserved *Normandy*.

THE avaricious Emperor brought the unhappy *Richard* before the Diet of the Empire, assembled at *Haguenau*. The Queen his Mother, and the Lords of the Regency, had sent Deputies to assure him of their Fidelity in his Distress: The Deputies met this Monarch upon the Road, not royally attended like a glorious Prince, but ignominiously conducted like a common Criminal: The Subjects gushed into Tears to see the Calamity of their King; and the King wept to see the Sorrow of his Subjects, who informed him of the Ambition of his Brother, which made him submit to the Power of the Emperor. It is well known, that an Emperor of *Germany* has Power, upon many Occasions, to summon *German* Princes to the imperial Diet, and put them to the Ban of the Empire: But violently to seize upon the Person of a King of *England*, and arbitrarily to summon him before such a Tribunal,

bunal, was absolutely repugnant to the Law of Nations, A. D. and quite subversive of the Prerogatives of Kings: An 1193. Observation which an *English* Historian ought to make, though till now it never was made.

THE Emperor exhibited six Articles against the King, none of which could concern the Empire in particular. However, as *Richard* knew that his Presence was greatly wanted in *England*, and that the Emperor wanted only to extort a Sum of Money for his Ransom; he found it was in vain to contend about the Authority of his Keepers in *Germany*, while it was necessary to guard his Crown against the Ambition of his Brother. He therefore contented himself, with insisting, "that he looked upon himself as accountable to no Man for his Actions; yet he was willing to vindicate himself before that illustrious Assembly: Not that he considered them as his Judges; but because that it greatly concerned his Honour that the World should be sensible of his Innocence." This was saying as much as he could; or at least as much as would be regarded. The Articles against him, were principally founded upon the bad Success of the late *Crusade*, which was attributed to the King: But his Defence so strongly invalidated the Articles, that the Emperor was confounded, and the Compassion of the German Princes raised for the illustrious Captive; who deserved to command a Troop of the greatest Princes in the World, instead of appearing like a Slave before a Diet of *Germany*: The greatest of whose Princes, not excepting the Emperor himself, were far the Inferiors of *Richard*, if considered only as the King of *England*; and much more so considering his Possessions in *France*. The Diet unanimously intreated the Emperor to release his Prisoner: But the Intreaty was vain; as his Confinement proceeded from the Thirst of Avarice, not the Love of Justice. Therefore, the captive King was obliged to promise the Emperor the Payment of 150,000 Marks of Silver, to obtain his Liberty: Which his loyal Subjects chearfully raised by a voluntary Tax; the Laity giving one fourth Part of their annual Income, and the Clergy their Tythes, for the Redemption of their favourite Sovereign.

THIS

A.D. THIS Promise was confirmed by a Treaty; and when
1194. the King of *France* heard of it, he sent Word to Prince
John, " To look to himself, since the Devil was getting
loose." As these two Princes had one common Interest,
they made the Emperor very advantageous Offers to con-
tinute *Richard* in Prison, or deliver him into their Custody.
The Emperor was ready to sacrifice his Honour to In-
terest: However, the Diet obliged him to release his Pri-
soner, upon Payment of 100,000 Marks, and receiving
Hostages for the other 50,000; a third Part of the whole
being to be paid to the Duke of *Austria*. In Return for
this great Sum of Money, the Emperor conferred upon
Richard the imaginary Kingdom of *Arles*; who imme-
diately quitted *Germany*, and safely arrived in *England*, to
the general Joy of all his Subjects; after an Absence of
four Years, of which he had passed fifteen Months in Pri-
son.

A.D. THE King soon suppressed the Party of his Brother,
1195. confiscated his Lands, and declared him incapable of suc-
ceeding to the Crown. He then caused the Ceremony of
his Coronation to be repeated; after which, he laid a
heavy Tax upon his Subjects, levied a numerous Army,
and invaded *France*. He soon pardoned his Brother:
But continued the War against *Philip* for five Years;
which was often interrupted by Truces, as constantly
broke by both Parties, and with equal Dishonour: For
their Jealousy and Hatred left no Room for Confidence
and Friendship. At the Battle of *Blois*, the King of
France lost all the Archives of his Kingdom; which *Me-
zerai* laments as a great Loss to the *French* Historians.
The King of *England* also won a Victory at *Courfelle*:
But the Forces of the contending Princes were too much
upon an Equality, in that almost bloodless Age of mak-
ing War, to give either of them any considerable Ad-
vantage: So that by the Mediation of the Pope, a Truce
was concluded for five Years.

A.D. *RICHARD* now thought of returning to *England*, and
1199. of enjoying some Repose, after a Life of military Toil:
But these Hopes were prevented by a sudden Death. For
a Gentleman of *Limosin*, having discovered a Treasure
upon

upon his Estate; the King pretended it belonged to him A. D. as Sovereign of *Guienne*. The Gentleman took Protection in the Castle of *Chaluz*; to which the King laid Siege: But as he was reconnoitering the Walls, he received a Wound with an Arrow in the Shoulder, close to the Neck; which mortified by the Unskilfulness of the Surgeon, and occasioned his Death, eleven Days after, on the sixth of *April*. However, the Castle was taken before the King died; who ordered all the Garrison to be hanged, except the Man that wounded him, whom he pardoned. Thus died this valiant Prince, in the forty-second Year of his Age, and the tenth of his Reign.

BEFORE he died, *Richard* made his Will, whereby he appointed his Brother *John* to succeed him in all his Dominions; though his Nephew *Arthur* Duke of *Bretagne*, the Son of his Brother *Geoffry*, had the Right of Primogeniture; and though the King had formerly appointed him his Heir: But the *Bretons* were more inclined to become Vassals to the Kingdom of *France*, than to the Duchy of *Normandy*; besides, *Richard* knew that the Mother of young *Arthur* was in the *French* Interest, which gave the King a Disgust to the House of *Bretagne*, and lost *Arthur* the Kingdom of *England*. He ordered his Body to be interred at *Fontereau*, at the Feet of his Father, to testify his Sorrow for offending him: His Heart was carried to *Roan* in *Normandy*, and his Bowels sent to *Charron* in *Poitou*.

HIS Queen *Berenguella* never came into *England*, and the King had no Issue by her: But he left a natural Son called *Philip*, on whom he conferred the Lordship of *Cognac* in *Guienne*.

RICHARD had a tall, graceful, fair, and well-proportioned Person; with prodigious Strength of Body, and amazing Courage of Heart. His Eyes were blue and sparkling; his Hair of a bright yellow, inclining to red.

HE was remarkable for his military Virtues: But he stands severely taxed for his Vices, particularly Pride, Avarice, and Lust; which may have been too much exaggerated. If he was an illustrious Warrior, he was but an indifferent

indifferent Prince; for his Love of Glory made him neglect the Happiness of his People, whom he heavily taxed to support his martial Honour. He shewed little Regard for his *English* Subjects on all Occasions: But they always testified their Fidelity to the King; being satisfied with the immense Money he had spent, as it established his Glory, and redounded to the Honour of the Nation. However, it may be said, that *England*, where he never was above eight Months during the whole Course of his Reign, was very unhappy under his Government.

THERE was a great Contrast between *Hannibal* and *Scipio*: Much the same was to be discovered between *Richard* and *Saladine*. *Hannibal* had but few Virtues, and many Vices; particularly Infidelity, Avarice, and Cruelty; which much resembles the Character of *Richard*. But *Scipio* had all the Beauty of an excellent Nature; an admirable Greatness of Courage; a Disposition sweet and bountiful; a lofty but well-regulated Soul, more sensible of Glory than ambitious of Power, seeking less to distinguish himself by the Authority or Splendor of Fortune, than by the Difficulties of his Undertakings, and the Merit of his Actions: Which Virtues were evident in *Saladine*. However the Carthaginian General and the *English* King, the *Roman* Consul and the *Saracen* Emperor, have been the Admiration of all Mankind: Though it should be observed, that he who knows the Trade of War best, is not necessarily the greatest Man.

IN the first Year of his Reign, the Government of the City of *London* began to be put under a new Regulation, which has subsisted to the present Time. A Mayor and Sheriffs were appointed; and the Citizens divided into several Corporations and Companies. Trade began to flourish in *England*; but in the fifth, sixth, and seventh Years of this Reign, there was a great Famine in *England* and *France*; which was followed by a severe Mortality. *Robin Hood* flourished about this Time; who, with a brave Banditti, committed many Robberies on the Rich, and was a good Friend to the Poor. *Richard* was the first King of *England* who had the *three Lions passant* for his Coat of Arms, which was bore by his Successors:

And

And about this Time Coats of Arms came also to be hereditary in Families; their Origin being owing to the Badges which the *Croises* painted on their Shields, or Coats of Armour, in the *Crusades*.

Let *Greece* her *Alexander* vainly claim;
Her *Cæsar*, *Rome*: *England* boasts *Richard's* Name.
Great as the *Grecian*, as the *Roman* brave;
But nobler far; he sought not Nations to enslave.
Glory his Aim, and *Saladine* his Foe;
Religion, too, gave Strength to ev'ry Blow.
The Eastern Nations long retain'd his Fame,
And trembled at the Sound of *Richard's* Name.
Cyprus he gain'd, and *Palestine* had won,
If Home-Dissentions had not shook his Throne:
Return'd a Victor from the *Syrian* Shore,
He fell a Captive in a Tyrant's Pow'r:
Disgrac'd in *Germany*, in Prison laid,
'Till *England* his prodigious Ransome paid.
In many Battles, many Conflicts try'd,
He liv'd with Glory, but inglorious dy'd.

Great Prince, the Palm of Victory was thine;
And deathless Laurels should adorn thy Shrine.
The *Lion-hearted* Title well was paid
To thee, whose martial Glories ne'er can fade.



VII. JOHN, surnamed Sans Terre, or Lack-Land, the twenty-seventh King of England, and the seventh from the Norman Conquest.

A. D. 1199. RICHARD had acquired Glory for himself, but exhausted the national Treasure. In the mean Time, Commerce began to flourish in *England*, and a Spirit of Industry diffused itself throughout the whole Nation: So that the Frugality of the Merchant introduced an additional Fund of Riches, which more than supplied the Extravagancy of the King, and the Necessity of the Soldier. But when *John* ascended the Throne, *England* began to diminish in Glory.

THOUGH *Arthur*, the young Duke of *Bretagne*, had the hereditary Right to the Crown of *England*, it was placed on the Head of his Uncle *John* without much Opposition. This was an elective Right, favoured by *Hubert* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, *Geoffry Fitz-Peter* Justiciary of *England*, and other of the Nobility; who elected him King, on Condition that he would fully restore all the Rights and Privileges of the Nobles and People. But *John* was opposed by his Nephew in *France*; however, he suppressed an Insurrection, received the Investiture of *Normandy*, and came over to *England*, where he was crowned on the twenty-eighth of *May*, in *Westminster-Abbey*, by the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, who told him that he was *elected* King. The Genius of the *English* was at that Time strongly inclined to hereditary Government, which the Will of some Princes, and the Ambition of others, had set aside: But when the Archbishop was asked, why he asserted an elective Right, he replied, " That he foresaw *John* would bring the Kingdom into great Confusion; and therefore thought proper to let him understand, that he ascended the Throne by Election, and not by hereditary Succession; to the End he might always remember, that those who gave him

" him the Crown, had likewise the Power to take it A.D.
" away."

1199.

THE King was thirty-two Years of Age when he came to the Crown, which served only to make him unhappy. *Constance*, the Mother of *Arthur* had put the Duke her Son under the Protection of the French Monarch, who desired nothing so much as the Recovery of the Provinces enjoyed by the *English* in *France*, in which he was very successful. Under Colour of acting for *Arthur*, the French King broke the five Years Truce concluded with *Richard*, and invaded the *English* Provinces; which obliged *John* to quit his Kingdom, attended with a numerous Army, for the Defence of *Normandy*.

THE War was carried on in *Maine* and *Bretagne*; but the two Monarchs avoided coming to any general Engagement. *John* was now strengthened by an Alliance with his Nephew *Otho* Duke of *Saxony*, who had been elected Emperor, and promised to make a powerful Diversion in his Favour. *Guienne* declared also for *John*; and he likewise gained the Earl of *Flanders* to his Interest. This made *Philip* offer Terms of Peace, when he could procure no Advantage from War: Upon which a Treaty was concluded, whereby *Philip* was to restore whatever he had taken from the *English*, and to grant no Assistance to the Duke of *Bretagne*: While *John* was to give his Niece *Blanch* of *Castile* in Marriage to *Lewis* the Son of *Philip*, and to grant no Assistance to the Emperor *Otho* who was at War with *France*.

JOHN soon dispossessed *Arthur* of all the Provinces A.D.
which had declared in his Favour: But, while he was 1200.
making these Conquests, he was vanquished by Love. He was so strongly enamoured with the Charms of *Isabella* of *Angouleme*, that he obtained a Divorce from his Queen *Avisa*, the Daughter of the Earl of *Gloucester*, to whom he had been married nine Years; and then married *Isabella*, though she was contracted to the Earl of *Marche*. After this, he returned to *England*, where *Isabella* was crowned: But the *English* were dissatisfied with the Peace, which was meanly purchased when all Things promised a happy Issue by War. They were also offended at his

A. D. demanding an Aid for the Dowry of *Blanche of Castile*; 1200. because they could not understand what Business the *English* had to pay the Dowry of a *Spanish* Princess, to marry her to a *French* Prince: However, as it was the first he demanded, it was granted by them: Though with such Reluctancy, that he found he could not raise Money, unless he rendered himself absolute; which, from this Time, he began to effect, and his People to oppose.

THE Spirit of *English* Liberty has been always ready to exert itself against the Hand of Tyranny. The King had entered into a Compact with the People, before they gave him the Crown: But he had been so far from performing his Promise, that they saw him daily usurping an arbitrary Power, which made them jealous of those Liberties he had promised to restore and protect. He exacted large Sums of Money on Pretence of Trespasses on his Forests; and, not contented with public Injuries, he committed many private ones, by debauching the Wives and Daughters of many principal Families. This put the Nobility on their Guard: They agreed to assist each other when any one was oppressed; and they were determined never to submit to an absolute Authority.

A. D. 1201. THE *Poitevins* revolted, and the King summoned his Barons to attend him into *France*: They were to appear at *Portsmouth*, but they assembled at *Leicester*; from whence they sent a Message to the King, " that before " they would attend him to undertake the Reduction of " his People Abroad, they expected he should restore " to his *English* Subjects their Privileges at Home, pur- " suant to his Promise before his Coronation." The King looked upon this as Insolence in the Barons, who had not yet taken any Measures for their Defence; so that at present they were obliged to submit. After which, the King went over to *Normandy*, and renewed the Peace with *France*.

A. D. 1202. JOHN was deceived by *Philip*: The latter inspired the Earl of *Marche* to revenge himself upon the former, for depriving him of his Lady; the Earl stirred up the *Poitevins* to an Insurrection; and the Duke of *Bretagne* was

was prevailed upon by the *French* King to take up Arms A. D. against his Uncle. Thus the Resentment of a supplanted Lover, the Ambition of a disinherited Prince, and the Treachery of a powerful King, conspired to the Ruin of the *English* Monarch; who spent his Time in Diversions and Entertainments with his new Queen, without any Suspicion of Danger.

THE French King demanded for *Arthur* all the *English* Provinces in *France*; *John* refused to comply with such unexpected Demands; and the War was renewed. In the mean Time, *Philip* gave *Mary*, his eldest Daughter, in Marriage to the Duke of *Bretagne*; who afterwards took upon him the Command of the revolted *Poitevins*: But he was defeated by his Uncle near *Mirabel*, and taken Prisoner, together with the Princess *Eleanor* his Sister, the Earl of *Marche*, and two hundred Knights. *Arthur* was sent Prisoner to *Rouen*, and, refusing to desert his Alliance with *France*, was murdered by his Uncle: *Eleanor*, called the Beauty of *Bretagne*, and the other Prisoners, were sent to *England*; where the Princes was confined forty Years in the Castle of *Bristol*, and twenty of the Knights were starved to Death in *Corf Castle*.

THE Nobility of *Bretagne* were impatient to revenge A. D. the Death of their Duke, and they were assisted by his Father-in-law, who invaded *Normandy*; but not so much to do Justice to the *Bretons*, as to recover the *English* Provinces for himself. He soon subdued the greatest Part of *Normandy*, and all the rest submitted to him; whereby they were reduced under the Dominion of *France*, and again united to that Kingdom, after a Separation of three hundred Years. *John* was plunged in invincible Sloth; and, after he had lost so noble a Duchy, returned to *England*, where he behaved more arbitrary than ever.

THE French King likewise took all the other *English* A. D. Provinces, except *Guienne*; and *John* was unable to recover them on Account of the Disaffection of his brave and injured People of *England*, who refused to assist him in reconquering what he had so shamefully lost.

A. D. 1205. THUS the Dissimulation of the King of *France* occasioned the first Scene of Misfortunes to the King of *England*. The Ambition of the Pope continued these Misfortunes; and *John* fatally augmented them by his own Indiscretion. *Innocent* the Third ascended the papal Throne when he was only thirty five Years of Age, and formed the Project of depriving Princes of every Thing that looked like Jurisdiction over the Church. The former Popes encouraged the Archbishops of *Canterbury* to despise the Authority of the *English* Monarchs: *Anselm* was very troublesome to *Henry* the First; *Becket* very insolent to *Henry* the Second; and *Hubert* very imperious to *John*, who was terrified by the Example of his Father, and seemed determined to avoid all Occasions of Quarrel with the Clergy: But *Hubert* died, and his Death threw the King into those Troubles which he had hitherto avoided.

A. D. 1206. THE Right of electing the Archbishop of *Canterbury* had been for some Time contested between the Suffragan Bishops, and the *Augustin* Monks. Immediately after the Death of *Hubert*, some of the Monks met at Midnight in the Cathedral, and elected *Reginald*, their Sub-prior, to the Archiepiscopal See. The King was offended with the Monks, and to appease the Monarch they vacated the Election; proceeded to a new one, and chose *John de Gray* Bishop of *Norwich*, who was recommended by the King. *Reginald* went himself to *Rome* to obtain the Confirmation of the Pope; the Bishop of *Norwich* sent Deputies for the same Purpose; and the Suffragan Bishops sent a Complaint against the Monks assuming the sole Right of electing the Archbishop: So that this gave the Pope an Opportunity of extending that Authority over *England* which his Predecessors were not able to accomplish.

INNOCENT declared both the Elections void, ordered the Monks to proceed to a new Choice, and enjoined the Deputies to elect Cardinal *Stephen Langton*, an *Englishman* of great Abilities, in his Presence. The Deputies represented to his Holiness that such an Election was repugnant to the ancient Laws and Privileges of the King and

and Kingdom: However they were awed into Com-A. D.
pliance; and, as *Langton* was then at *Rome*, the Pope ^{1206,} immediately confirmed this extraordinary Election, and consecrated the Archbishop elect: Besides, he forbid the Bishops to interpose in the Election of their Metropolitans.

WHILE the Pope acted thus arbitrarily in *Italy*, the King did the same in *England*. He had led an Army into *Poictou*, and reduced that Province to his Obedience; but he was again over-reached by *Philip* in the Cabinet, when he might have been successful in the Field: So that a Truce was agreed on for two Years, and *John* returned to *England*, where he entirely alienated the Hearts of his Subjects, by extorting from them the thirteenth Part of their Moveables. This Tax was levied as well upon the Clergy as the Laity; though the former never gave their Consent, and the latter granted it more through Compulsion than Affection. If the Money arising from this Tax had been employed in the Service of the State; it would have been some Satisfaction to the People; but they had the Vexation to see it vainly lavished away in the Reception of the Emperor, who visited the King his Uncle with a Design to persuade him to break the Truce with *France*: Though he found it impossible to bring *John* to this Rupture, and returned to *Germany*, with a Present of 5000 Marks, which served to defray the Expence of his Journey.

JOHN was disgusted at the Election of *Langton* to A. D. the See of *Canterbury*; for it was many Years since the ^{1207,} Popes pretended to chuse the Archbishops, without the Consent of the Kings; satisfying themselves with confirming the Elections, and obliging the Archbishops to come and demand the Pall at *Rome*, ever since the Year 668, when *Theodorus* was Archbishop. The Pope endeavoured to pacify the King, who fell into an inconceivable Fury; expelled the *Augustin* Monks from his Kingdom; and upbraided the Pope with his arbitrary Conduct, telling him this Encroachment was directly contrary to the Perogatives of his Crown, from which he was resolved never to depart, nor from the Election of the Bishop of

A. D. ^{1207.} *Norwich*; threatening to break off all Intercourse with *Rome*, if the Satisfaction he demanded was denied. Happy had it been for *England*, if its Monarch had acted up to his Threat: But this was unhappily prolonged till the Year 1535, when *Henry the Eighth* had Spirit enough to put an End to the papal Power in *England*.

THE Pope, finding the King determined to maintain his Prerogative, ordered the Bishops of *London*, *Ely*, and *Worcester*, to put the Kingdom under an Interdict: But the King swore, by God's Teeth, which was his usual Oath, that if the Kingdom was interdicted, he would banish the Clergy. As the King would not submit, the Bishops pronounced the Sentence of Interdict; and the King confiscated the Estates of the Ecclesiastics: All religious Rites were thrown aside: The People that were faithful to their Sovereign fell under the Censures of the Pope, and those who submitted to the Orders of *Rome* were persecuted by the King. *John* was not uneasy at the papal Thunders with respect to Spirituals: But it gave him great Concern to see the Generality of the People inclined to the Clergy; as he feared the Pope would excommunicate him, and absolve his Subjects from their Oath of Allegiance: However, he took the best preventive Measures in his Power, by levying an Army, and causing his Vassals to renew their Homage.

A. D. ^{1210.} THE Pope, finding the Interdict ineffectual, at last pronounced Sentence of Excommunication against the King, who still remained inflexible, and augmented his Army; with which he compelled the King of *Scotland* to maintain the Peace, quelled an Insurrection in *Ireland* by taking the King of *Connnaught* Prisoner, and compelled the Prince of *Wales* to deliver him twenty-eight Hostages. This created no small Uneasiness in the Pope, who sent two Nuncio's into *England*, under Colour of procuring Peace between the King and his Clergy: Though his real Aim was to discover the Intentions of *John*, that he might take his Measures accordingly.

A. D. ^{1211.} THE King offered the Nuncio's to receive *Langton* as Archbishop, to recal the Clergy, and maintain the Privileges of the Church. This was an unexpected Concession:

cession: But nothing less than the most abject Submission ^{A. D.} would satisfy the Pope, when he saw the King was to be 1211. mollified: Therefore, he published a Bull absolving the People of *England* from their Oath of Allegiance, and enjoining them, upon Pain of Excommunication, to refuse him all Obedience.

THIS was a fatal Blow to the King, as it gave the ^{A. D.} discontented Barons an Opportunity of combining together for the Restoration of the Liberties of their Country, which had been greatly infringed by the King, since the Kingdom was laid under the Interdict. But this was followed by a greater Stroke: For the Pope, in a Consistory of Cardinals, had the Address to get *John* convicted of Rebellion against the holy See; so that the Result of the Council was, "That he deserved to be deposed, and that the Pope should place another King over *England*." *Innocent* thundered out the Deposition, and commissioned *Philip* King of *France* to execute the Sentence; promising him the Remission of all his Sins, together with the Crown of *England*, to him and his Heirs for ever, when he had dethroned the Tyrant.

THE French Monarch had already deprived *John* of ^{A. D.} *Normandy*, and he readily undertook the Conquest of 1213. *England*, appointing *Roan* for the Rendezvous of his Army. The Danger of his Crown raised all the Spirit of the excommunicated Monarch, who exerted his utmost Endeavours to oppose the threatened Invasion, and summoned all his military Tenants to meet him at *Dover*. But, while the two Monarchs had covered the Sea with their Ships, and overspread the Shores with their Troops, the Pope sent *Pandulph*, his Nuncio, into *England*, with his final Instructions; who met *John* at *Dover*; represented to him the Superiority of the *French* Army, and convinced him that most of his Barons had promised to submit to *Philip*.

THIS staggered all the Resolution of the *English* Monarch: He had ill-treated his Subjects, and had Reason to distrust his Army. *Pandulph* perceived the Fears that had seized the Soul of *John*; he offered him the Protection of the Pope; and the King, at last, accepted it.

A. D. rather than give up his Crown to the King of France: But
1213. the Way he undertook to preserve it, rendered him unworthy to wear it.

THE Nuncio obliged the King to take an Oath, that he would obey the Pope in all Things. This gratified all the Ambition of *Innocent*, who insisted that *John* should resign his Crown into the Hands of his Nuncio, to make an Attonement for his Offences against God and the Church. Upon this Condition only the King was to receive Absolution: The Terror of the French Monarch, and the Disaffection of his own Subjects, entirely dispirited *John*; who, after nobly resisting the papal Power for four Years, was brought in a few Days to bow down his Neck with the greatest Ignominy. The King of England now prostrated himself like a mean Vassal at the Feet of a Romish Priest. The Monarch repaired to Dover Church; in the Presence of his People, he took off his Crown, disrobed himself of all the Ensigns of Royalty, and laid them all at the Feet of the Nuncio, who was elevated on a Throne, as the Representative of the Pope. After which, the King signed a Charter, whereby he resigned to the Pope, the Kingdom of England, and the Lordship of Ireland: Bound himself, as a Vassal of the Holy See, to pay seven hundred Marks annually for England, and three hundred for Ireland: Agreed, that if himself, or any of his Successors, denied the Submission to the Holy See, he should forfeit his Right to the Crown: And then did Homage to the Pope, in the Person of his Nuncio, who kept the Crown and Scepter five Days in his Possession.

THE King had been long disregarded by the People; but this infamous Submission made him entirely contemptible; while Pandulph left the Kingdom without taking off the Interdict, or giving the King Absolution. Though *John* had made his Peace with Rome, Philip was determined to invade England, notwithstanding the Pope required him to desist from the Expedition. He feared neither an Excommunication against his Person, nor an Interdict against his Kingdom: For his real Motive was Ambition, though the Pretence was Religion. But the

the *English* Fleet, commanded by the Earl of *Salisbury*, A. D. entirely defeated the *French* Fleet on the Coast of *Flanders*; ¹²¹³ which protected *England* from this Invasion; as so fatal a Loss blasted all the grand Projects of the *French* Monarch, and obliged him to return to *Paris*, extremely mortified to relinquish an Undertaking which had cost him Sixty Thousand Pounds in the Preparations.

THE Courage of the *English* King was so suddenly raised by this Victory, that he resolved to carry the War into *France*, for the Recovery of his lost Dominions: But just as he was ready to embark at *Portsmouth*, the Barons sent him Word, they could not attend him, unless he was first absolved from his Excommunication. However, he was soon absolved by Cardinal *Langton*, and resumed his Design of invading *France*; though the Barons refused to attend him; pretending, that they had spent all their Money.

THE disappointed Monarch formed a Resolution to chastise the Disobedience of his Barons; who also renewed their Confederacy, to obtain the Re-establishment of their ancient Privileges; which the King at his late Absolution, as well as at his Coronation, had sworn to restore to his Subjects. This was the first Confederacy made in *England*, for the Defence of the national Interest against the regal Power: But the King threw himself under the Protection of the Pope; and, more servilely than before, made a second Resignation of his Crown to the Legate of *Rome*, who took off the Interdict, after it had lain six Years upon the Kingdom.

JOHN, to his eternal Infamy, thus protected by the papal Authority, invaded *France* with a numerous Army, ¹²¹⁴ and reduced *Poitou*; while *Philip* was employed in the Low-Countries against the Emperor and the Earl of *Flanders*. Prince *Lewis*, the Son of *Philip*, raised an Army to oppose the *English*; and, *Philip* having gained the famous Battle of *Bovines* in *Flanders*, *John* demanded a Truce, which was made for five Years; after this he returned to *England*, to encounter more Dangers at Home, than he met with Abroad.

A. D. THE Charter granted by *Henry the First* contained the
1214. Liberties enjoyed by the People of *England*, during the Dominion of the *Saxon Kings*. These Liberties had been violated by his Successors, and *John* had not taken one Step towards their Restoration: Therefore, the Barons resolved to demand in a Body the Renewal of this Charter; and, in Case of Necessity, to compel the King to comply with their constitutional Request.

ALL Distinctions between the *Saxon* and *Norman Names* were now abolished, and the Name of *Englishmen* was universally adopted by the Descendants of the *Norman Conquerors*, who kept firm Possession of *England*, while they lost their ancient Seat of *Normandy*. The *Normans* gradually put on the *English Genius*, wholly addicted to Liberty, and wanted to have the *Saxons Laws* revived by all the Kings since the *Conqueror*; which the People of the *Saxon Blood* were intitled to by Birth, and those of the *Norman Pedigree* by Compact.

A. D. THE King had no Allies Abroad, and was ill-beloved
1215. at Home. The Barons expected that the common People would join them in the Defence of their common Interests, and they took this favourable Opportunity to demand the Restoration of their Liberties. They assembled in a Body, and came to the King at *London*; demanding the Re-establishment of the Laws of *Edward the Confessor*, and the Renewal of the Charter of *Henry the First*. The King put them off for a Time; which being elapsed, the Barons took the Field at *Stanford*, with a powerful Army, consisting of 2000 Knights, besides other Horse and Foot. The King was at *Oxford*, where they sent him a Memorial of the Laws and Customs, which they wanted to have restored: But *John* swore, in a violent Rage, "He never would grant his Subjects such Liberties as would make himself a Slave." The Consequence of this was a Civil War, which bathed *England* in Blood; till the Genius of the Nation, and the Spirit of Liberty, prevailed over the Obstinacy of the King, and the Force of Tyranny.

THE Barons, finding their legal Measures of no Effect, took to their Arms; electing *Robert Fitz-Walter* for their

their General, whom they stiled *the Marshal of the Army A. D. of God, and of holy Churcb.* They seized Bedford, entered 1215. London, and besieged the King in the Tower; who found himself deserted by the neutral Lords, as they now espoused the common Cause of the Kingdom. The King therefore complied, when he could not resist; and it was agreed that he should meet the Barons, on a certain Day in *Runnemead*, or the Mead of *Council*, between *Staines* and *Windsor*, to conclude this Affair.

THE King and the Barons accordingly met, on the fifth of June, in *Runnemead*, where Treaties concerning the Peace of the Kingdom had been frequently held among the *Saxons*. It was at this Place, that the Barons obtained the sacred *Charter of thcir Liberties*, called *Magna Charta*; as also the *Charter of the Liberties of the Forest*: From which Time, these two Charters have been the Foundation of the *English Liberties*; notwithstanding the Endeavours of *John* himself, and some of his Successors, to get them annulled: For these Charters were esteemed the Palladium of the *British Constitution*; and the People were so tenacious of their recovered Rights, that they brought one Monarch to the Block, and caused another to abdicate the Throne, rather than suffer these Charters to be violated by any arbitrary Proceedings.

THE King intended not to bind himself with Chains of Parchment; and, though he had ratified these Charters with a solemn Oath, he could not rest till he had freed himself from a Yoke, which to him seemed intolerable. The Pope had lately offered the Crown of *England* to the first Person who could conquer it; and the King had now offered the Estates of his Barons to any Foreigners who would assist him to reduce them to his Power. The Pope annulled the two Charters, absolved the King from his Oath, and enjoined the Barons to renounce what they had extorted from their Sovereign. In the mean Time, great Numbers of Foreigners were raised in *Flanders* and *France*, all Soldiers of Fortune, who recollecting that *William the Conqueror* won the Kingdom by such Assistance, and were ready to venture their Lives to gain an Estate: Great Numbers of them arrived at *Dover*: But

Hug^b

A. D. Hugh de Boves, with 40,000 of these Adventurers, perished in the Sea.

THE King divided this Army of foreign Troops into two Bodies, which ravaged the whole Kingdom in a mercileſs Manner. The Barons, instead of recovering their Liberties, beheld their Estates plundered by Foreigners; which cause^d them to apply for Assistance to the King of France, promising the Crown to his Son Lewis, if he freed them from the Tyranny of John. Philip wanted only an Opportunity to invade England, and sent his Son with 700 Ships to assist the Barons. The French Troops landed at Sandwich, and took Rochester, while John retired to Winchester; having prevailed on the Pope to excommunicate both the French Prince and the English Barons. But the Barons swore Fealty to Lewis, and he swore to restore them their ancient Privileges.

A. D.
1216. THE King was deserted by some of his Mercenaries; so that the Prince besieged Dover, while the Barons invested Windsor: After which, the whole Country was ravaged by both Parties; but they came to no Engagement. The King expected the Barons would be insolently treated by the French, and return to their Obedience: He was right in his Conjecture; but, before he could extricate himself out of his Troubles, he died of a violent Fever, occasioned by Grief and Fatigue, at Newark, in Nottinghamshire, on the eighteenth of October, in the fifty-first Year of his Age, and the seventeenth of his Reign: Being buried at Worcester.

IF this Monarch had many Vices, he sufficiently suffered for them in his Life; though the Monkish Writers persecuted his Memory after Death. His Love of Pleasure made him commit many Acts derogatory to his Honour: He was tyrannical in Prosperity, but dejected in Adversity: He lost his Provinces abroad; but his Attention to maritime Affairs defended his Coasts at Home. His Reign shews us the sad Effects of violated Faith, and arbitrary Oppression: But it is no great Credit to Prerogative, that this King, who had no very good Title, unless by Election, was the first Vindicator of it in a violent Manner. However, Speed imagines, " That if his Reign

" Reign had not fallen out in the Time of so turbulent
 " a Pope, such ambitious neighbouring Princes, and
 " such disloyal Subjects; nor his Story into the Hands of
 " exasperated Writers, he had appeared a King of as
 " great Renown as Misfortunes."

KING John ordained the legal Assize of Bread; instituted the present Forms of civil Government in London, and most other Cities in the Kingdom; he was the first who coined sterling Money; he established the English Laws in Ireland; and gave the Cinque Ports the Privileges they enjoy at this Day.

By his Queen, *Isabella of Angouleme*, he had Issue Henry his eldest Son, who succeeded him; and *Richard*, who was afterwards King of the Romans, born in 1208: *Joan*, his eldest Daughter, was married in 1223 to *Alexander* King of Scotland; *Eleanor*; and *Isabella*, married in 1235 to *Frederick* the second Emperor of Germany. He had also four illegitimate Sons; and a natural Daughter named *Joan*, who married *Llewellen the Great*, Prince of North Wales.

Arthur, of Bretagne, claim'd the Crown by Right;
 But *John* posses'sd it by superior Might.
A War ensu'd: Young *Arthur* Captive lies;
 And cruelly, by *John*, his Nephew dies:
 While *Normandy* is made the *Gallic Prey*,
 And never more submits t *England's Sway*.

The *Papal Pride* was now in *England* shewn;
 And meanly *John* surrenders up his Crown:
The Romish Nuncio sees the prostrate King
 Beneath his Feet: But *England* scorn'd the Thing?
 Her Barons glow'd with *Freedom's sacred Fire*;
 Their Country's Glory did their Breasts inspire:
 They su'd in Peace, then nobly fhone in Arms;
 And *Civil Rage* sent forth her wild Alarms;
 Till *English Heroes* *English Freedom* won,
 And the GREAT CHARTER bles'd each *English Son*.
Lov'd Era! sacred Bulwark of our Laws!
 Oh, never more may *England* have a Cause,

To call her free-born Sons, those Rights to save,
Which this Great Charter to their Country gave.

VIII. HENRY III, surnamed of Winchester,
the twenty-eighth King of England, and the
eighth from the Norman Conquest.

A.D. 1216. EITHER the People of *England* had some legal Rights before the Conquest, or not: And if they had, which must be allowed, it was Time to endeavour for their Restoration. If *William* the First was an Intruder, and came in by Force of Arms only, he was but a successful Usurper; and the People, being under a Force, could not lose their Rights: If he came in with Pretence of Title, Title continued them in their Rights; and either Way was justifiable. From this important Period of the *English* History, we may discover the promised Land of Liberty, as from Mount *Pisgah*: “we view the more than *Egyptian* Bondage from which the Nation was delivered, and the more than *Roman* Privileges to which she became intitled.” Yet the Wax was hardly cold, when he who granted this sacred Charter, wanted to cancel it; and, as Sir *Edward Coke* observes, his Successors also aimed at the Revocation of this Charter, and that of the Forests.

IN the Reign of *Henry* the Third, may be perceived how the Irregularities of a Father or Predecessor, involve the Son and Successor in a Remainder of Troubles, and entail its Misfortunes upon the Nation. *John* had by his Will appointed *Henry* his Successor: But though the young Prince was only twelve Years of Age, the Earl of *Pembroke* got him unanimously crowned at *Gloucester*, on the twenty-eighth of *October*, by the Bishops of *Winchester* and *Bath*, in the Presence of the *Romish* Legate, as the Archbishop of *Canterbury* was then at *Rome*. The usual Oath was administered to the young Prince; after which,

which, the Legate caused him to do Homage to the Holy A. D. See. The Earl of *Pembroke* was appointed Regent, 1216. during the Minority; and the Barons preferred their natural Allegiance to *Henry*, before their artificial Obligations to *Lewis*: So that the Affairs of the latter suddenly declined, at the Time they seemed to be the most prosperous. The Pope renewed the Excommunication against the Prince of *France*, and a Truce was concluded during the *Christmas* Holidays; when *Lewis* held a Parliament at *Oxford*, and the Regent another at *Cambridge*.

THE Truce was prolonged to *Easter*; after which a Body of the *French*, commanded by the Earl of *Perche*, undertook the Siege of *Lincoln Castle*, and the Regent was determined to relieve the Besieged. The Citizens were in the *French* Interest, and the *French* were in Possession of the City: But the Earl of *Pembroke* threw a Reinforcement into the Castle, then stormed the City, slew the *French* General with most of his Troops, and gave the Soldiers Liberty to plunder the Citizens.

THE *French* Prince sent for a Reinforcement from A. D. *France*: But those Troops were intercepted, and destroyed 1217. by the *English* Fleet. This obliged *Lewis* to think of a Peace, and it was granted by the Regent, whose sole Aim was to put the young King in the peaceable Possession of the Crown. The Treaty was concluded on the eleventh of *September*, in an Island in the *Thames*, near *Staines*; by which it was stipulated that the City of *London* should enjoy her ancient Privileges: That all the *English* who took up Arms against King *John*, should swear Fealty to King *Henry*: That *Lewis* should deliver up all Places in his Possession in *England*, and endeavour to restore what his Father had taken from King *John* in *France*.

UPON the Conclusion of this Treaty, *Lewis* returned to *France*, and *Henry* made a publick Entry into *London*; where he was received with great Splendour, and universal Acclamations of Joy. Thus, by the prudent Management of the Regent, the vanquished Barons obtained more solid Advantages than they could have expected from

A. D. from a Victory; because, the latter would have subjected them to a foreign Power, and perhaps beyond all Redress; as the French on this Occasion, might have kept a longer Footing in *England*, than the English did afterwards in *France*, when Henry the sixth of *England* was acknowledged King of that Country.

A. D. 1218. THE King of *Scotland*, and the Prince of *Wales*, were included in this Treaty; the former of which came to *Northampton*, and paid *Henry* Homage for the Fees he held in *England*. The Regent then ordered the Charters of King *John* to be observed, and died, to the inexpressible Grief of the People; being succeeded, as Regent, by Peter des Roches, Bishop of *Winchester*; and Hubert de Burgh was appointed chief Justiciary of *England*.

A. D. 1220. THE Death of the Regent, renewed the Calamities of the Kingdom. The Earl of *Albemarle* acted like a petty Sovereign, or rather like a Tyrant, in his Castles of *Roxburgh* and *Bibam*: But, after making a strong Defence, he was pardoned, on account of his great Services done to King *John*: Which was a fatal Precedent, as it encouraged other Barons to commit the same Fault, without Dread of Punishment.

A. D. 1222. HUBERT de BURGH married the eldest Sister to the King of *Scotland*; but, instead of treading in the Steps of the late Regent, he soon rendered himself odious to the People. About this Time, a Quarrel happened between the Citizens of *London*, and the Inhabitants of *Westminster*: But it was soon appeased; when Hubert ordered some of the Ringleaders to be immediately hanged, cut off some of their Hands, while others had their Noses and Ears cut off: Which was contrary to the Tenor of *Magna Charta*, whereby every Man was to be tried by his Peers.

A. D. 1223. THE Parliament requested the King that the Charter of Liberties might be maintained; and though one of the Courtiers said, it was unreasonable to desire the Execution of a Charter extorted by Violence, *Henry* ordered the Charters of the King his Father to be strictly observed. Had he always continued in this Disposition, it would have protected the Peace of his Kingdom, and promoted his

his own Felicity, for want of which, both were afterwards disturbed.

A. D.
1223.

THE Justiciary obtained a Bull from the Pope, declaring the King of Age: The Barons disregarded the Bull: But Hubert, by an ungenerous Stratagem, prevailed on some of the Nobles to surrender up their Castles to the Crown; which made himself detested, and the King disliked.

LEWIS the Eighth of France succeeded his Father A. D. Philip Augustus; and, instead of restoring the conquered Provinces to England, he took the Advantage of the Minority of its King by leading an Army into Saintonge; under no better a Pretence for breaking the Peace, than that Henry, as Duke of Guienne, was not afflissing at his Coronation. The Parliament of England granted their King a Fifteenth to oppose the French; and the King again ordered the Charters to be executed. An Army was sent into Guienne, under the Command of Prince Richard and the Earl of Salisbury, who made some Progress; but were stopped by the Pope, who ordered all Christian Princes not to give any Disturbance to the French King, as he had engaged to command a Crusade against the Albigenses, a persecuted Sect of Reformists, whom the Pope stiled Heretics, and against whom he first erected the Bloody Inquisition.

A. D.
1224.

A. D.
1225.

THE King of England was now declared to be of full Age, by his Parliament: But he began his Majority by an Act of Injustice, obliging all those who had Charters to renew them, in Imitation of the Example set him by his Uncle Richard the First; not considering, that all unjust Methods invented by Princes to extort Money from their Subjects, are so many inexhaustible Springs of Oppression; as Successors seldom fail to follow such unconstitutional Precedents.

A. D.
1226.

HUBERT now endeavoured to render the King abfolute; who began to discover such Principles of Oppression and Tyranny, as afforded a terrible Prospect for the future: He exacted large Sums of Money on the People; and, entirely to alienate their Affections, he annulled the two sacred Charters granted by his Father; pretending he was

A. D.
1227.

A. D. was not obliged to stand to what he had promised during 1227. his Minority. The Barons, assisted by Prince *Richard*, took up Arms; but the Prince was reconciled to his Brother, and the Confederacy was dissolved.

A. D. *GREGORY* the Ninth was now in the papal Chair; 1228. and, on the Death of *Langton*, he appointed *Richard le Grand*, Chancellor of *Lincoln*, to fill the archiepiscopal Dignity of *Canterbury*: He also exacted a Tenth from the Clergy; and the King was afraid of opposing him: For they stood by each other, whenever the Business was to extort Money from the People.

A. D. *HENRY* now prosecuted his Design of recovering by 1229. Arms the Provinces taken from his Father: But if he had done this sooner, he might have been more successful; as *France* had been lately embroiled in civil Dissentions, which were now accommodated. He set sail from *Portsmouth*, with a numerous Army, and landed in *Bretagne*; where he employed himself in such a Manner as shewed his little Inclination for War. The Entertainments and Diversions in the Camp, made it seem, as if he and his Army left *England* only for a Journey of Pleasure; to which he shamefully returned, after he had spent all his Treasure, and the *French* were approaching towards *Bretagne*; though the Earls of *Chester* and *Pembroke* defended that Duchy with a small Body of Troops.

A. D. *HENRY*, on his Return to *England*, found he could 1231. not prevail upon the People to continue that War which he had so badly begun: Therefore he renewed his Exactions, and made an unsuccessful Attack upon the Prince of *Wales*. But he was now sensible of the bad Counsel and Conduct of the Justiciary, whom he deprived of his Dignity, and sent to the Castle of the *Devizes*.

A. D. THE Bishop of *Winchester* was now the royal Favourite; who also thought of governing with an absolute Power. He was jealous of the Power of the Barons, and prevailed upon the King to send for about 200 Knights from *Gascony* and *Poitou*, on whom he conferred the most considerable Employments, to the great Detriment of the noble Families in *England*. The Barons were exasperated with these Procedures; they formed a Confederacy;

federacy; and threatened to elect a new King, if *Henry A. D.* removed not from his Person and Councils, the Bishop of 1233. *Winchester*, and the Foreigners: But the King ordered the Estates of the Barons to be plundered.

THE Earl of *Pembroke*, finding the Barons were hurt by their own Dissentions, retired into *Wales*; where he was joined by the degraded Justiciary *Hubert de Burgh*, and was too formidable for the King. However, by a Stratagem laid by the Bishop of *Winchester*, the Earl went over into *Ireland*, and lost his Life by Assassins.

THE Pope having appointed *Edmund*, Canon of *Salisbury*, to fill the See of *Canterbury*; the new Archbishop soon 1234. prevailed upon the King to disgrace his Prime Minister, and the favourite Strangers: After which, *England* felt a State of Tranquility, and *Henry* married *Eleanor*, second Daughter of *Raymond Earl of Provence*. But the bad Conduct of *Henry* began to revive, which drew upon him the Contempt of his Subjects; and this Contempt proved very prejudicial to him with Respect to foreign Princes: Though *Llewellyn*, or *Lewellyn*, Prince of *Wales*, did Homage to him for his Dominions.

SIMON de MONTFORD, a Frenchman, now be- *A. D.* came the principal Confident to the King; who gave 1237. him his Sister in Marriage: But he afterwards proved his greatest Enemy. The Barons apprehended the Influence of Foreigners was reviving, and compelled the King to redress their Grievances: While the Pope sent a Legate to fleece the English Flock, which he did to the very Bone.

As the French had taken Possession of Part of *Poitou*, *A. D.* *Henry* renewed the War, with the Hopes of recovering it 1242. all: But, though assisted by the Earl of *Marche*, he was defeated at *Tailleberg*; and lost all *Poitou*, before *Lewis* granted him a Truce for five Years, which even then he would not grant unless *Henry* paid him 5000*l.* yearly. On his Return to *England*, he extorted great Sums from the *Jews*, and spent it as lavishly; for at one Entertain- *A. D.* 1243. ment he had 30,000 Dishes. The Parliament, tired of his Oppression, were taking Measures to deprive him of the Administration of Affairs; but he prorogued the Parliament

A. D. liament, and left the Clergy to the Mercy of a new 1243. bloodsucking Nuncio from *Rome*, who exacted many Impositions upon the Clergy; though the Barons obliged him to quit the Kingdom, and complained of their Grievances to a General Council assembled at *Lyons*. Most of the Church Benefices were bestowed on *Italian Ecclesiastics*, the yearly Value of whose Incomes amounted to 60,000 Marks; which was a Sum exceeding at that Time the whole Revenue of the Crown. But the Pope for several Years continued to oppres the *English Clergy*; and was vainly opposed by the Laity.

A. D. THE King was now upbraided by his Parliament, for 1248. his immoderate Kindness, and excessive Liberalities to Foreigners; for his Contempt of his native Subjects; as also his Negligence in encouraging Trade, and protecting Merchants, of whom he even exacted illegal Impositions. But the King dissolved the Parliament, for Fear they should proceed to more vigorous Resolutions. He pretended to be under an indispensible Neceffity of making War against *France*; and, after violently extorting Money from some of his Subjects, meanly endeavoured to borrow more from others: He even sold his Plate and Jewels to the Citizens of *London*: But the People knew that the King was strictly forbid by the Pope to disturb the Dominions of the *French Monarch*, who was now in the *Holy Land*; and therefore they refused to lend him Money. Henry then pretended, that he would go and wage War against the *Saracens of Palestine*; demanded an Aid to enable him to undertake the Expedition: But this was refused by the Parliament; and the King raised large Sums by making Inquisition in all the Counties concerning Trespasses upon the Royal Forests.

A. D. 1252. *SIMON de MONTFORD*, now created Earl of *Leicester*, had suppressed a Rebellion in *Guienne*; but the *Gascoyns* accused him of several Misdemeanors; and the Earl came over to *England* to be tried by his Peers. Upon his Trial, the King called him a Traitor: But the Earl told him, "he lied; and, were he not a King, he would make him eat his Words." Perhaps, this is the only Instance of a Subject giving his Sovereign the Lie to his Face.

Face: Yet the King became reconciled to the Earl, and A. D.
sent him Governor again to *Guienne*. 1252.

THIS Affront from the Earl of *Leicester* was not the only Thing that disturbed the King: For having demanded a Subsidy of the Clergy, they refused it; upbraiding him in very harsh Terms for his Extortions, Tyranny, Nonperformance of Promises, and Breach of Oaths. The Citizens of *London* resented an Innovation upon their Privileges, as the King commanded them to shut up their Shops during *Westminster* Fair, which continued fifteen Days. And the Nation in general was exasperated to see him absolutely governed by Foreigners, to whom he was so profuse in his Favours, that the annual Income enjoyed by them amounted to 70,000 Marks, when the Revenue of the Crown scarce exceeded a third Part of that Sum; and *Mansel*, one of his Favourites, enjoyed at one Time seven hundred Ecclesiastical Preferments.

THE King of *Castile* raised an Insurrection in *Guienne*, A. D. and the King of *England* demanded a Subsidy of the Parliament to suppress it: But they would not grant it, till he promised them to observe the Charters granted them by his Father. Accordingly an Assembly was convened in *Westminster* Hall, at which were present all the Lords spiritual and temporal, with lighted Tapers in their Hands. The Archbishop of *Canterbury* denounced a terrible Curse against those who should oppose the Observance of the two Charters, violate the Laws, or alter the Constitutions of the Kingdom. After which, the Charters were read aloud, and confirmed by the King; who kept his Hand on his Breast, during the whole Ceremony, to shew that he sincerely consented to what was pronounced. This done, every one threw down his Taper on the Ground, and wished, *that those who violated the Charters might smoke thus in Hell!*

THE King laid out in the Preparations for the War in *Guienne* the Money granted by the Parliament for the Voyage to the *Holy Land*. He assembled an Army at *Portsmouth*, and landed at *Bourdeaux*. The *Gascoyns* were soon subdued; and the King of *Castile* married *Eleanor* his Sister to Prince *Edward*, the eldest Son of the King of *England*,

A. D. *England*, who granted the Prince the Sovereignty of *Guine*
1253. *Ireland*, and *Wales*.

A. D. ON the Return of *Henry* to *England*, the Pope offered
1254. the Crown of the *Two Sicilies* for Prince *Edmund* his second
 Son; and *Henry* accepted the Offer: Though the Crown
 belonged to *Conradin*, the Son of *Conrade* Emperor of
Germany, and was never wore by *Edmund*. However, *Henry*
 projected the Conquest of *Sicily*, and raised great Sums for
 the Expedition: But it was easy to perceive, that he was
 engaging in an Undertaking, which all the ready Money
 in the Kingdom would not suffice to accomplish. The
 Pope only granted *Sicily* to impoverish *England*; for *Henry*
 could use no Means in order to raise Money, but what
 the Pope readily approved: The Clergy were obliged to
 pay Money they had not borrowed, and to the Payment
 of which they were bound without knowing any Thing
 of the Matter.

A. D. IN this unfortunate Reign, it seems as if a Confluence
1257. of malignant Influences met in *England*, to impoverish
 the Nation. Prince *Richard*, Brother to *Henry*, was
 elected King of the *Romans*; and he took the immense
 Sum of 700,000*l.* into *Germany* to support his Election:
 While the King amassed 950,000 Marks for the *Sicilian*
 Expedition. The People were too grievously oppressed
 not to complain of the King; the Clergy were too severely
 treated not to murmur against the Pope; and the
 Barons were too much neglected not to think of humbling
 the Pride of Foreigners. Solemn Oaths could not bind
 this *Proteus* King; more violent Measures were necessary;
 and the Barons undertook to reform the Government
 themselves; though the King promised to join with them
 in this Reformation.

A. D. ACCORDINGLY a Parliament was held at *Oxford*, where
1258. twenty-four Commissioners were chosen, twelve for the
 King, and twelve for the Barons, to draw up the Articles
 of the intended Reformation; *Simon de Montford* Earl of
Leicester being President of the Council; and this is sup-
 posed to be the first Time that the Representatives of the
 Commons were admitted to sit in Parliament. The Com-
 missioners drew up six Articles, whereby it was agreed that
 the

the King was to confirm the Great Charter, to let the A. D. public Officers be chosen by the Commissioners, to deliver 1258. to them the Custody of his Castles, and to hold three Parliaments annually. The Parliament approved of, and the King assented to these Articles; which were called, *The Statutes or Provisions of Oxford.* The Prerogative was now bounded by Law; and if *John* lost himself by too vigorously opposing the Pope; *Henry* was lost by too servilely making himself his Slave. The Foreigners quitted the Kingdom, when they were thus deprived of their Power; and the Barons not only swore to stand by the Provisions of *Oxford* with their Lives and Fortunes, but also passed an Act for the perpetual Banishment of the Foreigners.

THE unfortunate *Henry* found himself stripped of all A. D. his Authority in *England*; and also renounced all his Pre- 1260. tensions on *Normandy* and *Anjou*, in Favour of *Lewis* of *France*. But though he had no great Spirit, he could not submit to the Loss of his Authority: He therefore got the Pope to absolve him from his Oath concerning the *Oxford* Provisions, told the Parliament that he would no longer regard these Articles, and took Refuge in the Tower of *London*.

THE Barons were determined to compel the King to A. D. the Observance of the *Oxford* Provisions, and every Thing 1262. tended to a Civil War; when the Barons agreed to moderate these Articles, and the King to confirm them after their Alteration. But this Tranquility was short; for the A. D. Barons resolved to maintain the *Oxford* Provisions by 1263. Arms, assembled their Troops, and appointed the Earl of *Leicester* their General.

THE King promised to confirm the Provisions; he broke this Promise; and then the Barons began in Earnest to open the War. The Earl of *Leicester* took Possession of *London*, when *Henry* submitted to refer all their Differences to the King of *France*, who declared the Provisions of *Oxford* to be null and void: Upon which the Barons renewed the War. The King gained several Advantages over the Barons; took many Places, and attempted to seize *London*: But the Citizens offered him Battle; at

A. D. which he was so much surprized that he retired into
1263. Sussex.

A. D. THE Earl of *Leicester* followed the King, and both
1264. Armies encamped near *Lewes*; where the Barons found
him inflexible, and renounced their Fealty. This brought
on the Battle of *Lewes*, which was fought on the 14th of
May. The royal Army was commanded by the King,
his Son Prince *Edward*, and his Brother the King of the
Romans. The Barons Army was commanded by the Earl
of *Leicester*, *Nicolas Segrave*, the Earl of *Gloucester*, and
Henry de Montford, Son to the Earl of *Leicester*. The royal
Army was soon defeated; the two Kings made Prisoners;
and about 5000 Men killed on both Sides. A Negotia-
tion was set on Foot, and some Articles agreed upon,
called the *Mise*, or the *Agreement of Lewes*; whereby
Prince *Edward* and his Cousin *Henry*, were to remain as
Hostages in the Custody of the Barons, till all Things
were settled by Authority of Parliament.

THE Barons drew up a new Plan of Government,
whereby two Knights of each County, and one or two
Burgesses for each Borough, were to sit in Parliament, as
Representatives of the People. From whence many Writers
affirm, the original Right of Commons to sit in Parlia-
ment takes Date. The Parliament confirmed the Barons
Plan; appointed nine Lords to take upon them the Ad-
ministration of public Affairs; and compelled the King to
give his Consent. In the mean Time, Queen *Eleanor* col-
lected a numerous Army in *France*, to restore her Husband
by Foreigners: But they were detained so long by con-
trary Winds, that they disbanded.

A. D. THE Earl of *Leicester* behaved to the King like a Con-
1265. queror, and to the People like a King. He released
Prince *Edward* out of *Dover* Castle; but confined him
with the King; whom he took with him against the Earl
of *Gloucester*, who had taken up Arms against *Leicester*, as
he imagined he was aspiring to the Crown. Prince *Ed-*
ward escaped from *Leicester* at *Hereford*, and joined *Glou-*
cester; when he found himself at the Head of a numerous
Army. *Leicester* was obliged to retire, and his Son *Simon*
was defeated by the Prince near *Evesham* in *Worcestershire*,
where

where the Father was encamped; who also was defeated A. D. the next Day, and slain. Prince *Edward* obtained this 1265. complete Victory on the 4th of *August*; and restored the King to his Liberty, which he had lost fourteen Months before, at the Battle of *Lewes*. It is uncertain whether the Fate of *Leicester* was more worthy of Blame than of Pity: Though modern Writers stigmatize him with the Name of the *English Catiline*. The confederate Barons now felt the Revenge of their Monarch; and those who a little before were persecuted, became Persecutors in their Turn.

THE King gave Way to his Passion, and considered A. D. the Barons as Rebels: So that several of them assembled 1266. in the Isle of *Axholme* in *Lincolnshire*. Prince *Edward* was sent with an Army into those Parts, and obliged them to surrender: They were pardoned by the King; and Tranquillity was soon after promised to the Kingdom.

WHAT the Earl of *Gloucester* had done for the King, A. D. was not so much to enlarge the royal Power, as to prevent 1267. the Earl of *Leicester* from seizing it: But he now beheld the King and the Prince act with less Moderation in the Flow of their Prosperity. This gave the Earl great Concern; because, though Prince *Edward* had promised for himself and the King, to protect the Liberties of the Subject, the King was returning to his former Courses: which made the Earl think of opposing his Progress in Time. He retired to his own Estate on the Borders of *Wales*, where he made a League with *Llewellyn*, and some neighbouring Barons; who assembled an Army, and marched to *London*, while the King was on an Expedition against some Malecontents in the Isle of *Ely*.

THE Earl of *Gloucester* took Possession of the Tower of *London*, and then published a Manifesto, declaring he had taken up Arms, to obtain reasonable Terms for the Malecontents, who were then called the *Disinherited*. The King advanced towards *London*, and encamped at *Stratford*, within three Miles of the City: But *Gloucester*, finding he had relied upon uncertain Assurances, made his Peace with the King: After which, the Malecontents were reduced in the Isle of *Ely*; and the Troubles

A. D. that had for five Years tormented the Kingdom, were ex-
1267. tinguished.

A. D. PEACE being restored to the Kingdom, the King assem-
1268. bled a Parliament at *Marlborough*, where a Body of Sta-
tutes were made to reform the Abuses crept into the State
during the late Troubles. About this Time, another
Crusade was published, and Prince *Edward*, with several
of the Nobility, set sail for *Palestine*, where the Prince ter-
A. D. rified the Infidels; but he had like to have been murdered
1270. by one of their Assassins, who stabbed him in the Arm with
a poisoned Dagger; and it is affirmed that the Prince
owed his Life to the tender Love of *Eleanora* his Spouse,
who accompanied him in the Voyage, and sucked the
Venom out of the Wound.

A. D. As *Edward* had no Hopes of Supplies from *Europe*, he
1272. concluded a Truce for ten Years with the *Saracens*, and
set sail for *England*; but his Father died before his Ar-
rival.

HENRY was seized with a languishing Distemper on
his Return from *Norwich*, where he had been to suppress
a Tumult. He died at *London*, on the 20th of November,
1272, in the sixty-sixth Year of his Age, and the fifty-
sixth of his Reign; being buried in *Westminster-Abbey*.

He was of a middle Stature; strong, and well-set;
having one of his Eyes half closed.

If *Henry* received great Troubles from the Barons; they
had seen him, with great Patience, trample upon their
Privileges, for above forty Years. He had all the Avari-
cise of the *Norman*, and all the Lenity of the *Saxon* Line:
But he had the Courage of neither. His Misfortunes
arose from his Inconstancy, and were aggravated by his
Attachment to *Rome*. If the Revolt of the Barons proved
fatal to themselves, it was beneficial to their Posterity;
as it deterred the Successors of *Henry* from venturing to
revoke those Charters, to which the Nation is at this Day
indebted for all the Liberties and Privileges it enjoys.
But the Insincerity and Perfidy of the King obliged them
to defend their legal Rights by military Force.

HENRY had six Sons and three Daughters, by his
Queen *Eleanor*, Daughter of *Raymond Earl of Provence*,
and

and Great Grand Daughter of *Alphonso* the first King of *Arragon*. *Edward* the eldest Son, was born at *Westminster* the 28th of *June*, 1239, and succeeded to the Crown: *Edmund* Earl of *Lancaster*, was born the 26th of *January*, 1245: But *Richard*, *John*, *William*, and *Henry*, died in their Infancy. *Margaret* the eldest Daughter was born in 1241, and was married to *Alexander* the Third, King of *Scotland*, in 1251: *Beatrice* was born in 1242, and married to *John de Dreux*, Duke of *Bretagne*: And *Catherine* died young.

MANY Prodigies are recorded to have happened in this Reign: As, in 1233, four false Suns appeared round the true one; and two Dragons were seen fighting in the Air. In 1240, there was a great Battle of Fish at Sea, and eleven Whales were cast on Shore. In 1248, a terrible Earthquake was felt; with several other Miracles, and extraordinary Sights, mentioned by *Hollingshead*. But this Reign is most remarkable for the Introduction of the Commons into Parliament; nor should it be omitted, that in the Year 1245, the King rebuilt *Westminster-Abbey* in that magnificent Gothic Manner in which it now appears.

Winchester HENRY, rear'd by *Pembroke's* Care,
Promis'd to *England* an auspicious Heir.

Gladly the *French* relinquish'd what they held:
But *Pembroke* dy'd, and *England's* Peers rebell'd.
—Rebellion! No: They arm'd in *Freedom's* Cause;
They fought, they bled, to save their dying Laws.
The Sound of *Civil War* rung o'er the Land,
And *Freedom's* Champions made a glorious Stand:
The papal Infolence, the regal Pride,
They scorn'd; and in that manly Scorn they dy'd.
They fell: Yet, from their glorious Fall arose
That Liberty, which *England* only knows.
The People's Guardians fill'd up *Freedom's* Seat,
And form'd in Parliament a third Estate.
Blest Æra! now the *Constitution* grew
Immortal: Now the *Commons* Rights we view:

A glo-

A glorious Bulwark to support the Law,
To check tyrannic Kings, or factious Peers to awe.

*IX. EDWARD I, surnamed Longshanks,
the twenty-ninth King of England, and the
ninth from the Norman Conquest.*

HO W comes it to pass, that the wisest and most valiant of the *English* Monarchs were the greatest Friends to Liberty? As *Henry* the First and Second, *Edward* the First and *Edward* the Third, *Henry* the Fourth and Fifth, and *Queen Elizabeth*; who, victorious Abroad, obeyed at Home, and uncomelled, gave their Subjects the best and soundest Laws for their Glory, Happiness, and Security. Whereas the weakest and worst of the *English* Princes, such as *King John*, *Henry* the Third, *Edward* and *Richard* the Second, to whom Power was least to be trusted, desired it most, and invaded all the civil Rights of the People. The Reason of this is evident: A Prince truly brave, judges that his Enemies, not his Subjects, ought to feel his Valour, which is shewn not in civil, but in foreign Wars; and he who is truly wise, knows that the Constitution, and the inbred Reverence *Englishmen* bear to Sovereigns, invest them with as much Authority as is necessary for those who have no other Meaning than to govern well; but weak and wicked Princes affect arbitrary Rule, that they may commit Mischief more securely: Their Fears make them cruel, their Profusion brings them into Want, and Want throws them upon Oppression, which they think to maintain by Force. Misgovernment drives them from bad into worse Hands, till at last both the Prince, and such as he makes Use of, begin to think themselves unsafe, unless they can set up absolute Dominion, which from Time to Time has been attempted. But the Liberty of *England*, the more it has been shaken, has all along taken the deeper Root; while the Crown, instead of getting, has still lost Ground by these pernicious Councils. All which appears nowhere

where more conspicuous than in the Reign of *Henry the Third*; whose Weakness and Vices were made Amends for by the Abilities and Virtues of his Successor.

A PEOPLE that would continue free, must have such a Form of Government as is calculated not for Increase, but Preservation. Since the chief End of Government is Protection, wise Men in all their Councils, are to follow such a middle Course, that as the regal Authority should not be wound up so high as to be able to oppress: So, on the other Hand, that it is not reduced so low as to be unable to defend the People, which was their Case under the Government of the Earl of *Leicester*. But a good Patriot should desire to be no freer than the Laws of his Country make him, and such Freedom he ought always to assert: For as some Princes, by grasping at too great a Power, have lost their Crowns; so Subjects, by aiming at unbounded Liberties, have been reduced to Bondage.

To preserve a just Equipoise between the royal Prerogative and the civil Rights, the *English* Subjects obtained from one King their *Great Charter* of Liberty, and got it confirmed by all his Successors: Besides, to preserve the Constitution, and give a greater Security to the People, the Commons had now a Right to sit in Parliament; and, as they were the Representatives of the People, the People could safely intrust their Rights to the Care of their Constituents.

A DEMOCRACY, monarchical in the Administration, was the Government that generally prevailed in *Europe*. When the *English* and *French* came from *Germany* to people *Britain* and *Gaul*, the *German* Liberty, and moderate Sway, were transplanted with them: But still the Common Council had the principal Management of all weighty Affairs; for to that Policy had they also been educated. The *Saxon Wittenagemot* was altered by the *Norman Parliament* only in Name; their Form being the same. Parliaments have been the Basis of all the *Gothic* Governments from remotest Antiquity; they are to be traced by their Ruins in the Diets of *Germany*, the Cortez of *Spain*, and the Parliaments of *France*: But it is in *England* only,

that the ancient, generous, manly Government of *Europe* survives, and continues in its original Lustre and Perfection. The *English* Parliament was perfectly formed when *Edward the First* ascended the Throne: This good Prince so well settled it in his Reign, that there was an additional Law made to the Great Charter, whereby it was enacted, that no Tax should be levied upon the People without the Consent of the Commons.

BEFORE the Year 1265, the Parliament consisted of the Archbishops, Bishops, Abbots, Earls, and Barons, who all sat in Right of their Baronies: But there were the greater Barons, or the Kings chief Tenants, who held of him in *Capite* by Barony; and the lesser Barons, who held of the former by military Services in *Capite*. By granting the smaller Fees, and splitting the Baronies into smaller Tenures in Chief, in the Reigns of *Stephen*, *Henry the Second*, and *John*, Tenants in *Capite* or Barons were so multiplied, that a very unequal Representation of the Kingdom arose; these lesser Barons having an equal Share in the Legislature with the most potent. But by *Magna Charta*, all the great Barons were to be severally summoned to Parliament, and the lesser in general; by which Means these last were excluded from sitting in Parliament singly and in Person; but they elected two Persons for their Representatives out of their own Body, called, from the Tenure of their Lands, *Knights of the Shire*, who were chosen at the County Courts, only by these lesser Barons, or immediate Tenants of the Crown, till the eighth Year of *Henry the Sixth*, when all Freeholders, of forty Shillings a Year, had a Right to Vote at these Elections. The Burgesses were now elected by the Inhabitants of their respective Boroughs: And, to this Day, the *English* Parliament forms the Glory of the *English* Nation.

THUS far, it was proper to shew the Original of Parliaments; which, from the Time of *Edward the First*, form an interesting Part of the *English* History; and, from the twenty-second Year of his Reign, there is an uninterrupted Series of these national Assemblies: Though this important Matter has not been sufficiently represented by the *English* Historian s.—But now it is Time to enter upon

upon the glorious Reign of *Edward the First*; who found the Kingdom weakened by the ill Management of the two preceding Kings; but restored it to its former Splendor, by his own good Conduct: For he knew how to make himself beloved and respected by his Subjects, as well as dreaded by his Neighbours.

EDWARD was in the thirty-third Year of his Age A. D. when his Father died: But he was now on his Return ^{1272.} from *Palestine*, where, attended only with 1000 *English*-men, he struck a general Panic into the *Saracens*, who dreaded him as much as they had done his Great Uncle *Richard Cœur de Lion*. His Victory at *Evesham*, the Suppression of the *Ely* Rebellion, and his Clemency to the Rebels, made a lasting Impression on the Memories of the *English*, who held his rare Qualities in such Admiration and Esteem, as to be convinced that he well deserved to be their King, because he would restore the Peace and Tranquillity of the Kingdom. Prince *Edmund*, *Gilbert de Clare* Earl of *Gloucester*, and the Archbishop of *York*, were appointed Regents, and the Barons unanimously swore Fealty to him in his Absence; while the People shewed an extreme Impatience to see their new Sovereign, building on him alone all the Hopes of their future Happiness; nor were they disappointed.

EDWARD safely arrived at *Messina* in *Sicily*, where A. D. he was received by *Charles of Anjou* with all the Respect ^{1274.} due to his Merit and Dignity; who informed him of the Death of his Father. After visiting the Pope, the King of *France*, and settling his Affairs in *Guienne*, he arrived in *England*, with his faithful Queen, on the twenty-fifth of *July* 1274; and they were both crowned at *Westminster*, on the nineteenth of *August*, by *Robert Kilwardby* Archbishop of *Canterbury*. The Court of *England* was at this Time very splendid. The Coronation was performed in the Presence of *Alexander the Third*, King of *Scotland*, and his Queen, the Sister of *Edward*; the Duke of *Bretagne*, and all the Peers of the Realm: The Ceremony was so magnificent that five hundred Horses were let loose on that Occasion, which were liberally given to such as could catch them; and the new King entered upon his

274 A NEW HISTORY

A. D. Government with such universal Acclamations of Joy
1274. that the People forgot all the Hardships they had suffered
from the old one: Or at least they knew the Son would
rectify all the Defects of the Father.

EDWARD, immediately after his Coronation, made
strict Enquiry into the Affairs of his Kingdom; particu-
larly with Regard to the royal Prerogative, and Revenues
of the Crown: He regulated the Magistrates; and won
the Affections of his People, by granting the Statute of
Westminster, and confirming the Great Charter: So that
having composed the Troubles of *England*, he began to
revenge himself upon the Prince of *Wales*.

A. D. THE *Welch* still preserved their Independency, were go-
1276. verned by their own Princes, and frequently gave great
Trouble to the *English*: But *Llewellyn* became Vassal and
tributary to King *Henry* the Third; and his Successor,
whose Name was also *Llewellyn*, did Homage to the same
King for all *Wales*. However, the *Welch* Prince refused
to perform this Homage to King *Edward*, who resolved
to punish his Disobedience, proclaimed War against him,
and led an Army into *Wales*. *Llewellyn* retired to the
Mountains of *Snowdon* in *Carnarvonshire*, where he was
pursued by *Edward*, who reduced *Anglesea* with his Fleet;
and, after three Years, compelled *Llewellyn* to sue for
Peace, which was granted on very hard Terms.

A. D. *EDWARD*, on his Return to *London*, proved himself
1279. a *Justinian* in Peace, as well as a *Cæsar* in War. He set
about rectifying the Coin, which had been so much adul-
terated by the *Jews*, that he caused two hundred and
eighty of them to be put to Death, for this national
Crime. He also passed the Statute of *Mortmain*, to pre-
vent Estates from falling into dead Hands: Because, it
was plain, that, without such a Restraint, all the Lands
of the Kingdom would be in the Hands of the Clergy, if
People were still suffered to alienate their Estates to the
Church: But, to the general Joy of the People, this
Statute reformed that Abuse, as it forbid all Persons to
dispose of their Estates to Societies, which never die,
without express Consent from the King. However, he
was advised to an Act of Injustice, by issuing out Writs
of

of *Quo Warranto*, and obliging his Tenants to prove their A. D. Right to their Lands: But the Earl of *Warren* boldly said ^{1279.} he claimed his Estates by the Sword; which made the King desist from his Project; as he found there were still among the Barons, Persons as ready to defend their Rights, as in the Reigns of his two Predecessors.

THESE domestic Employments were interrupted by the A. D. Revolt of *Lewellyn*, who considered his Subjection as real ^{1281.} Slavery. He surprised the Lord of *Clifford* on the Frontiers, and defeated the Earl of *Surry*: So that *Edward* was obliged to march against him with a numerous Army. *Lewellyn* again took Refuge in the Mountains of *Snowdon*; but *Edward* blockaded him so strict in his Retreat, that the Welch Prince descended into the Plain; after which, he was defeated, and slain, near *Buel* in *Brecknockshire*. Some Letters in Cypher were found in his Pocket, by which it appeared he had great Friends in *England*; but *Edward* did not think fit to make a strict Inquisition; imitating herein the Conduct of *Cæsar*, when the Victory of *Pharsalia* put him in Possession of the Papers of *Pompey*, which he magnanimously burnt, rather than have the Mortification of discovering that some of his best respected Friends were among his private Enemies: But this Circumstance has been forgot by all our Historians.

LEWELLYN was inspired to take up Arms by the Ambition of his Brother *David*: But both of them lost their Lives, and their Country its Liberty. *Lewellyn* was told by a reputed Witch, that it was his Destiny to be carried through *London* with a Crown on his Head: The Prediction was as fatal to him as the Oracle was to *Cræsus*, and equally verified: For his Head was struck off from his dead Body, crowned with a Paper Diadem, pitched on a Stake, carried triumphally through *London*, and exposed to View on the Walls of the Tower of that City *. *David* was taken, sent to *Ruthin*, tried at *Shrewsbury*, condemned, and executed as a Traitor, with all the Circumstances attending that infamous Punis-

* See the Notes in *Roll's Cambria*, P. 21.

A.D. ment; his Head being fixed near that of his Brother; and
1281. his four Quarters sent to *York, Bristol, Winchester, and Northampton*. This was the first Example of punishing Treason in *England* with such Severity: which has been commonly continued.

WITH these Princes expired the Liberty of *Wales*, 405 Years after the Death of *Cadwallader*, who first retired with the *Britons* into this Country, and from whom it received its Appellation. They were descended from *Roderick the Great*, and from one of the most ancient Families in *Europe*: They died in endeavouring to recover and preserve the Independency of their Country: So that *Edward* may justly be censured for his Severity. Destitute of all Succours, without foreign Alliances, and without a naval Power, though possessed of *Milford-Haven*, the best Port in the World, the *Welch* had stood their Ground against the *Saxons, Danes, and Normans*: But now they lost their Liberty, after preserving it, in that little Corner of the Island, above 800 Years. However, they became one and the same Nation with the Conquerors; who considered them as Aliens till the 35th Year of *Henry the Eighth*, when they became intitled to the same Laws, and possessed of the same Privileges, as *Englishmen*: Besides, in this Prince, they had the Pleasure of seeing one of the Descendants of *Cadwallader*; his Father *Henry the Seventh*, being Son of *Edmund Tudor* Earl of *Richmond*, Son to *Owen Tudor* by *Katherine of France*, Widow of *Henry the Fifth*, which *Owen Tudor* sprung from an original Branch of the last King of the *Britons*.

A.D. *EDWARD* summoned a Parliament at *Ruthin*, where
1284. it was resolved, that *Wales* should be inseparably united to *England*: But some of the *Welch* Nobles told the King, he should never peaceably enjoy their Country, till they were governed by a Prince of their own Nation. This Declaration induced the King to send for his Queen, who was then very pregnant, to lie-in at *Carnarvon*, where she was brought To-bed of a Prince, whom the States of *Wales* acknowledged for their Sovereign: since which Time, the eldest Sons of the Kings of *England*, have bore the Title of Princes of *Wales*. *Edward* divided the Principality

Principality into six Counties; but *Henry the Eighth* in A.D. creased them to thirteen, as they now stand, excepting *Mon-* ^{1284.} *mouthshire*, since included among the Counties of *England*.

The *Welch* People have continued loyal Subjects to the *English* Kings: But, notwithstanding their Mixture with the *Romans*, their Connexion with the *Saxons*, their Intercourse with the *Danes*, and their Reduction by the *Normans*, they still retain their original Language, and their primitive Manners. No People in the World ever loved Liberty better none ever defended it more: This is their Glory; and for this they would be compassionated by every Lover of Freedom, if their Reduction by the *English* King had not conveyed to them the Liberties of the *English* People.

THE Conquest of *Wales*, and the Tranquillity of *Eng-* ^{A.D. 1285.} *land*, gave Happiness both to the King and the People; so that *Edward* went into *France*, leaving the Earl of *Pembroke* Regent of his Kingdom. He sollicited the Restitution of the Provinces taken from the Crown of *England* by the Predecessors of *Philip the Fair*, who was now King of *France*: But his Endeavours were ineffectual; though he preserved his Pretensions, to prosecute them at a more favourable Juncture. However, he reconciled the Kings of *Arragon*, and *Sicily*, who appointed him their Arbitrator.

AFTER an Absence of three Years in *France*, *Edward* A.D. returned to *England* in August 1289; where he punished ^{1289.} the Judges for suffering themselves to be corrupted with Bribes. He also banished the *Jews*, who were about 15000, for Usury, and for adulterating the Coin.

HAVING so happily subjected *Wales*, *Edward* thought of conquering *Scotland*. This Kingdom was now without a Sov'reign; for *Alexander the Third* died without ^{A.D. 1290.} Issue Male; and appointed his Grand Daughter *Margaret Princess of Norway*, his Successor. The King of *England* was Great Uncle to the young Princess, and thought of marrying her to his Son *Edward*: The Regents of *Scotland* consented, and the Marriage was resolved upon: But the Princess, in her Passage from *Norway*, was drove into the Isle of *Pomona*, one of the *Orcades*, where she died. As no Successor was appointed, many Factions were formed

A.D. 1290. med in Favour of the Pretenders to the Crown: But John Baliol, and Robert Bruce, divided almost all the Suffrages of the Kingdom; both of them having married the Descendants of David Earl of Huntingdon, and Brother to William King of Scotland. Their respective Claims were left to the Decision of the King of England, who summoned the States of Scotland at Norham in Northumberland, with an Intent to establish his Right of Sovereignty over Scotland, which at last became the principal Thing in Dispute.

A.D. 1291. THE States of Scotland met the King of England at Norham; where he demanded their Recognition of his Superiority and Dominion over their Kingdom: But they took so much Time to consider of this Demand, as shewed that they were not fully persuaded of their Subjection to the Crown of England. However, Edward had his Sovereignty acknowledged by Baliol, Bruce, and eight other Claimants of the Crown; who also agreed to put him in Possession of the Kingdom, that he might surrender it to such of the Candidates whose Title he approved: Besides, the Officers of the Kingdom swore Fealty to him, and the Candidates paid him Allegiance. Commissioners were then appointed for examining the Titles of the respective Claimants: When it appeared that Baliol was descended from the eldest Daughter of David Earl of Huntingdon; whereas Bruce sprung only from the second: So that the Commissioners decided the Controversy in Favour of Baliol; and, upon their Decision, Edward pronounced the definitive Sentence against Bruce and the other Claimants: In Consequence of which, he declared Baliol King of Scotland.

ELEANOR, the tender Consort of King Edward, died this Year of a Fever at Grantham in Lincolnshire: To whose Memory the King erected a Cross wherever the Corps rested in the Way to Westminster; as at Grantham, Lincoln, Stamford, Geddington, Northampton, Stony-Stratford, Dunstable, St. Albans, Waltham, and Charing.

A.D. 1292. BALIOL was crowned at Scone; and swore Fealty to Edward at Newcastle, paying him Homage, and acknowledging his Sovereignty over Scotland in very express and submissive

submissive Terms. But *Edward* was hardly possessed of his A. D. so much desired Sovereignty, when he made his Vassals 1292. feel the whole Weight of it: Though, instead of keeping them in Subjection, it served only to excite their Endeavours for recovering their Liberty. This Sovereignty had often been asserted by the Kings of *England*, and always denied by the Kings of *Scotland*; till *William* was taken Prisoner by *Henry* the Second of *England*, and did full Homage for his whole Kingdom to free himself from Captivity: But this Homage was not continued by the Successors of *William*, and *Richard* the Son of *Henry* entirely renounced it; so that the People of *Scotland* were exasperated with *Edward* for renewing it.

BEFORE *Edward* left *Newcastle*; he told *Baliol*, and a great Number of Lords of both Nations, " That he ^{A. D.} 1293. would call the King of *Scotland* to appear in *England*, whenever he thought convenient." He was as good as his Word; and soon after summoned *Baliol* to appear before him at *Westminster*, to answer to several Complaints made by different Persons. The King of *Scotland* found he was rather a Slave than a Vassal to the King of *England*, who obliged him to appear before the *English* Parliament, and answer to his Accusations as a private Person: But as he petitioned to consult his Parliament, his Request was granted.

BALIOL was extremely mortified, and sought to shake off his Yoke, The War which now broke out 1295. between *France* and *England* gave him a favourable Opportunity; he entered into Alliance with the *French* Monarch, obtained a Dispensation from the Pope to absolve him from his Oath to *Edward*, and declared he would be no longer his Vassal. Though *Edward* had lost *Guinne*, he deferred regaining it, and led his Army into *Scotland*, resolving to make a Conquest of that Kingdom: He also prepared a potent Fleet, divided into three Squadrons; and got *Bruce* to join him by offering him the Crown. He took *Berwick*, and defeated the *Scotish* King near *Dunbar*, who lost 20,000 Men in the Engagement, which put *Edward* in Possession of *Edinburgh*, *Stirling*, and all the considerable Places in general. So that, before the End of the Campaign,

A.D. Campaign, *Baliol* and the whole Nation had no other
1285. Remedy but to submit to his Mercy: When he obliged
 the King of *Scotland* to make a formal Resignation of his
 Kingdom to him, witnessed by the Barons, and attested
 by the Great Seal of *Scotland*.

A.D. 1296. THE Nobility and Officers of *Scotland* also swore Fealty
 to *Edward* at *Berwick*; who obliged them to surrender up
 all their Castles and fortified Places. He might easily
 have been crowned King of *Scotland*: But he intended to
 unite it to *England*, as he had done *Wales*, and make but
 one Kingdom of the whole Island of *Britain*. He sent
Baliol into *England*, confined him at first in the Tower of
London, and afterwards removed him to *Oxford*: He
 likewise imprisoned several of the Scotch Nobility; brought
 the Regalia, and the famous Stone on which the Inaugu-
 ration of their Kings was performed at *Scone*, into *Eng-*
land; burnt the public Records of the Kingdom; placed
English Garrisons all over the Country; left *John Warren*,
 Earl of *Surry* and *Suffex*, to command in *Scotland*; and
 returned in Triumph to *England*.

BUT *Edward*, while he was reducing *Scotland* by
 Force, lost his Dominions in *France* by Treachery. Peace
 had subsisted between the two Kingdoms since the Treaty
 made by *St. Lewis* and *Henry the Third*: But, on a pri-
 vate Quarrel between a *Norman* Pilot and an *English* Ma-
 riner, wherein the former was killed in a Port of *Guienne*,
 the War was renewed. The *French* Monarch prevailed
 upon *Edward* to surrender *Guienne*, promising to restore
 it, and conclude a Peace: But, as he found the *English*
 Monarch fully employed in *Scotland*, he refused the Re-
 storation of *Guienne*, and had it confiscated by his Parlia-
 ment. *Edward* sent his Brother Prince *Edmund* with
 some Forces, into *Guienne*, to act upon the defensive:
 But the Prince died at *Bayonne*, and the Earl of *Lincoln*
 succeeded him in the Command. This War is memo-
 rable only for a few Skirmishes, and the potent Confede-
 racy which *Edward* formed against the *French* Monarch;
 for the Emperor, and several Princes of *Germany*, the
 Dukes of *Brabant* and *Savoy*, the Earls of *Holland*, and
Flanders,

Flanders, were engaged in a League against France, by A. D. the great Sums with which Edward was to furnish them. 1296. But this Confederacy was of no Effect: So that Edward, A. D. after disobliging his Subjects of England by raising heavy 1297. Taxes upon them for this Expedition, and leading an Army of 50,000 Men into Flanders, found his Allies were bribed to the French Interest; therefore, he made a Truce with the French Monarch, and returned to England: Convinced how difficult it would be to recover by Force the Country lost by his Imprudence.

THOUGH Edward had conquered the Country of Scotland, he had not subdued the Hearts of its Countrymen; who bore with Impatience the Yoke imposed upon them by Violence. While the Scotch Nobility, divided by Factions, or adhering to the Conqueror, were riveting the Chain of Slavery upon the common People; William Wallace, the Glory of Scotland, rose up in its Defence. He was of no illustrious Family; but his great Love of Liberty, and his glorious Actions, have rendered his Memory dear to his Countrymen.

WHILE the English Monarch was in Flanders, this gallant Scotchman assembled a small Number of Troops, which soon increased to a formidable Army. He was so bold, and so sudden, in his Revolt, that the English were soon dispossessed of all the strong Places; and the Scotch declared Wallace Regent of the Kingdom.

THE English Monarch left the Decision of the Dispute A. D. with the King of France to the Arbitration of Pope Boni-1298. face the Eighth; and, having confirmed the Great Charter of England, advanced into Scotland at the Head of a powerful Army. Wallace met him at Falkirk, on the twenty-second of July, when a Battle ensued; notwithstanding the King had just before two of his Ribs broke by a Kick from his Horse. This Engagement was fatal to the Scotch, who lost most of their Army, and were for a long while unable to hold up their Heads. Wallace, with the Remnant of the Field, retired behind the Northern Fens, where it was impossible to follow him: But Edward retook all the Places of Strength, put them in a Posture of Defence, and returned to England.

THE

A.D. THE Jealousy which the Scotch Lords had entertained ^{1298.} of *Wallace* was one of the principal Causes of this Defeat: But, as this great Man acted only for the Interest of his Country, he resigned the Regency, and acted as a private Person. From this Time, *Robert Bruce*, Earl of *Carrick*, Son of the Candidate to the Crown, formed the Resolution of delivering *Scotland* from Slavery: But *Cummin* succeeded *Wallace* as Regent, though he had deserted him in the Field.

A.D. *EDWARD* was now married to *Margaret*, Sister to the ^{1299.} King of *France*; though the young Lady was only eighteen, and *Edward* was sixty Years of Age. By the Intervention of *France*, the unhappy King *Baliol* was released from his Confinement at *Oxford*, and committed to the Custody of some *French* Bishops. The *French* Monarch also prevailed upon the King of *England* to grant a seven Months Truce to the new Regent of *Scotland*, who took this Opportunity of inspiriting his Countrymen to make a generous Effort for the Recovery of their Liberty. A general Revolt ensued; the *English* Garrisons were unable to resist the Fury of the *Scots*; and they desired Leave to depart the Kingdom.

A.D. THE King of *England* was so much enraged, that he ^{1300.} entered *Scotland* the third Time, and a third Time subjected it to his Power. The *Scots* threw themselves under the Protection of the Pope, and obtained another Truce by the Mediation of *France*. During this Truce King *Edward* invested his eldest Son *Edward*, who was seventeen Years of Age, with the Principality of *Wales*, and Earldom of *Chester*: But he disregarded the Pretensions of the Pope, who asserted that the Kingdom of *Scotland* belonged to the Church of *Rome*; which was formally protested against by *John Earl of Warren*, and ninety-nine other Peers of *England*.

A.D. *EDWARD* appointed *John de Segrave* Governor of ^{1301.} *Berwick*, and Guardian of *Scotland*; who was defeated near *Ross*, five Miles from *Edinburgh*. This brought *Edward* a fourth Time into that unfortunate Kingdom: He had concluded a Peace with *France*, whereby he was restored to *Guienne*; and was now at Leisure to punish

the
Bal
as a
H
utn
him
the
Sco
lea

E
wi
th
th
H
to
a

sc
f
I
L

t

the Scotch more than ever, whose King, the unfortunate A. D. *Baliol*, lived upon his Estate in *Normandy*, and died there 1301. as a private Person.

EDWARD took with him so numerous an Army, that A. D. he met no Resistance in *Scotland*, and penetrated to the 1303. utmost Bounds of the Island. *Wallace*, indeed, harrassed him with a small Body of Men: But the Clemency of the King was now as prevalent as his Power; so that the Scotch readily submitted, and he returned to *England*, leaving *Scotland* under the Command of *Segrave*.

THE brave *Wallace* was betrayed into the Hands of the A. D. *English*, and sent to *London*, where *Edward* treated him 1304. with unpardonable Severity; making this great Hero suffer the Death of a base Traitor; though he well deserved the best Fate that could beset the most illustrious Man. However, there were many brave Men in *Scotland*, who took Refuge in impenetrable Places, ready to embrace any Opportunity for the Restoration of their Liberty.

EDWARD was now fully crowned with Peace; and A. D. so nobly exerted himself to bind his Subjects to the Ob- 1305. servation of his Laws, that he publickly imprifoned the Prince of *Wales*, for breaking into the Park of *Walter de Langton*, Bishop of *Litchfield* and *Coventry*. At the same Time, his additional Power instilled into him such arbitrary Principles, that he got the Pope to dissolve him from the Oath he had taken to observe the two Charters of Liberties. The People dreaded he was beginning to act like his Father: But the Troubles which broke out afresh in *Scotland*, prevented him from putting any arbitrary A&ts into Execution, if he had any such Intention.

EDWARD had promised to place *Bruce* on the Throne instead of *Baliol*; though his Prosperity seemed to disannul the Promise.

ROBERT BRUCE, Earl of *Carric*, bore Arms A. D. under *Edward* against his Country; but now he was deter- 1306. mined to oppose him, and endeavour to get the Crown for himself. He declared his Intentions to *John Cummin*, surnamed *the Red*, who promised to assist him, but betray- ed

A. D. ed his Design to *Edward*: However, *Bruce* succeeded; 1306. he stabbed *Cummin* in the Church of *Dumfries*, declared himself the Assessor of Liberty, was joined by great Numbers, and was solemnly crowned at *Scone*.

EDWARD was greatly exasperated with *Bruce*; he levied a great Army; sent Part of it under the Command of the Earl of *Pembroke* directly into *Scotland*, and assembled the rest himself at *Carlisle*. *Pembroke* defeated *Bruce*, in two Engagements, near *Perth*, and at *Dalree*: Upon which, *Bruce* secreted himself in one of the Western Islands; while *Edward* punished his Adherents with great Severity, causing three of his Brothers to be beheaded, imprisoning his Wife, and confiscating the Estates of his Friends.

A. D. THE English Monarch held a Parliament at *Carlisle*; 1307. when *Pierce Gaveston*, a Gentleman of *Gascogne* was banished the Realm, for corrupting the Prince of *Wales* by his dissolute Example of Life: The Prince swore never to recal him, and the Favourite swore never to return: Though their Oaths were afterwards broke by each, and the Breach of them was fatal to both. The Cares of *Edward* were also employed in securing the Possession of *Scotland*, by uniting it to *England*: But *Bruce* sallied out of his Retreat; collected another Army, defeated the Earl of *Pembroke*, and retook several Places.

EDWARD was surprized, and enraged: He assembled the finest Army *England* had ever seen, at *Carlisle*; and vowed he would destroy *Scotland* from Sea to Sea: But he was seized by a Distemper, which put an End to his Days, and all his Projects. After giving his last Orders to his Son, he caused himself to be carried by easy Journeys into *Scotland*; being desirous to die in a Country he had thrice conquered. His Sickness was increased by a Dissentery or Flux, and he died in the little Town of *Burgh upon the Sands* in *Cumberland*, on the 7th of July 1307, in the sixty-eighth Year of his Age, after reigning thirty-four Years, seven Months, and twenty Days: But his Body was removed to *Waltham*, and interred in *Westminster-Abbey*.

EDWARD

EDWARD was the first of that Name since the Conquest, and the fourth since *Egbert*. He was a great and glorious Prince; just in his Principles, noble in his Qualities: Remarkable both for Valour and Wisdom; being the bravest Soldier of his Age, and the best Legislator of his Family. He was beloved by his Subjects, and dreaded by his Enemies. The Conquest of *Wales* added Lustre to his Reign: But the Reduction of *Scotland* shewed his Ambition more than his Justice; as the *English* were obliged to relinquish their Projects, after Torrents of Blood spilt in the Quarrel. The Death of *Wallace* has loaded his Memory with Cruelty among Foreigners: But *Englishmen* must always hold him in Reverence for purifying their Laws, and firmly establishing their Constitution.

HE was taller than the Generality of Men by the Head. His Person was handsome, strong, and well-made; only his Legs were somewhat too long, from whence he was called *Long-Shanks*. His Hair was black, and his Eyes sparkling: His Strength prodigious, and his Activity great.

HE had two Wives. By *Eleanor of Castile*, his first Wife, he had four Sons, and nine Daughters; but *Edward the Second*, his Successor, was the only Son that survived him: *Eleanor*, his eldest Daughter married *Henry Duke of Bar*; *Joanna* was first married to *Gilbert de Clare Earl of Gloucester*, and afterwards to *Ralph de Monthermer*; *Margaret* was Wife of *John Duke of Brabant*; *Elizabeth* first married *John Earl of Holland*, and afterwards *Humphry Bobun Earl of Hereford*; but the other Daughters died young or unmarried. By *Margaret of France*, his second Wife, *Edward* had two Sons, and one Daughter: *Thomas de Brotherton*, the eldest, was Earl of *Norfolk*, and Marshal of *England*; *Edward* was Earl of *Kent*; but *Eleanor* died in her Infancy.

IN 1277 a general Earthquake happened in *England*; and in 1290 Wheat was so cheap as to be sold for Twelve-pence a Quarter, equal to four Shillings of the present Money; though Wheat is now generally sold for about forty Shillings the Quarter.

O'er

O'er Syria's Plains the routed Pagans fled,
 When valiant Edward there his Squadrons led.
 To him the Britons yield their Cambrian Soil:
 Thrice-conquer'd Scotland crown'd his martial Toil.
 In War victorious; wife and just in Peace;
 He gave to England's Happiness Increase:
 Retriev'd her Glory, spread her antient Fame;
 Secur'd her Laws, improv'd her civil Frame:
 Then full of Honours, full of Years, he dy'd;
 With England's Genius drooping by his Side.

X. EDWARD II, surnamed of Caernarvon, the thirtieth King of England, and the tenth from the Norman Conquest.

KING S generally stand so much upon the Prerogative of being like Gods; that they scorn to be thought in the Wrong like Men. In this Reign may be seen how fatal it is to prefer a private Person before the Public; or for a Prince to espouse the Interest of a Favourite, so far as to put him in Competition with all his other Subjects, and to oppose his Welfare to theirs.

A.D. EDWARD of Caernarvon was twenty-three Years of 1307. Age when his Father died: His noble Stature, good Mien, and majestic Presence, gave the English fresh Hopes; but they soon found themselves mistaken. He proceeded to Dumfries, where some of the Scotch Nobility did Homage to him; after which he returned to England, leaving the Command of the Forces in Scotland to John Comyn, a Scotch Nobleman.

WHEN Edward I. found himself dying, he recommended three Things to his Successor. The first was, vigorously to prosecute the War with Scotland: For which Purpose, he advised him to carry along with him his Bones at the Head of the Army; imagining that Object would daunt the Courage of the Scotch. The second was, to send his Heart

Heart to the *Holy Land*, with 32,000*l.* he had provided A. D. for the Support of the holy Sepulchre. And the third 1307. was never to recal *Gaveston.* *Stow* says, that the old King enjoined his Son to perform these Things, on Pain of a Curse for his Disobedience: But he disobeyed his Father, and this brought the greatest Misfortunes on himself.

HE left the War in *Scotland*, to indulge his vitiated Taste in *England*, where his favourite *Pierce Gaveston* was returned, and where the King not only readmitted him to his Favours, but wantonly loaded him with a Profusion of Honours. He created him Earl of *Cornwall*; married him to a Princess of the royal Blood, *Margaret* his own Niece, Sister to the Earl of *Gloucester*; and exalted him to such an Eminence of Greatness, where it is difficult for any Subject to maintain himself: Because, a sole Favourite to the Prince, and an only Minister, are repugnant to the Genius of the *English* People, and the Form of their Constitution,

THE young King assembled a Parliament at *Northampton*, where he confirmed the Statute of *Westminster*; but 1308. deferred his Coronation till after his Marriage with *Isabella* the Daughter of the King of *France*, which had been agreed on before the Death of his Father. After spending his Winter in Pomp and Luxury, he appointed *Gaveston* Guardian or Lieutenant of the Kingdom, and went to *Bulloign* in *France*, where he was married to the *French* Princess with great Magnificence. He conducted his Bride to *England*, and they were both crowned at *Westminster*, by the Bishop of *Winchester*, on the twenty-fourth of February; the Queen being only thirteen Years of Age.

EDWARD swore to observe the Laws and Liberties of the Country: But the Insolence of *Gaveston* rendered him odious to the Nobility, who considered him as a wandering Meteor, that led their Prince from the true Interest of his People and Government: Therefore they endeavoured to seize him; and he escaped to *Windsor Castle*. The King had promised the Barons to remove his Favourite from his Person and Councils; a Parliament was held at *Northampton* to prevent any Commotion from the

A. D. the Barons ; and it was agreed that *Gaveston* should be 1308. sent to govern *Ireland* ; with an express Condition of his never returning to *England*. This was an absolute Banishment, which gave the King inexpressible Anxiety ; who accompanied his Favourite to *Bristol*, and parted from him with all the Fondness of a Lover.

A. D. *GAVESTON* returned to *England* ; where the King 1309. heaped additional Favours upon him : But as he had permitted the Parliament to chuse Commissioners, called *Ordainers*, to regulate the Government, he was obliged to banish him again. No sooner was the favourite Exile departed the Kingdom, than he was formally and publickly recalled by the infatuated King. The Insolence of *Gaveston* increased with the Favour of *Edward*, whose Queen complained to her Father, that the Fondness of her Husband for this unworthy Favourite, alienated his Affections from her, and made her an entire Stranger to his Bed.

THIS Lady was remarkable for her Beauty ; so that her Complaint has made it suspected, that the Familiarity between the King and *Gaveston* was a Crime that is a Scandal to human Nature. Indeed, *Gaveston* was extremely handsome ; but these Suspicions may have been too much aggravated.

A. D. THE King must have known, from the Example of 1312. his Grandfather, that the Barons would rather take Arms against him, than suffer such a Favourite about him. *Henry the Third* was obliged to banish *Hubert de Burgh* ; and the Barons were now determined to act like their Ancestors by compelling *Edward* entirely to banish *Gaveston*. They took up Arms, under Pretence of defending the Rights of the Church and State : The Earl of *Lancaster*, Grandson to King *Henry the Third*, was elected General ; and *Gaveston* was taken at *Scarborough*, while the King was assembling an Army in *Warwickshire*. The Earl of *Pembroke*, who took *Gaveston*, promised he should have an Interview with the King : But the Earl of *Warwick* violently seized the Prisoner, and beheaded him on *Blacklow Hill* near *Warwick* ; whose Remains were afterwards

wards interred by *Edward* at King's Langley in Hertfordshire: And after much Difficulty, though without any 1312. Blows, the Barons obliged the King to grant them a general Pardon.

WHILE *England* endured such violent Shocks by the Imprudence of a weak and indolent Governor; *Scotland* 1313. recovered its Vigour by the Prudence of a brave and vigilant King, who wisely improved the Repose procured to his People by the Death of *Edward* the First. *Robert Bruce*, by the happy Union of his Subjects, had not only recovered the best Part of his Country, but was in a Condition to carry his Arms into *England*. He obtained two Victories over the *English*, whose civil Dissentions prevented them from succouring the Troops in *Scotland*: So that *Bruce* made himself Master of every Place except *Stirling Castle*.

KING *Edward*, to preserve *Stirling*, assembled an Army A.D. of 100,000 Men. *Robert*, with only 30,000, posted 1314. himself at *Banockbourn*, where he obtained a complete Victory, and obliged *Edward* to retreat hastily to *York*, with the Remainder of his shattered Army. The *English* were no more Victors; their Spirit fled when *Edward* the First expired; and nothing but Shame was entailed upon them by his unhappy Successor. The Troops were intimidated, and *Edward* returned to *London*; while the *Scotch* ravaged the Borders for three Years, and *Bruce* undertook the Conquest of *Ireland*; But he was not able to succeed.

A BOLD Impostor, *John Deydras*, the Son of an *Exeter* Tanner, pretended that he was the eldest Son of *Edward* the First, and changed at Nurse: But his Imposture brought him to the Gallows. A great Famine also ruined the Kingdom; but the King acted so unpopularly, in depriving the Earl of *Lancaster* of his Wife, and giving her to a mean Knight, that the People said publickly, never was the Throne of *England* filled by a Prince so unworthy to rule a free Nation.

THE Barons complained of several Grievances: But nothing was farther from the Thoughts of *Edward* than 1318.

A.D. the Reformation of Abuses: However, they compelled
1318. him to admit a certain Number of Barons into his Coun-
 cil, and promise to do nothing without their Advice.

A.D. At this Time, the King of *Scotland* prepared to besiege
1319. *Berwick*; and the King of *England* meanly applied to the
 Pope to procure him a Peace, or at least a Truce with
Scotland. *Bruce* disdained the Papal Mediation, and took
Berwick; which *Edward* resolved to retake by Force of
 Arms, when he found spiritual Weapons were unable to
 preserve it. But he was unsuccessful against the Town:
 While the Earl of *Murray* defeated a Body of the *English*
 Militia; which obliged *Edward* to raise the Siege, and
 return to *England*; after having, with much Sollicitation,
 obtained a Truce for two Years.

IT is an infallible Rule, that a Prince who has no
 Wisdom of his own, can never be well advised; for good
 Councils proceed rather from the Wisdom of the Prince,
 than the Prince's Wisdom from the Goodness of his
 Councils: Of which *Edward* is a remarkable Instance.
 The Barons appointed a standing Council to advise the
 King in all Matters of public Concern: And they also
 procured the Office of Chamberlain for *Hugh le Dispenser*,
 or *Spencer*, a young Gentleman, who was to act as a Spy
 upon the King. But the Council was of no Effect; for
 young *Spencer*, by the Advice of his Father *Hugh*, was so
 obsequious to the King, that he became his Confident;
 and at length supplied in his Heart the Place formerly
 possessed by *Gaveston*. The new Favourite became more
 intolerable than the old one: His Father was in the royal
 Favour, and created Earl of *Winchester*: But the Earls of
Lancaster and *Hereford* entered into a Confederacy against
 the Spencers, and engaged a great Number of Barons in
 their Interests.

A.D. THE old Association being renewed, the Barons sud-
1320. denly appeared in Arms, and petitioned the King for the
 Removal of the Spencers, who were banished by the Par-
 liament, which was called *The Parliament of the White
 Bands*; on account of certain white Marks, whereby the
 Adherents of the Barons were to know one another.

THE

THE Queen encouraged the King to levy an Army, A.D. who took some Castles from the Barons, and recalled the ¹³²¹ two Spencers. The People sided with the King, and the Barons were now unable to oppose him: So that many of them submitted; some were taken and executed, others fled abroad, and the Earl of Lancaster with a few Troops retired into the North.

THE King pursued the Earl of Lancaster to Burrow-A.D. Bridge in Yorkshire, which was defended by Sir Andrew ¹³²². Harcla for the King. The Earl ordered the Bridge to be attacked, on the fifteenth of March: But the Earl of Hereford being killed, his Troops took to Flight; when Harcla pursued them, and took the Earl of Lancaster Prisoner, with ninety-five Barons and Knights, who were conducted to the Castle of Pontefract. Never since the Norman Conquest, had the Scaffolds been drenched with so much English Blood, as upon this Occasion: The Earl of Lancaster, and six other Lords, were beheaded at Pontefract; three at York, one at Gloucester, one at London, one at Windsor, and two at Canterbury: Many Knights were hanged in Chains, and seventy-two shut up in Prison. But the Barons had afterwards an Opportunity of fully glutting their Revenge on the King and the Spencers.

ELATED with this Success over his Subjects, Edward A.D. thought of invading Scotland: But he was obliged to re-¹³²³ turn for want of Provisions, without striking a Blow. The Scotch Monarch pursued him to York, seized his Baggage, and had like to have taken him Prisoner: However, after loading himself with Booty, and destroying 20,000 of the English, Bruce consented to a Peace for thirteen Years.

EDWARD was now in a Situation most agreeable to his Temper; as this Peace left him the free Indulgence of his Pleasures: Though his Ease was so much disturbed with the Remembrance of his Cruelty to the Barons, and particularly to the Earl of Lancaster, that when some of his Lords interceded for the Pardon of one of Lancaster's inferior Adherents, he replied, " Is it possible that such a Wretch as this should find so many Friends to inter-

A. D. " cede for him, when not one would speak in Behalf of
1323. " my Cousin of *Lancaster*, who, if he had lived, would
 have been useful both to me, and the whole Kingdom?
 " Therefore, as for this Fellow, he shall die as he de-
 " serves." *Thomas Earl of Lancaster* was Cousin-Ger-
 man to the King; he was considered as a real Martyr for
 Liberty by the People, and was afterwards canonized at
 the Request of *Edward the Third*: He took up Arms in
 the Defence of Liberty, and his Memory was held in
 such great Veneration that the Monks of *Pontefract* pre-
 tended many Miracles were wrought at his Tomb.

THE two *Spencers* now humoured the King in all his
 Indolence, and governed the Kingdom in so arbitrary a
 Manner, as to incur the general Hatred of the People
 upon them all. The Queen was incensed at their Con-
 duct; especially as they confined *Roger Mortimer the*
younger in the Tower, with whom she was so far en-
 moured as to favour his Escape, and complain to the
 King of *France*, her Brother, that she was treated like
 a Servant by her Husband.

A. D. DISSATISFIED at the ill Treatment of his Sister Queen
1324. *Isabella in England*, *Charles the Fair* sought to give *Ed-*
ward Marks of his Resentment, and sent a formidable
 Army into *Guienne*, under the Command of *Charles de*
Valois his Uncle, who took several Places, on Pretence
 that *Edward* had not done Homage for his Dominions in
France. *Edward* sent his Brother, the Earl of *Kent*, to
 command in *Guienne*, and deprived his Queen of the
 Earldom of *Cornwall*, which had been assigned her for
 her private Expences: Though, as he was unable to de-
 fend *Guienne* by Arms, he sent *Isabella* over to *France*
 to prevail upon her Brother to restore it to him by
 Treaty.

A. D. THE Queen was glad of this Opportunity to shew her
1325. Resentment to the *Spencers*, more than to promote the In-
 terest of the King: She prevailed upon her Brother to get
 her Husband to resign *Guienne* and *Ponthieu* to Prince *Ed-*
ward her Son, aged thirteen Years. This threw the
 King into a fatal Snare; the sole Aim of his Queen being
 to get the Prince under her Care, and to make him the
 Instrument

Instrument of ruining his Father: Which was too fully A. D. accomplished; for the voluntary Resignation of his ^{1325.} Duchy, was soon followed by the compulsiory Resignation of his Kingdom.

PRINCE Edward, the Glory of *England*, paid Homage A. D. for *Guienne* and *Ponthieu* to the King of *France*: But con-^{1326.} tinued with his Mother at *Paris*, where *Mortimer* and other disaffected *Englishmen* resorted to her, and formed a Conspiracy for dethroning her Husband, who in vain commanded her to return with her Son. While the Queen was taking Measures at *Paris* to accomplish her Design, her Friends were effectually serving her in *England*; where the Heads of her Party were *Henry of Lancaster*, Brother of the late Earl, with the Bishops of *Lincoln* and *Hereford*. And their Plot was assisted by the King of *England* himself; who, by imprudently declaring War against *France*, gave the *French* Monarch a plausible Pretence to support the Interests of his Sister.

ISABELLA prostituted her Charms in the Embraces of *Mortimer*; and, as she had thus dishonoured the Bed of her Husband, was determined to deprive him of his Crown. Having procured Assistance from the Earl of *Hainault*, and contracted her Son *Edward* to the Princess *Philippa* his Daughter, she set sail from *Dort* with 3000 Men, commanded by *John de Hainault*, Brother of the Earl, and landed at *Orewel* in *Suffolk*, where she was joined by *Henry of Lancaster*, and several other Noblemen.

EDWARD, instead of raising an Army, and equipping a Fleet, employed himself in seeking ineffectual Remedies against impending Evils: So that upon the Arrival of these foreign Troops, he was deserted by all, and unable to withstand his Enemies, who were joined by great Numbers of his Subjects, and even by his own Brothers, the Earls of *Norfolk* and *Kent*.

THE Queen published a Manifesto, declaring that her sole Aim was to free the Church and State from the Oppressions to which they were liable by the Male-Administration of the King, and the Tyranny of the *Spencers*. The King, unable to raise any Troops, retired to *Bristol* with

A.D. his two Favourites, and a few of their Adherents: From 1326. whence he embarked for *Ireland*; but was driven on the Coast of *Wales*, and obliged to secrete himself in the Abbey of *Neath* in *Glamorganshire*. In the mean Time, the Queen overran the Country with a surprizing Rapidity, and besieged *Bristol*, which was poorly defended by *Spencer* the Father, who was taken, and immediately hung up in his Armour, without any Formality, in the ninth Year of his Age.

PRINCE *Edward* was declared Regent of the Kingdom, on a Presumption that the King had abdicated the Realm. The King was taken at *Neath*, together with young *Spencer*, Chancellor *Baldac*, and a few Attendants; from whence they were sent to *Monmouth Castle*, where the King delivered up the Great Seal, and was sent Prisoner to *Kenelworth Castle* in *Warwickshire*: While his triumphant Consort, in the Arms of *Mortimer*, and in the Possession of sovereign Power, forgot every Call of Nature and Duty.

A.D. THE Earl of *Arundel* was beheaded; and *Hugh Spencer* 1327. hanged, on a Gibbet fifty Feet high, at *Hereford*: After which, the Queen entered *London* in a triumphant Manner, where the People called her *their Deliverer*. She immediately assembled a Parliament, which met on the 9th of *January* 1327; wherein it was unanimously agreed, that the King should be deposed, and his Son *Edward* ascend the Throne. The unhappy Monarch was accused of not having governed according to the Laws of the Land; making Use of evil Counsellors; and rejecting the Advice of his faithful Subjects: He was also charged with the Loss of *Scotland*, and *Guienne*; the Destruction of Holy Church, the Breach of his Coronation Oath, and the abandoning his Kingdom. Upon this Charge, the Father was deposed, and the Son proclaimed King in *Westminster-Hall*, by the Name of *Edward* the Third; when the Archbishop of *Canterbury* preached a Sermon, chusing for his Text, *the Voice of the People, the Voice of God*.

THE young Prince solemnly vowed not to accept the Crown, without the express Consent of his Father. This frustrated the Intentions of his Mother; therefore she was determined

determined to compel her Husband to resign the Crown A. D. to his Son. Accordingly Commissioners were appointed 1327. to declare to him, that the People of *England* were no longer bound by their Oath of Allegiance; and that they came to receive his Resignation. The unfortunate Mo- came narch, instead of insisting that it was repugnant to the Great Charter, to use Force upon his Person, submitted to the Violence. The Commissioners acquainted him; that, if he did not resign the Crown, the Parliament would bestow it upon some other Person, without any Regard to the royal Blood: This extorted from him a Consent; though when he made it, his Spirits forsook him, and he fainted away. He then formally surrendered up the Regalia; and *William Trussel*, in the Name of the Parliament surrendered up their Homage, and renounced their Allegiance, to their undignified Sovereign. Thus fell *Edward* from the Height of Royalty, to the mean Condition of a miserable Criminal, in the forty-third Year of his Age, and the twentieth of his Reign: A dreadful Example to all Princes how they are misguided by Favourites; which was the principal Charge exhibited against this unhappy Monarch.

THE deposed Monarch was removed from *Kenelworth* to *Berkley-Castle*; without ever seeing either his Wife or Son; though he frequently desired to see them both. Sir *John Maltravers* and Sir *Thomas Gurney* had the Care of his Removal, who treated him with many Indignities; obliging him to be shaved, in an open Field, with cold Water from a stinking Ditch: But the unhappy Prince told them, that notwithstanding their Cruelty, he would be shaved with warm Water, and at the same Time shed a copious Stream of Tears. His Enemies thought to end his Days by Fatigue and Vexation: But the Goodness of his Constitution frustrated their Wishes; therefore they determined to end his Life by a most horrid Murder. The Bishop of *Hereford* sent Orders to *Maltravers* and *Gurney* for this Purpose; who cruelly executed them: For while *Edward* was in Bed, sixteen Men laid a Pillow upon his Face and held it down: while others thrust a horn Pipe up his Body, through which they ran a red-

A. D. ^{1327.} hot Iron and burnt his Bowels, to prevent any external Appearance of Violence; so that the miserable Prince expired in the most exquisite Torments. He was buried in the *Abbey-Church of Gloucester*; and the People, who hated him during his Life, reverenced him as a Saint after his Death: Besides, the Abettors and Executioners of his Murder, afterwards felt the Hand of divine Vengeance, for their unwarrantable Parricide.

IT has been observed that his Person was very handsome: Among all his Frailties, *Edward* had some Virtues: He never oppressed his Subjects by parliamentary Exactions; he made several salutary Laws; and gave great Encouragement to the commercial Interest of his Kingdom. He was much like his Grandfather *Henry the Third*: But it may be affirmed he was more weak than wicked.

EDWARD the Second had two Sons, and two Daughters by *Isabella* his Wife. *Edward* surnamed of *Windsor*, succeeded him in the Kingdom; and *John* of *Eltham* was created Earl of *Cornwall*, who died unmarried. *Joan* was married to *David* Prince of *Scotland*; and *Reginald* to the Earl of *Gelders*.

IN 1317, a great Famine happened in *England*, which continued so long that Corn was sold for 3l. a Quarter, or 12l. of the present Money; which obliged the poor People to eat Horse-flesh, Dogs, and Cats. In 1322 the greatest Earthquake happened that had been known in *England*. And in 1324, the Order of the Knights-Templars was suppressed both in *England* and other States, their Effects confiscated, and assigned to the Hospitallers or Knights of St. *John* of *Jerusalem*, called at this Day the Knights of *Malta*.

Caernarvon EDWARD let his Subjects see,
The worthless Scion of a noble Tree.
Averse to War, and indolent in Peace,
Shameful, he made his Country's Glory cease.
Scotland recover'd all her lost Domain;
And *Civil War* made *England* bleed again:

Great

Great *Lancaster* commands the gen'rous Strife,
 And in fair *Freedom's* Cause resign'd his Life:
 His brave Compeers, who Tyranny withstood,
 Shed on the Scaffold *England's* noblest Blood.
 But *Edward's* Queen affists an injur'd Land,
 And rescues *England* with a foreign Band:
 The royal Fav'rites by her Vengeance die;
 The hapless Monarch sees his Ruin nigh:
 Depos'd, imprison'd, and, with cruel Rage,
 Most basely murder'd, stains the bloody Age.
 Fatal Example, that where Regal Pow'r
 Expels the Law, Freedom will Law restore.

XI. EDWARD III, *surnamed of Windsor, the thirty-first King of England, and the eleventh from the Norman Conquest.*

EDWARD the Third was the same to *England*, as *Augustus Cæsar* was to *Rome*; he composed the Rage of Faction, and made his Reign appear one of the most illustrious of any in the *English History*. Princes who covet Power, should endeavour to obtain it by honest and noble Arts, or they will find it but of short Continuance; they should desire rather to direct a People well united and obedient to the Laws, than to be directed themselves by Sycophants and Flatterers. *Edward* the Second like a Cloud, obscured the Glory of his Country; but *Edward* the Third, like the Sun dissipated the Gloom, and gave additional Lustre to his Kingdom.

THE young Prince was only fourteen Years of Age A.D. 1327 when his Father resigned the Crown; he was immediately proclaimed by the Name of *Edward* the Third; and the Ceremony of his Coronation was performed at *Westminster*, on the 26th of January, by *Walter* Archbishop of *Canterbury*. The Parliament appointed a Regency, of which *Henry* Earl of *Lancaster* was declared the Chief: But the Queen held the Power in her own Hands; and *Roger*

A. D. Mortimer executed the Office of prime Minister under her,
1327. with more Authority than the younger Spencer governed
under her Husband. However, this sudden Alteration
in the State made none in the Constitution: For the Re-
signation of the old King was not looked upon as a De-
position.

THE young King possessed a Spirit, and a Penetration,
uncommon to his Age: But the Scotch Monarch hoped
to reap some Advantage from his Minority, broke the
Truce, and made an Incursion upon the English Borders.
Edward, impatient to revenge this Insult, levied an Ar-
my of 60,000 Men, and came up with the Scotch Gene-
rals, near the River Were in Northumberland. He was
greedy of Glory, and desirous of attacking the Enemy:
But the Earl of Murray had so strongly fortified his Camp,
that it was impossible for the King to attack it with any
Prospect of Success; though Edward sent him Word, that
if the Scotch would come over the River to the English,
he would retire at a convenient Distance to give the Earl
Time to pass, and chuse what Ground he should think
proper; or else, on the same Terms, the King would
bring the English over to them. After both Armies had
kept their Posts a Fortnight, the Scotch decamped in the
Night, and hastily retired into their own Country; when
Edward returned to York; where he was informed of the
Death of his Father, which he believed natural, as the
cruel Perpetrators of it carefully concealed the Violence.

A. D. THE English, who are naturally generous and compas-
1328. sionate, began to pity the miserable Condition of their old
King; and, while the young one was in the North, some
Motions were made in the South in Favour of the Father;
but his Death suppressed the Whole. The young Mo-
narch then solemnized his Marriage with Philippa, of
Hainault, at York; and the new Queen was afterwards
crowned with the usual Solemnities. This Marriage was
followed by a Peace with Scotland; which was confirmed
by another Marriage between David Prince of Scotland,
and Joanna Sister of Edward, though they were both
Children. The Peace was concluded by the Influence
of the Queen and Mortimer, who prevailed upon the King

to renounce all his Pretensions to *Scotland*, both with REGARD to the Sovereignty and the Propriety: While the Scotch Monarch also renounced all Claim to *Northumberland* and *Cumberland*. But the English were greatly dissatisfied with this Treaty, whereby all the Blood shed, and Money expended, in the Conquest of *Scotland*, were rendered entirely fruitless. However, *Mortimer* was created Earl of *March*, for this pretended Service to his Master: Though *Henry* Earl of *Lancaster*; with *Edmund* Earl of *Kent*, and *Thomas* Earl of *Norfolk*, the King's Uncles; and some other Lords, projected a Reformation of the Government; entering into an Association to defend each other, and to examine into the Grievances of the Kingdom.

THE old Queen made her Son consider the Barons as Rebels, and he prepared to chastise them as such: So that the Civil War was again beginning to burst it; when it was suppressed by the Interposition of *Simon de Meppam* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, who procured a Pardon for most of the Barons, and they submitted to the King: But some of them were banished; and the Earl of *Kent* was soon afterwards beheaded, on a Charge of High Treason, for endeavouring to change the Government. Thus died this Prince on the Scaffold, by the Means of those Monsters who had put his Brother King *Edward* the Second to Death in a Prison: He was twenty-eight Years of Age, and remarkable for those Virtues which occasioned his Enemies to put an End to his Life: Though both his Sentence and Execution were unknown to the King, his Nephew, till it was too late, who soon afterwards became sensible of the Cruelty of his Mother and *Mortimer*; when the Queen was confined for Life to her House at *Risings*, and her Favourite was hanged at *Tyburn*.

GAVESTON and *Spencer* felt the just Objects of popular Resentment, though imprudently protected by their Sovereign: But *Mortimer* fell a Victim both to the King and People; he was condemned without being heard, as he himself had served the *Spencers*; and this Irregularity

300 A NEW HISTORY

A. D. regularity proved advantageous to his Family, who afterwards obtained the Reversal of this Sentence as *Erroneous*; by which Means, his Descendants by the Female Line, ascended the Throne of *England*.

A. D. EDWARD now assumed the Reigns of Government; and Robert, the brave King of *Scotland*, died soon after concluding the Peace with *England*; leaving his Kingdom to his Son David, then but eight Years of Age: So that the King of *England* had nothing to fear from his young Brother-in-law, and turned his Eyes upon *France*.

CHARLES the Fair, King of *France*, died in 1328, without Male-issue, leaving Joanna, his Queen, big with Child, which afterwards proved a Daughter. Philip Earl of *Valois*, Grandson of Philip the Hardy, * and Cousin German to Charles the Fair, took upon him the Regency; which was also claimed by the King of *England*, as Nephew, and nearest Relation to the deceased Monarch: But the Peers of *France* adjudged the Regency to the Earl of *Valois*, affirming that the Salique-Law debarred the Females and their Descendants, from the Succession to the Crown, as also from any Right to the Regency, in Prejudice to the Male Line. However, Edward asserted his Right to the Crown of *France*, if Joanna was not brought to-bed of a Prince; and as she was delivered of a Daughter, he brought *France* to the Brink of Destruction, in prosecuting his Claim; which he was not immediately able to undertake.

A. D. As Edward had taken upon himself the Administration of Affairs, he was uneasy at the Treaty concluded with *Scotland*; and though the young King of that Nation, was his Brother-in-law, it was known in those Days, as well as at present, that the Bond of Affinity is not always a sufficient Bar to the Ambition of Princes. Edward thought first of reducing *Scotland*, and then of attacking *France*. As the late King of *Scotland* had broke the Truce, and attacked Edward in his Minority; Edward now thought he might take the same Advantage over *Scotland*. To compass his Ends, he encouraged Ed-

* See Rolt's History of *France*, P. 16. and 116, for the Nature of the Salique Law.

ward Baliol, Son of John Baliol, the deposed King of A. D. Scotland, to come over from France, and seize the Crown, ^{1331.} usurped by the Bruce: Though he made the Public believe, he was not concerned in an Undertaking of which he was the real Author.

EDWARD promised Baliol Assistance, who landed A. D. near Perth, with 2500 English Adventurers; and Baliol, ^{1332.} like William the Conqueror, sent back his Ships, to shew his Troops, they had nothing to trust to but their Valour. He won four Battles in a short Time, and obliged the young King David to fly with his Queen into France; after which, the Scotch Fleet was defeated by a Fleet fitted out by several private Persons in England, and the Scotch Nobility submitted to the Conqueror, who was crowned at Scone; and, according to Agreement, did Homage to Edward, in the same Manner as his Father had done it to Edward the First, whereby Scotland became again in entire Subjection to England.

DAVID had left the Earl of Murray Regent in Scotland; and, as Baliol had been so successful, Edward ^{1333.} threw off the Mask by afflicting him openly. He marched an Army into Scotland, and obtained such a complete Victory over the Regent at Halydon-hill, that 7 Scotch Earls, 900 Knights, and 4000 Gentlemen, besides common Soldiers, were slain on the Spot. After which, Edward took Berwick, and annexed it for ever to the Crown of England. He then left a Body of Troops with Baliol to complete the Reduction of the Country, and returned to England; having Edinburgh Castle, and other Places, resigned to him by Baliol.

BUT the Scotch found that Baliol was only the Instrument to render Edward Master of their Kingdom, and resolved to expel him from the Throne. The Earl of Dunbar headed the Malecontents, defeated Baliol, and obliged him to fly for Protection to the King of England; who entered Scotland with an Army, and wintered at Roxburgh.

As Edward was determined to reduce the Scotch, they A. D. were obliged to submit; upon which he returned to England, ^{1335.} and left the Earl of Athol to govern Scotland; but this

A. D. this Earl was defeated by the Lords *Dunbar* and *Douglas*,
1335. *Edward* then re-entered *Scotland*, and ravaged the Country: But, as he was called by more important Affairs, he returned to his own Dominions, and left a small Army with *Baliol*.

A. D. *SCOTLAND* having no more Laurels to yield its
1336. Conqueror, he resolved to attack *France*, which he considered as his own Right, by Virtue of his Mother *Isabella*; asserting, that the Salique Law, in excluding Females to the Succession of the Crown, did not exclude their Male-Issue; from whence he inferred, that he ought to succeed as the next Heir-Male. *Joanna*, Queen of *France* being brought to bed of a Daughter, *Philip* Earl of *Valois* took Possession of the Crown, and insisted that *Edward* was excluded by the Salique Law. *Edward*, being unable at first to contest this Matter, seemed to acquiesce, and did Homage to *Philip* for *Guienne* and *Ponthieu*: But, now he was in a Condition to assert his Claim by the Force of Arms, he vigorously prosecuted it. He was encouraged to invade *France* by *Robert d'Artois*, a Prince of the Blood, who was banished the Kingdom, after most strenuously maintaining the Authority of the Salique Law, and procuring the Crown for *Philip de Valois* his Brother-in-law. But, as *France* had a Superiority over *England*, *Edward* entered into Alliance with the Emperor and several Princes of *Germany*, who were to supply him with a Number of Horse, in Proportion to the Subsidies he gave them.

A. D. *THE English Parliament* concurred with the King in his
1337. Design, and granted him such large Subsidies to carry it on, that he raised one of the finest Armies that had ever been levied in *England*. In the mean Time, he studied how to make his Country happy during his Absence: He settled the Woollen Trade: He created Prince *Edward*, his eldest Son, Duke of *Corn-wal*, being the first in *England* who bore the Title of Duke; since which Time, the eldest Son of the King of *England* is born Duke of *Corn-wal*: And, after making several military Promotions, he sent Assistance to the *Flemings*, demanded the Crown of

France

France by the Duke of *Brabant*, and then began this A. D. famous Expedition.

THE King of *England* appointed the Prince of *Wales* A. D. Regent of the Kingdom, and set Sail from *Orewel* in 1338. ^{1337.} *Suffolk*, on the 16th of *July*, with a Fleet consisting of 500 Sail, and steered his Course towards *Antwerp*; from whence he went to visit the Emperor at *Cologne*, who appointed him Vicar of the Empire.

THE Opening of the Campaign was retarded till the A. D. Month of *September*; when King *Edward* entered *France* 1339. at the Head of 40,000 Men; and *Philip* met him with a superior Army near *Vizonfosse*: But the *French* Monarch declined coming to an Engagement, and the Campaign ended without any Blood-shed.

To keep the *Flemings* in the League, *Edward* assumed A. D. the Title of King of *France*, and quartered with his 1340. Arms the Flower-de-Luces of that Kingdom; adding this Motto, *Dieu et mon Droit*, or *God and my Right*; thereby declaring, that he put his whole Confidence in God, and the Justice of his Cause. He then returned to *England*, obtained a considerable Subsidy, and confirmed the Great Charter. After this he augmented his Army, and reinforced his Fleet, which conducted him back again to *Flanders*.

His Fleet consisted of 300 Ships fit for War; with which he attacked the *French* Fleet, consisting of 400 Ships, on the 23d of *June*, and obtained a glorious Victory. The Battle continued from Seven in the Morning till Eight at Night. *Edward* commanded with such amazing Courage and Conduct, that of the whole *French* Fleet but 30 Ships escaped, the rest being either taken or sunk; and they lost 30,000 Men. This was the greatest and most remarkable naval Engagement that had been yet seen in these Seas, and the first wherein the King of *England* commanded in Person.

THIS Victory gave *Edward* an Opportunity of peaceably landing his Men in *Flanders*, where he found himself at the Head of a glorious Army, consisting of 150,000 Men, *English*, *Germans*, *Flemings*, and *Gascoy়ns*. *Edward* besieged *Tournay*, and *Philip* marched to its Relief with a superior

A. D. superior Force; when a Truce was agreed on for two
1340. Years, by the Mediation of *Joanna de Valois*, Widow of
the late Earl of Hainault, who was Sister to *Philip*, and
Mother-in-law to *Edward*.

A. D. *BRETAGNE* was not subject to the Salique Law;
1341. yet *John de Montfort*, youngest Son of Duke *Arthur* the
Second, feized upon that Duchy in Prejudice of his Niece
Joanna, Wife of *Charles de Blois*, the Nephew of *Philip*
de Valois. The French Parliament adjudged the Duke-
dom to *Charles de Blois*; but *John de Montfort* threw him-
self under the Protection of the King of *England*, whom he
acknowledged King of *France*, and paid him Homage
for *Bretagne*. *Philip* deprived *Montfort* of all his Posses-
sions in *France*; and *Edward* gave him the Earldom of
Richmond in *England*: But the French took him Prisoner at
Nantes, and confined him in the great Tower of the *Louvre*,
in *Paris*. Upon this, the King of *England*, by the Ad-
vice of his Parliament, sent a Body of Troops into *Bre-
tagne*, under *Robert d'Artois*; who died of the Wounds he

A. D. received at the Siege of *Vannes*: But *Edward* swore to re-
1342. venge his Death, and went over to command in Person.
The French Monarch sent an Army of 50,000 Men to op-
pose him; and a Truce was concluded for three Years by
the Mediation of the Pope; when *Edward* returned to
England, and landed at *Weymouth*.

A. D. WHILE the King of *England* was employed in his Wars
1343. with *France*, *Robert Stuart* Regent for King *David* gained
great Advantages over *Baliol*, who commanded the Eng-
lish Forces in *Scotland*. *Edward*, on his Return from
Bretagne, resolved to invade *Scotland* again, by Sea and
Land: But the French Monarch assisted King *David*, who
returned to his Kingdom, and levied an Army of 60,000
Men; with which he marched into *England*, took *Dur-
ham*, and put all the Inhabitants to the Sword. *Ed-
ward* advanced towards the *Scotch*, and *David* retired
into his Country; when a Truce was concluded for two
Years; which deprived *Baliol* of all Hopes of the Crown;
though *David* was afterwards a Prisoner in *England*.

THE Truce with *France* and *Scotland* affording *Edward A. D.* some Respite from military Affairs, he employed this Time ^{1343.} in making several political Regulations for the Benefit of his People; and particularly the *Statute of Provisors*, whereby it was made Death for any Person to bring Provisions into the Kingdom from the Court of *Rome* for filling up vacant Benefices; which was a great Blow to the Papal Prerogative. The Prince of *Wales*, was now thirteen Years of Age; and the King sought how to renew the War with *France*, the Moment the Truce should expire.

As the King had received little Service from his *German* Allies, he now opened Tournaments at *Windsor*, to which the Knights from all the neighbouring Nations reported, and were feasted by the King at one Table, which was called the *Round Table*, in Memory of the Great *Arthur*, who is said to have instituted an Order of Knighthood by that Name. This gave the King an Opportunity of treating with several foreign Lords concerning the Aids with which each could furnish him: And, as the King of *France* also put the same Scheme into Practice, it was the Means of breaking the Truce; for *Philip* seized twelve Lords of *Bretagne*, and had their Heads struck off in *Paris*: Upon which *Edward* insisted the Truce was violated, as it included all Parties who were in Arms when it was made.

THE King of *England* declared War against *France*, *A. D.* and sent 3000 Men, commanded by *Henry of Lancaster* ¹³⁴⁴⁻ Earl of *Derby*, into *Guienne*, where he intended to follow himself, and chiefly to exert his Force. The Earl of *A. D.* *Derby* made a considerable Progress in *Guienne*, took se- ^{1345.} veral Places, and defeated the Count de *Laille* before *Auberoche*, in which Action 7000 of the *French* were slain: But the Duke of *Normandy*, eldest Son to the King of *France*, entered that Duchy at the Head of 60,000 Men, and obliged the Earl of *Derby* to retire to *Bourdeaux*, till his small Army was reinforced from *England*.

THE Duke of *Normandy* besieged the Castle of *Aiguillon*, *A. D.* situated upon the Confluence of the *Garonne* and *Lot*; ^{1346.} when the Garrison made so gallant a Defence, that *Ed-*
ward

A. D. *ward* hastened his Preparations to relieve them. He set
1346. Sail from *Southampton* on the 4th of *July*, attended by the
 Prince of *Wales*, most of his Nobility, and an Army of
 4000 Men at Arms, 10,000 Archers, 12,000 *Welch* Foot-
 men, and 6000 *Irish*; who embarked on board 1600
 Ships, great and small. But, as the Fleet met with con-
 trary Winds, the King was persuaded to land in *Nor-*
mandy, where he was least expected, and arrived safely
 at *La Hogue*.

THE *English* Monarch took *Harfleur*, and other Places;
 defeated *Ralph* Earl of *Eu*, Constable of *France*, ravaged
 the Country, and sent a Defiance to King *Philip*, which
 was not accepted. The *French* Monarch, having assem-
 bled an Army of 100,000 Men, attempted to inclose the
English between the *Seyne* and the *Ouse*: But *Edward* per-
 ceived his Intent, marched into *Picardy*, and retired into
Ponthieu upon the *Somme*; having forded that River in
 the Sight of *Gondemar de Fay*, whom the King of *France*
 had detached, with 12,000 Men, to guard that impor-
 tant Pass.

THE *French* Monarch imagined that the Retreat of
Edward was the Effect of his Fear, and hastily followed
 him; to be too soon convinced of his own Temerity, and
 the Bravery of the *English* Army. King *Edward* en-
 camped at *Cressay* upon the River *Maye*, where he was
 determined to wait the Approach of his Enemy, who had
 passed the *Somme* at *Abbeville*, within nine Miles of the
English Camp, and marched the next Day to begin the
 Attack. *Edward* was ready to receive him, and this
 memorable Battle began on the 26th of *August* 1346,
 about Four o'Clock in the Afternoon; the *French* having
 spent the Beginning of this fatal Day in their March from
Abbeville. The *English* Army was divided into three
 Bodies: The Prince of *Wales*, though only sixteen Years
 of Age, commanded the first, assisted by *Thomas Beau-*
champ Earl of *Warwick*, and twelve other Lords: The
 second was led by *Richard Fitz-Allan* Earl of *Arundel*,
 and *William Bohun* Earl of *Northampton*, assisted by four
 other Barons: And the King kept at some Distance with
 the Third, to give Assistance where it was wanted; hav-

ing

ing with him *John Lord Mowbray, Roger Lord Mortimer, A. D. 1346.* and six other Barons. The French Army was also drawn up in three Bodies: The King of Bohemia, and the Earl of Alençon, Brother to the King of France, led the Vanguard: The French Monarch was at the Head of the main Battle: And the Earl of Savoy commanded the Rear. The French began the Battle by sending 15000 Genoese Archers to attack the Prince of Wales, who soon defeated them. The Earl of Alençon then attacked the Prince of Wales; but he lost his Life, and his Division was also routed. The young Prince of Wales was determined to conquer or die; and the French Monarch ordered such a numerous Body of Horse to advance against him, that his Bravery must have given Way to Numbers, if the Earls of Arundel and Northampton had not come to his Relief. The French still poured in upon the Prince, whose Father was calmly surveying the Field of Battle from an adjacent Eminence: The English Leaders were apprehensive that some Misfortune would happen to the Prince, and sent Word to the King to come to his Assistance: Who asked if his Son was still alive? And being told, that he was not only living, but fighting with incredible Valour; the Monarch sent his Generals Word, "That the Prince must either conquer or die; and that while his Son was alive, he would not rob him of the Victory; for the Honour of this Day should belong to the Prince, and he must now merit his Spurs." This Answer was delivered in the Hearing of the Prince; it inspired him with fresh Courage; his Conduct inspirited his Men, who imitated his heroic Bravery, obliged the French to give Ground, and at last dispersed them in Confusion. The Prince of Wales, after successfully defeating these two Bodies of the French, marched against the main Body commanded by their King; which he likewise defeated. The French fled, the English pursued, and a dreadful Slaughter attended the Victory. The King of Bohemia, though blind, would be present at the Battle, and died in the Field; when his Standard, on which were embroidered in Gold, three Ostrich Feathers, with these Words, *Ich Dien,* that is, I serve, was taken, and brought to the Prince

A. D. Prince of *Wales*, who, in Memory of that signal Victory,
1346. bore the Ostrich Feathers in his Coronet, with the same
Motto; and all his Successors have followed his Example.

THUS *English* Bravery subdued *French* Temerity; and the same Thing happened frequently afterwards. The *French* Monarch was wounded, and the King of *Bohemia* slain. The Earls of *Alenson*, *Blois*, *Flanders*, *Sansserville*, and *Auxerre*; with the Dukes of *Lorrain* and *Bourgoign*, all of the Blood Royal, fell in this Battle; as also did the two *Genoese* Generals *Grimaldi* and *Doria*. Upon the whole, the *French* lost 11 Princes, 80 Bannerets, 1200 Knights, 1500 Gentlemen at Arms, 4000 Esquires, and 30,000 common Soldiers; a greater Number than all the Army of their Conquerors, who lost no Person of Distinction, and only an inconsiderable Number of private Men. When the Victory was over, the *English* Monarch ran up to his Son, and tenderly embracing him, "My gallant Son, said he, you have nobly
" acquitted yourself, and well are you worthy of the
" Kingdom." Which was like what *Philip* of *Macedon* said to his Son *Alexander*, whom he thought worthy of a greater Kingdom than his own. *Edward* then sent out a Detachment to scour the Country, who also defeated several Bodies of the *French* Militia, as they were marching to join the Army, among whom the Archbishop of *Roan*, and the Grand Prior of *France*, were slain. The *French* affirm, that in this memorable Battle, the *English* first began the Use of Cannon; and the Success of this Day is partly ascribed to the Surprise of the *French* at this Novelty. If this was really the Case, it abates much from the *English* Valour; because such tremendous Instruments of Death could not fail of appalling the boldest Hearts: Besides, such new Inventions in War are generally attended with Success; and much less Matters have proved of great Moment in military Business: For is it to be wondered at, that the dreadful Displosion of Cannon should intimidate those who were Strangers to such Kind of Artillery; when we know that only a few Words, spoke by *Quintius*, the *Roman* General, as his Troops were giving Way

Way to the *Volscians*, intimidated his Enemy, and rendered his own Troops victorious? But, in *Page 164 of 1346.* this History, it may be seen, that the *Norman Long-Bows* were as unknown, and as fatal, to the *English*, as this new Artillery was to the *French*.

THE Consequence of this Victory was the Siege of *Calais*, which the *English Monarch* immediately invested, 1347. but was obliged to reduce it by Famine; so that it was a long Time before it surrendered. The *French King* was unable to raise the Siege; and therefore prevailed upon the King of *Scotland* to invade *England*, who was engaged, defeated, and made Prisoner by *Philippa, Queen of England*, in the Absence of her Husband; being unable to procure his Release till 1357, when Fortune was likewise favourable to *Edward* in *Bretagne*, where *Charles de Blois* was taken Prisoner. *Calais* also surrendered, after enduring a Siege of eleven Months; when *Edward* peopled it with an *English Colony*, by which Means *England* kept it 210 Years, when *France* regained it from *Queen Mary* in eight Days.

EDWARD made a Truce with *Philip* for one Year, A. D. and returned in Triumph to *England*; being now so 1348. illustrious in the Eyes of Mankind, that Ambassadors arrived from *Germany* to offer him the imperial Dignity, which he wisely rejected. But the next Year he instituted A. D. *t.e. Order of the Garter*, which he put under the Protection of St. *George*, chusing for his Motto these Words, *Honi soit qui mal y pense*, or *Evil to him that Evil thinks*. It is said, that this illustrious Order was founded on so trivial an Accident as the dropping of a Garter by the Countess of *Salisbury* in Dancing; which the King took up, and addressed the Lady, who was the greatest Beauty of the Age, with the same Words he made Use of for his Motto. Other Reasons have been assigned for this Institution; however, it is certain that it has been always considered as the noblest Order of Knighthood in the World. The King, like another *Pompey*, cleared the Seas of *Spanish Pirates*, who infested the *English Coast*: He caused the Woollen Manufacture to be established in

England,

A. D. *England*, and gave the greatest Encouragement to the
1349. Commercial Interest of his Kingdom.

THE French attempted to regain *Calais* by corrupting the Governor. But King *Edward* and the Prince of *Wales* went over and prevented their Design, by suddenly falling upon the Persons sent to take the Possession of it. Though the King had like to have been slain in single Combat by *Eustace de Ribaumont*, a Knight of *Picardy*, whom at last he took Prisoner, and conferred great Marks of Honour upon the brave Knight for his gallant Behaviour.

A. D.
1356. THE French Monarch died in 1350, and was succeeded by his Son *John*, who renewed the Truce with *England* till 1354, which was ill observed on both Sides. King *Edward* invested the Prince of *Wales* with the Duchy of *Guienne*, who penetrated into the French Provinces, at the Head of 10,000 Men, of whom only 3000 were Natives of *England*. The Prince met with a great Booty: But the French King, with an Army of 80,000 Men, overtook him at *Poictiers*, in *Poitou*, and insisted that the Prince with his whole Army should surrender at Discretion: When the Prince replied, "He would rather die Sword in Hand, than be guilty of a Thing so contrary to his own Honour, and the Glory of *England*." The French Monarch thought his Enemy an easy Prey; and insolently attacked the Prince in his Intrenchments; who acted with such amazing Valour and Prudence, as to defeat the French Army, and take their King Prisoner. The French had only 6000 Men at Arms slain, and about 8000 common Men; but among the former were the Duke of *Bourbon*, the Duke of *Athens* Constable of *France*, the Marshal *de Nesle*, above fifty other great Lords, and more than 700 of the inferior Nobility: Among the Prisoners, who were more in Number than the Conquerors, were the King and his Son, seventeen Earls, and 1500 Barons, Knights, and Esquires. This glorious Battle was fought on the 19th of September 1356; and the victorious Prince treated his royal Captive with as much Respect as if he had still been at the Head of the French Army, and in his own Tent. Like *Scipio*, the Prince became

became a Hero, before he could be called a Man; and A. D. he shewed as much Moderation in his Victories over the 1356. French Monarchs, as the *Roman* shewed in his Conquests over *Hannibal* and *Syphax*.

THE Prince conducted his Prisoners to *Bourdeaux*, the A. D. Capital of *Guienne*; and having granted a Truce to 1357. France for two Years, brought his royal Prisoner to *England*, who was lodged in the Palace of the *Savoy* belonging to the Duke of *Lancaster*; which was then a magnificent Place, though now a miserable Dungeon. The French Monarch was treated more like a royal Visitor than a conquered Enemy; and the King of *Scotland* was now set at Liberty from his Confinement at *Odiam* in *Hampshire*, after eleven Years Captivity, when he concluded a Truce with his Brother-in-law *Edward* for ten Years.

FRANCE * was now troubled with intestine Commotions: The Peasants, attributing all the Misfortunes of their King to the Nobility. The French States would not A. D. ransom their Monarch on the Terms proposed by 1358. the King of *England*, who landed at *Calais* with an Army consisting of 100,000 Men, which advanced to the very Gates of *Paris*. But as the Dauphin was in- A. D. capable of opposing this Force, he obtained a Treaty of 1360. Peace, which was concluded at *Bretigny*, a Village near *Chartres*, by Commissioners appointed for that Purpose; whereby France ceded to *England*, the Sovereignty of *Guienne*, *Poitou*, *Xaintonge*, *Agenois*, *Periguez*, *Limosin*, *Caborfin*, *Tarbe*, *Bigorre*, *Gauze*, *Angoumois*, and *Rouergue*; all which Countries lie in the Western Part of France, open to the Bay of *Biscay*, and formerly belonged to the Kings of *England* by a Right of Inheritance, granted to their different Ancestors by *Hugh Capet* of France in 987: Besides these Countries, this Treaty also confirmed to the King of *England* what he had conquered on the Northern Coast of France in *Picardy*, open to the English Channel, as the Earldoms of *Pontbieu* and *Guifnes*; with the Towns of *Calais*, *Merk*, *Sangate*, *Colongue*, *Hames*, *Wale*, and *Oye*; likewise the Districts belonging to these

* See *Rolt's History of France*, P. 219.

A.D. Towns; and also all the Isles adjacent to these Coun.
1360. tries, as well as the other Islands belonging to *England*:

All which were to be held as absolute by the Kings of *England*, as they had been by the Kings of *France*. The King of *France* was also to pay three Millions of Crowns for his Liberty. The King of *England* was to deliver up all other Places in *France*. The *French* were not to assist the *Scotch*; nor were the *English* to assist the *Flemings*: All former Treaties were declared void; and this was to be farther confirmed.

NORMANDY, Anjou, Touraine, and Maine, still belonged to the King of *France*, who was set at Liberty, and ratified the Treaty at *Calais* on the 24th of October; after which he put the *English* into Possession of the ceded Places, and Sir *John Chandos* was appointed Lieutenant-General of the whole under King *Edward*; who, in return, quitted the Title of King of *France*, and ceased to quarter the Arms of that Kingdom with those of *England*.

A.D. THE *English* Monarch was now at Peace, and the 1361. brave Prince of *Wales* had no farther Glory to acquire in War: He therefore partook of that Happiness which he had given his Country, by rendering his own compleat in marrying his Cousin *Joanna of Kent*, Countess-Dowager of *Holland*, and Daughter of *Edward Earl of Kent*, who was beheaded by the Influence of Queen *Isabella* and *Mortimer*. This Lady was a celebrated Beauty, and she had a Son by the Prince who succeeded his Grandfather in the Throne; but was deprived of it like his Great-Grandfather *Edward the Second*.

A.D. THE next Year, the King erected the Duchy of *Ga.
1362. enne* into a Principality, by the Name of the Principality of *Aquitaine*, and invested the Prince of *Wales* with the new Government; who resided at *Bourdeaux* in great Splendour, for three Years, without exercising his Valour: After which, he restored *Peter King of Castile* to his Throne, by winning the Battle of *Nejara*; though *Peter* had been a Tyrant to his People, and was afterwards ungrateful to his Restorer: But the Prince left him to his own Fortune, and the *Castilian* soon fell a Prey to his

his Enemies, being defeated and murdered by his Bastard- A. D.
Brother *Henry Earl of Treslamar*. 1364.

THIS Expedition increased the Glory of the Prince of Wales; but, unfortunately for *England*, it occasioned the Death of this illustrious Hero. The Fatigue he underwent in *Spain* threw him into a Dropsy: His Indisposition was increased by the Insults he received from *France*; so that he returned to *England* for the Recovery of his Health, where he died of a Fever, in the forty-sixth Year of his Age, on the 8th of June 1376, and was buried at *Canterbury*, to the inexpressible Grief of the King his Father, and the general Sorrow of his Subjects; adored in *England*, lamented even in *France*, and regretted by all *Europe*. With this excellent Prince died the Hopes of *England*. He was possessed of all Virtues in an eminent Degree. He never formed a Siege without carrying the Place, and never fought a Battle without Conquest: Brave without Fierceness, and bold without Rashness in Battle: But full of Clemency and Modesty after Victory. Submissive and respectful to his Father, generous and liberal to his Soldiers; fond of *English* Honour, and the Friend of every *Englishman*, he lived and died the Glory of his Age. He was commonly called the *Black Prince*, because he wore black Armour. He left only one legitimate Son, named *Richard*; and two natural Sons, Sir *John Saunders*, and Sir *Roger de Clarendon*: *Richard* succeeded to the Throne; but the others are not remarkable in History.

THE French Monarch performed the Treaty of *Bretigny* to the utmost of his Power, and returned to *London* either upon Account of that Treaty, or his Affection for the Countess of *Salisbury*: But more probably the former, because there were some Things unadjusted, and it was a Maxim with this Prince, “ Though Faith and Truth were banished from the rest of the World, they ought, however, to be preserved in the Mouths of Kings.” He died soon after his Arrival at *London*, in 1363: But his Successor *Charles the Sage* entertained a very different Opinion, and broke the Treaty of *Bretigny*, on very frivolous Pretences; upon which *Edward* resumed the Title

A. D. of King of *France*, and War was renewed between the
1364. two Kingdoms in 1369.

THE Glory of the *English* Monarch began to decline; and, after caressing him so much in his younger Days, Fortune deserted him in his old Age; by robbing him of all those glorious Conquests, which he had purchased with so much Blood and Expence. *Ponthieu* was taken by the *French*; and the Departure of the Prince of *Wales* entirely ruined the Affairs of the *English* in *Guienne*. *Limosin*, *Perigord*, *Rouergne*, and *Xaintongne*, were taken; and the *English* Fleet, commanded by the Earl of *Pembroke*, was defeated off *Rochelle*, in 1372. This was followed by the Reduction of *Poitou*; and though *Edward* assembled a Fleet of 400 Sail, to protect that Province, all his Endeavours were frustrated by contrary Winds, which obliged him to return to *England*. However, in 1373, he sent an Army of 30,000 Men into *Guienne*, commanded by his Son *John Duke of Lancaster*; when a Truce was concluded; though *Edward* was stripped of every Thing but *Calais*.

A. D. 1376. THE *English* Monarch, after rendering himself great in War, fell into all the Dotage of Love with *Alice Pierce*, to whom he gave the Name of *Lady of the Sun*, and squandered all his Revenue in making Diversions for this Female Favourite. He also entrusted the Government to the Duke of *Lancaster*: But, at the same Time, he created *Richard*, his Grandson, Prince of *Wales*; to shew his Regard to the *Black Prince*, whose Son he intended for his Successor, and caused the Nobility to acknowledge him as the Heir apparent to the Crown.

A. D. 1377. AFTER settling the Succession, *Edward* was taken ill of the Cingles, or a Kind of St. *Anthony's Fire*, which brought on a Fever, and occasioned his Death, at *Richmond* in *Surry*, on the 21st of June 1377, in the sixty-fifth Year of his Age, and the fifty-first of his Reign; being buried in *Westminster-Abbey*. But, in his last Moments, he was deserted by all his Court-Favourites; who left him attended only by one Priest to comfort him in his dying Agonies.

THIS illustrious Prince had a majestic Person; being tall, and well-shaped; with an Aspect so noble, that his very Looks commanded Respect and Veneration. There are very few Princes to be met with in History, in whom the Duties of a Sovereign, with those of an honest Man, and a good Christian, were so well blended. Though his Valour was admired by all the World, it never made him vain: His Conquests were great Abroad; but he is more renowned for confirming the Liberties of *England* at Home. He knew how to maintain the Prerogatives of the Crown, without encroaching on the Privileges of the People. He made more advantageous Statutes and Provisions, for the Good of the Realm, and the Encouragement of Trade, than any of his Predecessors. He curbed the Papacy; yet was a Friend to Religion. He was fond of Men of Merit, and encouraged the Sciences: He put many afflicted Persons above their undeserved Misfortunes; and erected several public Edifices, particularly *Windfor-Castle*, and the collegiate Chapel of *St. Stephen* at *Westminster*, where the Commons now sit in Parliament.

KING Edward the Third had Issue by his Queen *Pblippa of Hainault*, seven Sons and five Daughters. *Edward Prince of Wales*, his eldest Son, died in 1376, leaving one Son, who ascended the Throne, after his Grandfather. *William* died an Infant. *Lionel*, Duke of *Clarence*, died in *Italy*. *John of Gaunt*, or *Ghent*, who first married *Blanche*, Daughter of *Henry Duke of Lancaster*, and afterwards bore the Title of his Father-in-law; by which Marriage he had *Henry Earl of Derby*, Duke of *Hereford*, and *Lancaster*, afterwards *Henry the Fourth King of England*: He afterwards married *Constantia*, the eldest Daughter of *Peter King of Castile*, in whose Right he assumed the nominal Title of King of *Castile* and *Leon*. *Edward of Langley* was made Earl of *Cambridge*, and afterwards Duke of *York*, who married *Isabella*, the Sister of *Constantia of Castile*, from whom descended *Edward the Fourth*, afterwards King of *England*. *William of Windsor* died young. And *Thomas of Woodstock* died without Issue.

ISABELLA, the eldest Daughter, married *Ingebram Earl of Soiffons*. *Joan* had the Title of Queen of Spain, being married by Proxy to *Alphonso King of Castile*, who died before the Marriage was consummated. *Blanche* died in her Infancy. *Mary* married *John Montford*, Duke of *Bretagne*. And *Margaret* married *John Hastings Earl of Pembroke*.

THIS Reign is remarkable for two Dearth which happened in *England*. In 1348 a violent Plague which began in *Asia*, and spread into *Europe*, swept off such Numbers of People in *England*, that upwards of 50,000 were buried, in one Year, in the Church-yard belonging to the *Cistercians*, or the Charter-house of *London*: It continued fourteen Months, and destroyed above one Half of the Kingdom, or four Millions of People. In 1357 a great Murrain happened among the Cattle. And towards the latter End of this Reign, *John Wickliff*, Doctor in Divinity in the University of *Oxford*, published his Belief upon several Articles of Religion, against many superstitious Ceremonies of the *Romish* Church; but his Doctrine was not thoroughly regarded till the Reign of *Henry the Eighth*, when the Reformation was founded upon similar Principles.

IT is remarkable that the *Great Charter of Libertie* was confirmed ten several Times during this Reign: As also, that, in the Year 1362, it was ordained by Act of Parliament, that all Law Proceedings in the Courts at *Westminster* should for the future be in *English*, instead of the *French*, or *Norman*, introduced by *William the Conqueror*; whereby a final Blow was put to the *Norman* Encroachments on the *English* Language, and *England* was made Mistress of herself.

EDWARD of *Windsor*, an illustrious Name,
Recover'd *England's* Glory, Strength, and Fame.
By Birth, he boldly claim'd the *Gallic* Crown;
And with the Arms of *France* enrich'd his own.
The *French*, amaz'd, beheld their mighty Fleet,
By *England's* Navy, sunk at *Edward's* Feet.

The gallant Monarch, on the *Norman Strand*,
Then pour'd his Troops, and overran the Land:
In *Cressy's Field*, what noble Acts were done,
By *England's King*, and his heroic Son?
Oh! fatal Day to all the *Gallic Pow'r!*
France saw her Princes weltring in their Gore,
Her num'rous Host destroy'd, her Nobles slain,
And *England's Prince* victorious o'er the Plain.

With *Cæsar's Fortune*, and with *Ammon's Fire*,
Young *Edward* made a gazing World admire:
For *Victory*, in *Poitier's glorious Field*,
Made haughty *France* again to *Edward* yield.
Incredible the Scene! A little Band
Defeats an Host; and bathes with Blood the Land.
See, in the Fight, *Bohemia's Monarch* fall:
Behold, a Captive, in the royal *Gaul*:
But more; behold, a Victor, in the Heat
Of Youth and Fame, a Victor's Pride forgot!
Still, see his Glory with fresh Vigour run,
Bright in his Course as the meridian Sun:
One King, his Captive fell; and soon his Sword
Castilia's Monarch to his Throne restor'd:
Then dy'd in *PEACE*; when *War* no more could give,
Or Fame bestow, to make the Hero live.
Oh! *England's Phoenix*; Glory of Mankind;
When shall the World again thy Equal find?
Immortal Honours wait thy sacred Shade,
And these by latest Ages shall be paid.

Two captive Monarchs bow to *Edward's Throne*;
And *England's Glory* in full Lustre shone:
For *Scotland's King* had long a Pris'ner been,
Conquer'd by *Edward's* most illustrious Queen.
The *French* their richest Provinces resign;
But soon regain them for the *Gallic Line*.
Scotland subjected scorns the servile Chain;
While *Edward* meanly ends a glorious Reign.

XII. RICHARD II, surnamed of Bourdeaux, the thirty-second King of England, and the twelfth from the Norman Conquest.

THE Fate of King *Edward the Second* was recent in the Memory of the English People: But King *Richard the Second* unhappily trod in the Steps of his Great Grandfather, which brought him to the same unfortunate End.

A.D. As *Richard* was the Son of the late glorious Prince of 1377. *Wales*, and though he was but eleven Years of Age, he was crowned at *Westminster*, on the 16th of *July*, by the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, who administered to him the Coronation Oath, which has been taken by all his Successors; being to protect the Church, observe the Laws, distribute Justice, and shew Mercy. The Parliament appointed several Governors to the King, and ordered that his three Uncles should be Regents of the Kingdom, but joined with them some of the Nobility.

A.D. THE Truce with *France* being expired, the *French* sent 1378. a Fleet to ravage the Sea-Coasts of *England*; and the Regents equipped a Fleet to oppose the *French*, with which they undertook to restore the Duke of *Bretagne*, their Brother-in-law, to his Dominions, from whence he had been expelled by the King of *France*. In the mean Time, the *French* Monarch prevailed upon *Robert* the second King of *Scotland*, to break the Truce, and invade *England*: But as the King of *France* died soon after, and was succeeded by *Charles* the Sixth, a Minor of twelve Years of Age, as well as the King of *England*, the military Preparations were suspended on every Side.

A.D. THE Duke of *Lancaster* had Influence enough to get 1380. a Poll-tax passed at Twelve-pence a Head on all Persons above fifteen Years old, for the Assistance of *Ferdinand* King of *Portugal* against *John* King of *Castile*; which was levied with such Severity, as to cause an Insurrection

tion among the People of *Kent* and *Essex*; who were also A.D.
incensed against the Nobility and Practisers of the Law,
1380.
for their Pride and Extortion. *Wat Tyler*, a Tyler of
Deptford, and *Jack Straw*, were their Leaders; besides
John Ball, a Priest of *Maidstone*, persuaded them that all
Men were the Sons of *Adam*, and that it was their Duty
to reduce the World to a perfect Equality. Their Num-
ber soon amounted to above 100,000 Men: They cut
off the Heads of all the Lords, Gentlemen, and Lawyers,
that fell in their Hands; advanced to *Blackbeath*, and
from thence proceeded to *London*, which they entered
without Opposition. They plundered the *Savoy*, where
the Duke of *Lancaster* resided, and committed great Out-
rages; beheading the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and
Robert de Hales, High Treasurer of *England*; so that the
King was obliged to come to a Conference with *Wat Ty-
ler* in *Smithfield*.

LIVY observes, that the Multitude are either slavish
in their Obedience, or insolent in their Authority. *Ty-
ler* proposed to abolish all the old Laws, and form a new
A.D. 1381.
Model of popular Government; behaving so insolent to
the young King as to raise the Indignation of *William
Walworth*, Mayor of *London*, who discharged such a Blow
on the Rebel's Head with his Sword, as to lay him dead
at his Feet. The Followers of *Tyler* bent their Bows to
revenge his Death: But the King said to them, " What,
" my Lieges, will you kill your King? Follow me, I
" will be your Leader, and grant whatever ye desire." This
so far pacified them, that they followed the King
into *St. George's Fields*, where Sir *Robert Knollys* appeared
with 1000 Citizens in Arms, which struck such a Panic
into the Rebels that they readily submitted and dispersed.
Thus we see that the Multitude when united are of
Strength and Vigour; but when Individuals think of their
own Danger, the Body becomes weak and contem-
pible.

THIS Spirit of Rebellion extended also into *Suffolk*
and *Norfolk*: But it was suppressed by *Henry Spence* Bishop
of *Norwich*; who defeated the Rebels at *North-Walsham*
in *Norfolk*, and beheaded their two Leaders, *Wraw*, and

A. D. 1381. *Littester:* While the King sent an Army of 40,000 Men into *Kent* and *Essex* to punish the Ring-leaders, many of whom were slain, and *Jack Straw*, with above 1500 of his Followers, died by the Hangman, being condemned by Judge *Tresilian*, who was remarkable for his Cruelty.

A. D. 1382. SOON after this Insurrection was suppressed, the King married *Anne of Luxemburg*, Sister of the Emperor *Wenceslaus*: But the King was entirely governed by his Favourites, *Alexander Nevil* Archbishop of *York*, *Robert de Vere* Earl of *Oxford*, *Michael de la Poole* Son to a Merchant of *Kingston upon Hull*, and Judge *Tresilian*; who endeavoured to make the King jealous of his Uncle the Duke of *Lancaster*. However, as the *French* and *Scotch* were beginning Hostilities, *Richard* raised 300,000 Men, and sent the Duke of *Lancaster* with 60,000 to protect the North, while he guarded the South with the rest of his Army: Which prevented the threatened Invasion.

A. D. 1385. THE King grew more fond of his Favourites: He created the Earl of *Oxford* Duke of *Ireland*, and *Michael de la Poole* was made Earl of *Suffolk*. These Favourites encouraged the Duke of *Lancaster* to prosecute his Claim to the Crown of *Castile*, who landed in *Spain* with 20,000 Men: But the *French* took this Opportunity of renewing their Preparations to invade *England*; and *Richard* quarrelled with his Parliament, who refused to grant him Supplies unless he dismissed his Favourites. The King said, "That to please the Parliament he would not turn out the meanest Scullion in his Kitchen;" and sent his Chancellor to order them to grant the desired Subsidy: But he was obliged to part with his Favourites, and to admit of fourteen Commissioners to take Care of the public Affairs jointly with himself.

A. D. 1386. THE *French* Fleet being dispersed at Sea, and all Fear of an Invasion over, the Parliament broke up, and the King recalled his Favourites; who persuaded him to free himself from the Subjection of the Parliament. They compelled the Judges to sign an Opinion that the King was above the Laws; but one of them said, he deserved to be hanged for what he had done. The King ordered the

the Sheriffs to let no Representative be chosen in Parliament, but what was in the List he should give them himself; ^{1386.} and he issued out Commissioners to levy an Army, to chastise his Uncle the Duke of Gloucester, the Earls of Arundel, Warwick, Derby, and Nottingham, who were Enemies to his Favourites.

THE proscribed Lords were considered as the Protectors of the People; a vigorous Defence was necessary for their Preservation against the Court; and they soon drew together an Army of 40,000 Men, with which they marched directly to London. The King had not been able to raise an Army, and therefore tried to amuse the Lords, by holding a Conference with them in Westminster-Hall; when he promised to discard his Favourites: But the Duke of Ireland levied an Army in Wales, and was advancing towards London; when the Lords sent the Earl of Derby, the eldest Son of the Duke of Lancaster, to oppose him; who defeated the Royal Favourite at Babbelake, near Burford in Oxfordshire, and obliged him to fly into Holland.

THE King took Refuge in the Tower of London, where he held another Conference with the Lords; who upbraided him with his Design to make himself absolute, by Means of an Army; with his attempting to have a Parliament at his Devotion; and with other Grievances. Richard answered these Reproaches with a Shower of Tears; he consented to the Banishment of his Favourites; and came to Westminster to settle the Affairs of the Government, when the Judges were taken off the Benches in Westminster-Hall, and sent to the Tower.

A PARLIAMENT was held, called *the Merciless*; when several Persons were accused of High Treason, and sentenced to divers Punishments. Tresilian and others were hanged at Tyburn. The rest of the Judges were banished to Ireland: And the two Favourites, with the Archbishop of York, were condemned to Exile; after which the King renewed his Coronation Oath, and the Lords repeated their Oaths of Allegiance, as if a new Reign was begun.

THE King soon dismissed his best Ministers, and appointed bad ones; when the Duke of Lancaster arrived from his ^{1390.}

A.D. Spanish Expedition, after obliging the King of *Castile* to
1390. pay him a yearly Pension, in Consideration of his resigning all Pretensions to that Crown. But the Arrival of his Uncle was disagreeable to the King, who invested him with the Duchy of *Grenoble*, to get him out of the Way, that he might not behold the Folly and Profuseness of his Nephew.

A.D. 1392. THE Londoners refused to lend the King a Sum of Money; who, in Revenge, took away their Charter, stript the City of all her Privileges, and removed the Courts of Justice to *York*. He procured a Subsidy to suppress the Insurrections in *Ireland*; but returned from that Kingdom to suppress the *Lollards*, or the Followers of *Wickliff*, in *England*, where the Clergy were afraid they would effect a Reformation of the Church.

A.D. 1396. THE Queen died in 1394; and two Years after the King married *Isabella* Daughter of *Charles* the Sixth King of *France*, who was only seven Years of Age; when a Truce was concluded between the two Crowns for twenty-eight Years. *Richard*, to support his great Expences, extorted Money from his Subjects: He yielded *Chester* to the King of *Navarre*, and *Brest* to the Duke of *Bretagne*, for inconsiderable Sums: And the People were greatly dissatisfied at these Proceedings. The Duke of *Gloucester* was seized by the King's Order, and violently conveyed to *Calais*, where he was privately strangled: He sent the Earls of *Warwick* and *Arundel* to the Tower; the former of whom was banished, and the latter beheaded: All which increased the Resentment of the People.

A.D. 1398. A PARLIAMENT was held at *Shrewsbury*, only to consult how to carry the Royal Prerogative to such unlimited Bounds as to destroy the Constitution, and subvert the Liberties of the People. The King also banished the Duke of *Hereford*, and the Duke of *Norfolk*, to prevent their engaging in a Duel: Though the former was Son to the Duke of *Lancaster*, who died soon after the Banishment of his Son, and was buried in St. *Paul's* Cathedral; when his Honours and Estates devolved to the Duke of *Hereford*. The Ministers, of whom the Earl of *Wiltshire* was the Chief, brought the English Nation into the utmost Contempt;

Contempt: The *Scotch* ravaged the Borders, the *Irish* revolted, and the Merchant Ships were plundered by the *Corsairs of Holland*, with Impunity: Seventeen Counties were condemned as guilty of Treason, and the Estates of all the Inhabitants adjudged to the King, for assisting the Duke of Gloucester in 1386: But these Oppressions brought on his Ruin.

ROGER MORTIMER Earl of March, who was declared by Act of Parliament presumptive Heir of the Crown, was slain in *Ireland* by the Rebels; and the King, with a great Army, went over in Person to chastise them; leaving his Uncle the Duke of York Regent in *England*: But this gave the *English* an Opportunity of forming a Conspiracy to deprive him of the Crown. The Malecontents invited the Duke of *Hereford* to be their Leader, who came over with the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, *Thomas Fitz-Alan* Son of the late Earl of *Arundel*, the Lord *Cobham*, Sir *Thomas Erpington*, and about eighty Men: They landed at *Ravenspur* in *Yorkshire*, on the 4th of *July*, where they were joined by the Earl of *Northumberland*, and the brave *Henry Piercy* his Son; whose Example soon brought an Army of sixty thousand Men under the Banners of him whom they looked upon as their Deliverer.

HENRY, who now assumed the Title of Duke of *Lancaster*, had greatly distinguished himself as a Soldier in *Germany*; and he was so well beloved that *London* declared for him, and the other Towns followed. The Ministry shut themselves up in *Bristol Castle*, and the Regent retired in the Country; while all the other Lords openly declared for the Duke of *Lancaster*, who was triumphantly received by the Citizens of *London*. He then proceeded to *Bristol*, took the Castle, and put the Earl of *Wiltshire*, with some of his Friends, to Death. The Duke of *York* also assisted his Nephew the Duke of *Lancaster*; and the King returned from *Ireland* as soon as the Wind was favourable, which detained him so long, that an Army raised for him by the Earl of *Salisbury* in *Wales* disbanded, imagining he was dead. The King landed at *Milford-Haven*; and, finding the Revolt was general, shut himself up in *Conway Castle*. The Duke of *Lancaster* was advancing towards

Chester

Chester at the Head of his Army, when the King sent him Word, that he was ready to submit to what Terms he should judge reasonable. An Interview was had between the King and the Duke at *Flint*; when *Henry* told *Richard*, that as he had governed his People very ill for one and twenty Years, he would help him to govern them better for the future: After which they set out together for *London*, where the King was received very rudely by the Citizens, and confined in the Tower.

THE Duke caused the King to call a Parliament; and not only obliged him to deliver up the Crown and Sceptre, with the Ensigns of Royalty; but also, by an Instrument signed with his own Hand, to confess himself unworthy to govern any longer, and to absolve all his Subjects from their Allegiance to him. The Parliament then drew up Articles of Accusation against *Richard*, alledging many Acts of Misgovernment to his Charge, particularly his Dissipation of the Revenue, Disabuse of Parliaments, and arbitrary Interpretations of the Laws: After which, he was solemnly deposed, like *Edward* the Second; and *Henry* Duke of *Lancaster* was proclaimed King on the 30th of September.

THE Commons would have brought *Richard* to a Trial after his Deposition; but *Henry* and the Lords were against it: So that it was resolved, *Richard* should be kept in Confinement during Life, with a Princely Allowance: But in case any Person should attempt his Deliverance, he should suffer Death. The deposed Prince was afterwards removed from the Tower, and confined in *Pontefract-Castle* in *Yorkshire*, where he met with a tragical End; confirming the old Maxim, "that there is but a small Space between the Prisons and the Graves of Princes." He was murdered on the 14th of February 1400, by Sir *Pierce de Exton*, who, with eight Ruffians, undertook to kill him, in hopes of pleasing *Henry*: They rushed in upon him, and *Richard* summoned up all his Courage that he might die as a King and a Man: He wrested a Pole-Ax from one of the Ruffians, with which he laid four of them dead at his Feet; but *Exton*, mounting on a Chair behind

behind him, struck him so violent a Blow on the Head with a Club, that *Richard* fell down dead.

THUS died this Prince, in the thirty-third Year of his Age, after reigning twenty-two Years. A melancholy Reward for the many signal Services his glorious Father had done for *England*! Which might have been an instructive Lesson to some of his Successors, who by his sad Catastrophe might have learnt, that, in *England*, all the Endeavours of a King to usurp an arbitrary Power, are but so many Steps towards his Destruction. He was first buried at *King's Langley* in *Hertfordshire*; but *Henry the Fifth* ordered his Body to be removed to *Westminster-Abbey*.

RICHARD had a very graceful, lovely Person; and had a sprightly Behaviour. By grasping at all, he lost every Thing: And what could be expected from a King, who was taught that the Laws of the Realm were in his Head and his Breast? If we survey him in his Taxations, his Laws, and Ordinances; as also in his Station of a Christian, a Man and a King; we may, with a little Charity, or good Nature, conclude him blameable rather by Accident than Disposition: But his Actions and Conduct were so unaccountable, that it would puzzle a *Machiavel* to assign him a Character, or to fix him in any Rule or Principle of Government.

IN 1383, several Churches were thrown down by an Earthquake. About this Time the Use of Guns came in; Sir *Hugh Calverly*, Governor of *Calais*, being the first who employed them in the *English* Service. And in 1390, a great Mortality happened, especially among the young People; which was followed by a Famine.

RICHARD of *Bourdeaux* young to Empire came;
And grievous Taxes *England's* Sons enflame.
A desp'rate Insurrection fills the Land:
But *Tyler* falls by noble *Walworth's* Hand.
Peace was restor'd, till *Vere* and *De la Poole*,
The royal Minions, made their King their Tool:
The Barons arm again in *Freedom's* Cause;
But die, supporting of their Country's Laws.

The

The royal Glo'ster met a cruel Fate;
And Hereford was banish'd from the State:
But soon the last return'd; the King depos'd,
Reveng'd his Wrongs, and England's Sorrows clos'd:
While the unhappy Richard Captive lies,
And soon by Ruffians Hands at Pont'fract dies.
A dreadful Lesson to succeeding Times,
That Princes suffer for their Fav'rite's Crimes.



A N E W
H I S T O R Y
O F
E N G L A N D.

The THIRD PART.

From the Beginning of the Reign of
Henry the Fourth in 1399, to the
Reign of *Henry* the Seventh, in 1485.

—
T
—
X
—
I
I
t
a
n
f
i
l
n
s
o

The HOUSE of LANCASTER,
or the RED ROSE.

XIII. HENRY IV, surnamed of Bolingbroke,
the thirty third King of England, the thirteenth from the Norman Conquest, and the first of the House of Lancaster.

IT is a Maxim in the Law, “ That the King of *England* never dies.” But, if it had been otherwise, the Interregnum, from the Deposition of *Richard* the Second to the Coronation of *Henry* the Fourth, may be considered as an imperceptible Void of Government: For there never was a national Revolution so great and successful, so sudden and unobstructed.

UPON the Resignation of the Crown by King *Richard*, it was conferred upon the Duke of *Lancaster*, rather by parliamentary Election, than received by him as his hereditary Right; though he claimed it as being the Descendant of *Edmund Crouchback* Earl of *Lancaster*, and second Son to *Henry* the Third; also pretending that *Edmund* was elder Brother of *Edward* the First. But this was a frivolous Claim, set up to defeat the Right of *Edmund Mortimer* Earl of *March*, Son of *Roger Mortimer* who was slain in *Ireland*, after being declared the presumptive Heir of King *Richard* the Second. Indeed, *Edmund Mortimer* was descended from *Philippa*, Daughter to *Lionel Duke of*

of Clarence, third Son of Henry the Third: Whereas the Duke of Lancaster was Son of John of Gaunt, younger Brother of Lionel, and fourth Son of Edward the Third. However, the Mortimer Family became united to the Line of York, by the Marriage of Anne, Daughter to Roger Earl of Mortimer, with Richard Plantagenet, Earl of Cambridge, and Son of Edmund Duke of York, fifth Son of Edward the Third; in Virtue of which Marriage, Edward the Fourth succeeded to the Crown. Hence arose the grand national Distinctions between the Houses of Lancaster and York, which, during six Reigns together, scarce ever left the Kingdom cool enough for Observations of Civil Polity, and Administration: So that, from the Year 1400 to 1485, England was greatly distressed by Civil Commotions on Account of these two Families; which were then happily united in Henry the Seventh, who had in himself all the Right of the House of Lancaster, to which he added that of the House of York by marrying the Heiress of that Family.

A.D. 1399. *HENRY Duke of Lancaster* was surnamed of *Bolingbroke*, a Town in *Lincolnshire*, which was the Place of his Birth. He was proclaimed the 30th of *September*, the same Day that *Richard* was deposed; he immediately took the Reins of the Government, continued the Parliament which was assembled by the late King, and was crowned at *Westminster*, by the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, with the usual Formalities, on the 13th of *October*, being then Thirty-three Years of Age. The Crown was conferred upon him as a Reward for his Services to the State: But when once it was placed on his Head, he was afraid to acknowledge that the Parliament had a Power to give it him; because, from that Principle, it might be inferred, that they who had given the Crown, had Power to take it away. Therefore, on the Day he was crowned, he published a Proclamation, declaring, that he ascended the Throne, First, by right of Conquest; Secondly, by Virtue of *Richard's* Resignation, and Designation of him for his Successor; Lastly, as he was the next Heir Male of the late King: which were three weak Foundations, strengthened only by the Hand of Power; for he could not

not be said to conquer *England*, when he gained the A. D. Crown only by the Assistance of *Englishmen*; *Richard*^{1399.} could not, nor did he appoint him his Successor; and though he was Cousin-german of the late King, and consequently a nearer Relation than the Earl of *March*, who was one Degree farther removed, yet it did not follow that he was the next Heir, since, with Respect to the Succession, the Branch, and not the Degree of Relation, was to be regarded. In the deposing of *Edward* the Second, Care was taken to preserve the Rights of the lawful Successor, who was disregarded on the Deposition of *Richard* the Second; upon which Account, *Edmund Mortimer*, Earl of *March*, retired to his Lordship of *Wigmore*, in *Herefordshire*, as it was then both dangerous and fruitless, to assert his undoubted Right to the Crown.

THE new King rewarded those who had assisted him in the Revolution; and created his eldest Son *Henry*, aged thirteen Years, Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Aquitain*, *Lancaster*, and *Cornwal*, as also Earl of *Chester*. The Parliament restored the Rights and Privileges of the People; called the Advisers of *Richard's* Usurpations to an Account; and settled the Succession on the House of *Lancaster*.

THE deposing of a King being then odious in itself, and seeming to affect all Princes, it was not easy to persuade them, that a Nation had sufficient Reason to use so violent a Remedy, to free themselves from Tyranny: Upon which Account, *Henry* dispatched Ambassadors to all the principal Courts of *Europe*, endeavouring to give a plausible Colour to the Deposition of *Richard*, and the Promotion of himself. The *French* King, as *Richard* was his Son-in-law, was not easily appeased: And as *Richard* was born at *Bourdeaux*, the People of *Guienne* were ready to revolt; but were pacified with great Difficulty, by the Moderation, and prudent Conduct, of the famous *Robert Knollys*, Governor of that Province. The *Scotch* Monarch, after taking *Werk-Castle*, was prevailed on to confirm the Truce: And *Henry* endeavoured to preserve the Affections of his People, by shewing the tenderest Concern for their Interests, and the greatest Detestation

A.D. 1399. tation of the tyrannical Acts of his Predecessor. But this deceitful Calm, was followed by such violent Storms, that the whole thirteen Years of his Reign were divided between Wars and Conspiracies : Though it is said, the King was well pleased with these Troubles, as they gave no Interval to his Subjects for Reflection.

A.D. 1400. **RICHARD** was still living, and had several Friends; particularly the Dukes of *Albemarle, Surry, and Exeter*; the Earls of *Gloucester and Salisbury*, the Bishop of *Carlisle*, and Sir *Thomas Blount*, who formed a Conspiracy against *Henry*; resolving to assassinate him, and restore *Richard* to the Throne. But the Duke of *York* discovered the Conspirators.

HOWEVER, the Lords Conspirators assembled an Army of 40,000 Men, and set up *Maudlin*, a Priest, who well personated *Richard*, to pretend he was *Richard* himself. They intended to seize the King at *Windsor*: But they spent their Time ineffectually, till *Henry* raised an Army of 20,000 Men: Which made them retire to *Cirencester* in *Gloucestershire*; where the Generals were attacked in their Lodgings by the Mayor of the Town, who beheaded the Duke of *Surry* and the Earl of *Salisbury*. The Rebel Army dispersed; the Duke of *Exeter* was beheaded at *Pleshey* in *Essex*, and the Earl of *Gloucester* at *Bristol*; *Maudlin* was hanged at *London*; and their Conspiracy hastened the Death of the late King *Richard*, who was soon after murdered at *Pontefract*.

THE Truce was confirmed with *France*, and *Henry* invaded *Scotland*; reviving the Pretensions of *Edward* the First to the Sovereignty of that Kingdom; but an Insurrection among the *Welsh* obliged him to make a Peace with the *Scotch*. *Owen Glendour*, or *Glendouray*, though a private Gentleman, exerted all the Courage of a Hero, and all the Virtues of a Patriot, by endeavouring to free his Countrymen of *Wales* from the Servitude wherein they thought themselves bound by *England*: He prevailed upon the *Welsh* to renounce their Allegiance to *Henry*, and he himself assumed the Title of Prince of *Wales*. He defeated the Lord *Grey*, entered *Herefordshire*, took *Edmund Mortimer*

Mortimer Earl of *March* Prisoner, and ravaged the Country on the *West* of the *Severn*: While *Henry* was employed in suppressing the *Lollards*, or Followers of *Wickliff*, whose Opinions and Doctrine were embraced by so many People, that *William Sawtree* was burnt alive in *London*, as a Heretic, to deter others from attempting a Reformation. *Sawtree* was a Clergyman, and the first Man who suffered Death in *England*, for the Sake of Religion, since the Establishment of Christianity: But in the next Century many religious Men perished as Martyrs upon the same Account.

HENRY sent *Isabella*, the Widow of *Richard the Second*, back again to *France*; and then led his Army into *Wales*: But *Glendour* withdrew to the Mountains, and the King returned to *London*; where he put to Death *Roger Clarendon* natural Son of *Edward the late renowned Prince of Wales*, and several others, for asserting that *Richard* was alive, and that *Henry* was an Usurper. The same Year, the King married *Joanna of Navarre*, Widow of the Duke of *Bretagne*, with a View of obtaining the Guardianship of her Sons; but the Duke of *Burgundy* carried them to *Paris*, where they were educated.

HENRY advanced again towards *Wales*; but was unable to come up with *Glendour*, who retired to the Mountains of *Snowdon*. In the mean Time, the *Scotch* invaded *England*, under the Command of the Earl of *Douglas*; who was defeated at *Halidown-Hill*, by the Earl of *Northumberland*, and *Henry Hotspur* his Son, who was esteemed the bravest Man in *England*; the *English* being entirely victorious, and the *Scotch* losing upwards of 10,000 Men.

WALE RAN, Earl of *St. Pol*, of the House of *Luxemburg*, having married a Half Sister of *Richard the Second*, pretended to act in his own Name, to revenge the Death of the King his Brother-in-law. The Court of *France* gave him Assistance, and he made a Descent upon the *Isle of Wight*; but the Inhabitants obliged him to retire. *Henry* was sensible that his Kingdom abounded with Malecontents; therefore he took no Notice of this Insult, and endeavoured to preserve the Truce with *France*; though the Duke of *Orleans* sent him a Challenge

A.D. lenge to fight, either in single Combat, or with a hundred Knights on each Side.

INDEED, Henry acted with great Prudence in avoiding a Rupture with France; for nothing less than his Crown was at Stake in England. The Earl of Northumberland, in the late Victory at Halidown-Hill, had made Prisoners of the Earls of Douglas, Angus, Fife, Athol, Monteith, and a great Number of other Officers of Distinction: But the King ordered Northumberland to deliver up the Prisoners into his Hands; which exasperated the Earl so far, that he projected the dethroning of Henry, whom he had lately promoted to the Crown. The Earl, with Henry Hotspur his Son, and some other Lords, agreed to set the Crown on the Head of Edmund Mortimer Earl of March, who was a Prisoner with Glendour in Wales: The two last concurred in the Plot, and it was stipulated, that the Earl of March should take Possession of the Kingdom, the Earl of Northumberland hold all the Country lying North of the Trent, and Glendour enjoy all the Countries West of the Severn.

THE Piercies suddenly appeared in Arms in the North, and proceeded to join Glendour who was advanced into Shropshire. The Rebels encamped near Shrewsbury, and the King marched his Army directly to that Town, where a Battle ensued on the 22^d of July, at a Place afterwards called Battle-field. The royal Army consisted of a choice Body of 14000 Men, headed by the King, the Prince of Wales, and the Scotch Earl of March: But the Rebels were more in Number, headed by Henry Piercy, surnamed Hotspur, his Uncle the Earl of Worcester, and the Scotch Earl of Douglas. The King behaved with great Bravery; and the Prince of Wales signalized his Valour: While Hotspur and Douglas animated their Men by their own gallant Example. However, the King obtained so compleat a Victory, that about 10,000 of the Rebels were killed, and among them the brave Henry Piercy, who fell by the Hand of the Prince of Wales: Though the King had only 1600 Men killed, and 4000 wounded; the Earl of Stafford, Sir Walter Blunt, and nine other Knights, being among the Slain. The Body of Hotspur was quartered

tered, and fixed on Poles in the Highways : The Earl of A. D. Worcester, and the Baron Kinderton, who were taken Prisoners, were beheaded : But the King pardoned the Earl of Northumberland, and released the Earl of Douglas for his Valour.

GLENDOUR removed into Wales ; and the French A. D. made him their Ally : They also encouraged the Bretons ^{1403.} to make a Descent in the West of England ; and Henry gave his Subjects Leave to return the Insult.

THE King sent an Army against Glendour, commanded by the Prince of Wales, who obtained two Victories over the Welsh. A. D. ^{1505.} But the French took several Places in Guienne ; and Henry desired his Nobles to grant him an Aid of Money, which they refused, being unwilling to establish so unparliamentary a Precedent, because no Application was made to the Commons : This occasioned another Conspiracy, headed by the Archbishop of York, the Earl of Northumberland, Thomas Mowbray Earl Marshal, and several other Noblemen, who assembled a great Number of Troops at York, and published a Manifesto, declaring the King a Traitor, and that they were determined to put Mortimer the lawful Heir on the Throne.

SOME Time before the King had Intelligence of this Rebellion, a Body of his Troops were ordered to assemble near York, under the Command of Ralph Nevil Earl of Westmoreland, to make Head against the Scots, who seemed inclined to renew the War. The Earl found the Superiority of the Rebel Troops made it dangerous for him to attack them : Therefore he held a Conference with the Archbishop and Earl Marshal, in an open Plain, encompassed by both Armies. The Rebel Leaders thought that the Earl of Westmoreland would make one of their Party ; who ordered his Guards to withdraw, to convince the Archbishop of his Sincerity. The Archbishop and Earl Marshal likewise sent their Guards away, and fell into the Snare laid for them : For they were hardly out of Sight, when the others returned ; and before the Archbishop and Mowbray could be relieved, they were both taken and conducted to the royal Army. The Seizure of their Leaders threw the Rebels into such a Conster-

A. D. Consternation, that every Man dispersed, and sought his own Safety; which entirely suppressed the Rebellion:

1405. When the King came into the North, where the Archbishop, Earl Marshal, Lord Hastings, and Lord Falconbridge, were beheaded: But the Earl of Northumberland, and Lord Bardolf, retired into Scotland.

WHILE Henry was in the North, the French landed 12000 Men at Milfordhaven in Wales, commanded by the Marshal de Montmorency, who joined Glendour, and took several Places. But the King marched towards Wales, and Montmorency returned to France; leaving Glendour to defend himself, who obliged the King to withdraw. However, the French pretended that this was no Breach of the Truce, as it was a private Undertaking; and Henry was unwilling to declare War against that Nation.

THE King having deprived the Earl of Northumberland of the Royalty of the Isle of Man, made a Grant of it to Sir John Stanley, which still remains in his Family. He extorted a Subsidy from his Parliament, and procured an Act, excluding the Female Issue from the Crown: But as the Nation considered this as an Introduction of the Salique Law of France, the King was obliged to repeal the Act the same Year it was passed; whereby the Right of the Earl of March was still preserved, which, by the Female Line, intitled him to the Crown; besides, a new Act was passed, whereby the Females, and their Posterity, were established in their natural Rights; which strengthened the Title of Mortimer, and consequently of his Descendant the Duke of York, who afterwards de-throned the Grandson of King Henry.

A. D. THE Earl of Northumberland, and the Lord Bardolf, 1406. were apprized that some Scotch Lords had agreed to deliver them up to Henry: Upon which, they retired to Wales, under the Protection of Glendour. The same Year, James Prince of Scotland was sent by his Father Robert the Third to be educated at the Court of France: But the young Prince landed on the Coast of Norfolk, where he was seized, brought up to London, and confined in the Tower, by the Command of King Henry; who, soon

soon after, had like to have been taken by some French Pirates, as he was passing from Kent to Norfolk by Sea. 1406.

THE ill Affection of his Subjects in England, prevented Henry from sending Forces to protect his Dominions in France; which the French were continually plundering. However, he concluded a Truce with the Bretons; and then found himself more at Leisure to chastise the Earl of Northumberland, who never ceased contriving Means with Glendour to dethrone the King. The Welsh were in Arms; and the Earl of Northumberland returned to the North, where he raised a Body of Men to join the Welsh: But they were defeated by Sir Thomas Rokeby, Sheriff of York; the Earl being slain on the Spot, and the Lord Bardolph mortally wounded; both of whose Heads were fixed upon London-Bridge.

HENRY sent a Fleet, commanded by Edmund Holland, Earl of Kent, to suppress the French Pirates, who were defeated on the Coast of Bretagne; but the Earl of Kent was killed at the Isle of Brebac: After which, a separate Truce was concluded with France for two Years. 1408.

THE War, which was kindled in France between the Houses of Orleans and Burgundy, was very beneficial to England; as the Welsh were no more assisted by the French, and Glendour began to lose so much of his Authority, that he concealed himself, and died unknown. This rendered Henry more absolute at Home, who shewed, that he would have been glad to have governed in an arbitrary Manner, though he had deposed Richard for acting so contrary to the Laws.

THE Court endeavoured to break in upon the Privileges of the Parliament, by getting the Sheriffs to return such Representatives as they thought proper: Which, in Fact, was laying the Axe to the very Root of the Constitution; for if the Privilege of electing their Representatives in Parliament, is taken away from the People, the Nation must be thrown into a State of Slavery. But the Commons prevented this national Grievance, by passing an Act against false Returns: They also presented a Petition in Favour of the Lords, and against the Incomes of the Clergy: But the King countenanced the Clergy; and or-

A.D. dered *Thomas Badby*, a *Lollard*, to be burnt for He.
1410. refy.

A. D. THE Duke of *Burgundy* had been at the Head of the
1411. French Government, and had long entertained Thoughts
of reducing *Calais*: But, as he had murdered the Duke of
Orleans, several Lords entered into a League against him;
and he applied to the King of *England* for Assistance, who
sent him a considerable Body of Troops, commanded by
John Fitz-Alan Earl of Arundel.

A. D. BUT Henry began to think of Means to reap some
1412. Benefit from the Troubles in *France*, as the French had
frequently attempted to take Advantage of the Insur-
rections in *England*; and therefore concluded an Alliance
with the *Orleans* Faction, against the Duke of *Burgundy*.
The French Princes were to give up to the King of *Eng-*
land all *Guienne*, and *Poitou*; who, in Return, was to
assist them with 1000 Men at Arms, and 3000 Archers.
These Troops landed in *Normandy*, under the Command
of *Thomas Duke of Clarence*, second Son to *Henry*: But
the French Factions were reconciled on his Arrival; and
the Duke led his Troops into *Guienne*.

A. D. ENGLAND now enjoyed a profound Tranquillity;
1413. and the King affected Popularity, by endeavouring to
shew that he regarded nothing so much as the Rights and
Privileges of the People: But, while he was recovering
his own Reputation, he saw that of his Son the Prince of
Wales dwindling into Contempt. The King began to
suspect that the Prince had ill Designs against him: But
the Son soon removed those Suspicions of the Father,
who was then seized with a Distemper, which, in three
Months, laid him in his Grave, while he was projecting
an Expedition to the *Holy Land*.

THE King died either of a Leprosy, or a Kind of Apo-
plexy, on the 20th of March 1413, in the forty-sixth
Year of his Age, and the fourteenth of his Reign. He
expired in the *Jerusalem Chamber* at *Westminster*, and was
buried at *Canterbury*.

THE distinguishing Character of this Monarch was an
extreme Jealousy of a Crown, acquired by Ways not
universally approved, and preserved by shedding a Tor-
rent

rent of noble Blood. He employed all his Thoughts in preserving it, and avoiding all Occasions by which it might be endangered. His Life affords little Subject for Panegyric; but his Attachment to the Clergy procured him excessive Commendations. He was a greater Man than a Prince: But his Fortune, as a Prince, exceeded his Happiness as a Man; and if he sometimes encroached upon the Privileges of Parliament, the Parliament also gained from him some permanent and important ones for their Posterity.

His Person was of a middle Size, well fitted for the Use of Arms: His Air was serious, and his Mind serene.

By his first Wife, *Mary de Bohun*, younger Daughter of *Humphry Earl of Hereford*, he had four Sons, and two Daughters. The eldest Son was *Henry of Lancaster*, who succeeded to the Crown: The second was *Thomas Duke of Clarence*: The third *John Duke of Bedford*: And the fourth *Humphry Duke of Gloucester*. *Blanche*, the elder Daughter was first married to *Lewis Barbatus Duke of Bavaria*, afterwards to the King of *Arragon*, and a third Time to the Duke of *Bar*. And *Philippa* married *Eric King of Denmark*. But *Henry* had no Issue by his second Wife *Joan of Navarre*.

HENRY the Fourth instituted the Duchy Court in Honour of the House of *Lancaster*, that the Lands belonging to this Duchy might be distinguished from those belonging to the Crown. In 1407, a terrible Plague raged at *London*, which swept away above 30,000 Inhabitants. *William Wickham Bishop of Winchester* flourished in this Reign; as also did *Geoffry Chaucer*, and *John Gower*: The Bishop was a great Founder of Learning; and the two Poets were the first Refiners of the *English* Language.

Lancaster Henry, by the Peoples Choice,
Receiv'd the Crown, with one concurrent Voice:
But soon for *Mortimer*, the lawful Heir,
The gallant *Hotspur* heads the Rebel War.
Near fair *Salopia* was the bloody Strife,
Where martial *Piercy* lost his noble Life.

Brave Hero, though Rebellion wounds thy Fame,
Yet *England* has immortaliz'd thy Name!

The Laurels blooming o'er thy manly Brow,
By no ignoble Hand were levell'd low:
By *England's* Prince thy envy'd Life expires,
Who, in thy Fall, heroic Worth admires.

Glendour, in *Wales*, the *British* Flame revives;
But vainly for his Country's Freedom strives.
More Insurrections shake the *English* Throne;
But *Henry's* Prudence still preserves the Crown:
His *Rose* was deeper redder'd, by a Flood
Of hapless *England's* most illustrious Blood:
Till, blest with Peace, he sees no Rival near;
And, dying, sheds *Ambition's* bitter Tear!

XIV. HENRY V. surnamed of Monmouth,
the thirty-fourth King of England, the fourteenth from the Norman Conquest, and the second of the House of Lancaster.

ENVY, which is the Canker of Honour, is best extinguished, by a Prince declaring himself in his Ends, rather to seek Merit than Fame; and by attributing his Successes rather to divine Providence and Felicity, than to his own Virtue or Policy. This was done by *Henry* the Fifth, who had been a Student in *Queen's College* in *Oxford*, under the Tuition of the Bishop of *Winchester* his Uncle: But, as his Father thought proper to give him little Employment in the State, the young Prince was easily led into wild Courses, unbecoming his Birth, and injurious to his Reputation. However, he shewed a noble Disposition of Soul upon many Occasions: Particularly his Moderation, in suffering himself to be led to Prison, by Order of the Judge he had affronted in his Office, was a clear Evidence, that the Seeds of Virtue were not destroyed by Sensuality. The People were inspired with the Hopes of a happy Change in his Person;

nor were they disappointed; for he began his Reign with every Merit that could adorn Royalty, and dignify Power.

THIS Prince was born at *Monmouth* in 1388, and was A. D. twenty-five Years of Age when he succeeded to the ^{1413.} Crown; the Ceremony of his Coronation being performed at *Westminster*, on the 9th of April 1413, by *Thomas Arundel* Archbishop of *Canterbury*. The Parliament offered to swear Allegiance to him before he was crowned: But the Prince declined the Acceptance of this Confidence in a very polite and noble Manner; telling them, "It was not reasonable they should swear to be faithful to him, before he himself had taken a solemn Oath to govern them according to Law." Those who had been most averse to the House of *Lancaster* were the first to pay him their Duty: And even the Earl of *March*, relying on his Generosity, voluntarily put himself into his Hands, to convince him of his sincere Intention to give him no Disturbance in the peaceable Possession of the Throne. The King banished the Companions of his former Riots from his Court, exhorting them to leave off their dissolute Way of Life, and dismissing them with liberal Presents. He then appointed Persons of the greatest Abilities for his Council, nominated good Judges to preside in the Courts of Law, promoted worthy Clergymen to the Benefices of the Church, and secured the Liberty of Parliament.

THE Doctrine of *Wickliffe* was now embraced all over the Kingdom, and the *Lollards* were so numerous as to threaten the total Extinction of the Papal Power in *England*. This alarmed the Clergy, and they prevailed upon the King to come into all their violent Measures against the reforming Sect, by filling him with most dreadful Apprehensions of their Designs against the Government. Sir *John Oldcastle*, commonly called the good Lord *Cobham*, was at the Head of the *Lollards*; he was esteemed one of the best Soldiers in the Kingdom, was extremely beloved by the People, and greatly regarded by the King: But the Clergy, in his Person, sought to give a mortal Blow to the *Wickliffites*. Sir *John Oldcastle* was

A. D. condemned by the Clergy for a Heretic, and imprisoned
1413. in the Tower, from whence he made his Escape: While
some of his Sect made a Practice of assembling in *St. Giles's Fields*, which occasioned the King to issue a Proclamation against them, forbidding the Promulgation of their Doctrine. This enflamed the Zeal of some of the *Lollards*; who imagined they could awe the Government, if united among themselves, and headed by their favourite Hero Sir *John Oldcastle*: So that *St. Giles's Fields*, hitherto the Scene of their Devotion, was now reported to the King to be that of their Rebellion. He was made to believe that 20,000 of them were assembling together. Upon which he headed a Body of Soldiers, surprised about 100 of the pretended Conspirators as they were assembling in the Fields, killed some, and took others Prisoners; putting forty of the principal People among the latter to Death, as Heretics and Traitors, who were first hanged, and then burnt, in *St. Giles's Fields*. Many others likewise suffered in different Parts of the Kingdom; and a Proclamation was issued for apprehending Sir *John Oldcastle*, who was charged with an Intention of murdering the King, and exterminating the Constitution; though this great Man was not with the *Lollards* when they were surprised by the King, nor does it appear that either he or they ever had any such Intention. However, this Morning-Star of the Reformation was obliged to conceal himself on the Borders of *Wales* till the Year 1418, when he was taken Prisoner by the Lord *Powis*, sent up to *London*, and executed in *St. Giles's Fields* upon his former Outlawry; being sentenced to be first hanged, and afterwards burnt hanging.

A KIND of War had subsisted between *England* and *France* ever since the Breach of the Treaty of *Bretigny*, in 1369; though often interrupted by Truces in the late Reigns. The Court of *France* was so well acquainted with the Temper, Character, and Politics of *Henry the Fourth*, that they were not afraid to insult him upon every Occasion, during almost the whole Course of his Reign: But his Son had a nobler Spirit, and knew how to revenge the Affronts thrown upon his Father. War was become

become necessary, to dispel the ill Humours spread over A. D. 1413. *England* during the late Reign; where the People wanted an active and warlike King, who knew how to take Advantage of the Commotions in *France*; for the French Monarch *Charles the Sixth* was troubled with a Delirium, and his Kingdom was divided between the contending Factions of the Dukes of *Orleans* and *Burgundy*, who aimed at the Possession of the Government.

COMMISSIONERS were appointed for adjusting the Differences between the two Crowns, and those of *France* 1414. were demanded to deliver up whatever had been taken from *England* since the Conclusion of the Treaty of *Bretigny* in 1360. The French proposed a Marriage between the King of *England*, and *Catharine* the youngest Daughter of the King of *France*. But nothing could be done by Negotiation, and *Henry* determined to do himself Justice by Arms; whereby he obtained both the Princeſ, and the Kingdom of *France*. The Commons petitioned him to seize the Revenues of the Clergy; and the Clergy delivered up 110 alien Priories to the King: They suspected this would not be satisfactory; and therefore they encouraged him to make War upon *France*; hoping that the military Troubles Abroad, would preſerve the ecclesiastical Peace at Home.

HENRY CHICHELEY, Successor to *Thomas Arundel* in the Archiepiscopal See of *Canterbury*, advised the King in a public Parliament, held at *Leicester*, to assert his Claim to the whole Kingdom of *France*, as Heir and Successor of *Edward the Third*. The Parliament approved of the War, and the King had a large Subſidy granted for the Execution thereof. Though when he demanded the Crown of *France*, the Dauphin ſent him in Derision a Tun of Tennis-Balls for a Preſent; intimating that he thought him fitter for Play than for War: But he was ſoon of another Opinion; for *Henry* ſent him back Word, he would quickly repay him with ſuch Balls as the strongest Gates of *Paris* ſhould not be Rackets ſufficient to rebound; and his Actions ſhewed him as good as his Word. The Dauphin had run into all the Exceſſes of a debauched Life, and ſtill continued in that State of

A. D. **D**epravity: While *Henry* threw off the Follies of Youth,
1414. and assumed all the Dignity of a King: So that his Virtues made the Dauphin tremble for his Insolence.

A. D. **T**HE Ministry of *France* have been generally too politic
1415. for that of *England* in the Trade of Negotiation: But *Henry* first over-reached them at their Weapons, and then conquered them with his own. While he was preparing for War, he was amusing them with the Hopes of Peace: He insisted upon the Performance of the Treaty of *Bretigny*, as he knew the *French* would defer it till he was ready to make his Invasion: And, accordingly, he embarked his Army on board his Fleet at *Southampton*, about the Beginning of *August*.

THE *French* dreaded the approaching Storm, and endeavoured to destroy their Enemy by bribing three of his Officers to form a Conspiracy against him in Favour of the Earl of *March*. *Richard* Earl of *Cambridge*, Brother to the Duke of *York*, *Henry Scrope* Lord Treasurer, and Sir *Thomas Grey* a Privy Counsellor, were the mean Instruments of *France* on this Occasion: But the Earl of *March* discovered the whole to the King, who ordered the Conspirators to be seized, condemned, and executed for their Treason. This was the first Spark of that Flame, which, in Proces of Time, consumed the two Houses of *Lancaster* and *York*: For the Earl of *Cambridge* was Grandson to King *Edward the Third*, and was married to *Anne* the Sister of the Earl of *March*, by whom he had Issue *Richard*, afterwards Duke of *York*, and Father of King *Edward the Fourth*, who expelled the Son of *Henry the Fifth* from the Throne.

THE *Athenians*, while they made a convenient War in their own Territories, remained Victors: But when they departed out of their own Country, and transported their Army into *Sicily*, they quite lost their Liberty. This was not the Case with *Henry* after he left *England*, and invaded *France*: For he acted upon the Principles of *Scipio* and *Hannibal*, by carrying the War into the Country of his Enemy. His Fleet consisted of 1500 transport Ships, and his Army consisted of 50,000 Men; which Number was never exceeded by the *Romans* when they invaded

any

any Country. The King landed his Army, on the 21st of A. D. August, at *Havre de Grace* in *Normandy*, and immediately laid Siege to *Harfleur*. He had a Train of modern Artillery in his Army; the largest of which he called his Daughter, and several small ones were called his Maidens. This Artillery played so dreadfully against the Town, that it was obliged to surrender in five Weeks; when *Henry* expelled the Inhabitants, and planted an *English* Colony in their Room, as his Great Grandfather *Edward* the Third had done at *Calais*, sixty-eight Years before. *Henry* then sent a Challenge to the Dauphin, offering to decide all their Differences by a single Combat between their two Persons: But the Dauphin meanly declined engaging with that Enemy which he had so lately treated with Contempt. However, the *French* assembled their Forces from all Parts, to give Battle to the *English*, who were greatly diminished by the Flux.

HENRY might have reembarked at *Harfleur*; but, as it would have too much the Appearance of a Flight, he resolved to retire by Land to *Calais*. His March was greatly interrupted by a Body of *French* Troops, commanded by the Constable *d'Albret*; and when he arrived at the *Somme*, in Expectation of fording that River at *Blanchetaque*, as *Edward* the Third had done the Day before the Battle of *Cressy*, he found the Pass so strongly defended that it was impracticable to force a Passage.

THE *French* Army was now collected together, and gave the *English* an Opportunity of passing the River, between *St. Quintin* and *Peronne*; because, as the former were sixteen Times more in Number than the latter, they were determined to offer *Henry* Battle in his March, and were confident of Victory. The Constable and Princes that were in the *French* Army sent three Heralds to challenge the King of *England* to fight; who replied, "He was resolved to pursue his March to *Calais*, and they should always find him ready to receive them." *Henry* was determined to open his Way to *Calais*, and hazard a Battle rather than return to *Harfleur*. The *French* again sent him Word to fight, and *Henry* accepted the Challenge:

A. D. lenge: So that both Armies prepared for the Engagement.

WHEN *Tigranes*, the Armenian, who was at the Head of 400,000 Men, saw the Romans, under *Lucullus*, come on to attack him with only 14,000 Men, he said, "they were too few for an Army, and too many for an Embassy." He had the same Contempt of the Romans, as the French had now of the English: But that Contempt proved equally fatal to *Tigranes* and the French Generals. There was also a wide Disparity between the French and the English Armies; the one consisting of 150,000 Men, and the other amounting only to 9000: So that the former made Rejoicings in their Camp, as if the latter were already defeated, and even insolently sent to *Henry* to know what he would give for his Ransom; who replied, that a few Hours would shew whose Care it would be to make that Provision. The English, fatigued in their March, afflicted with the Flux, and almost starving for want of Food, were inspirited by the Example of their King; behaving with the Fortitude of Men determined to conquer or die; and it is remarkable, that *Henry* having sent *David Gam*, a Welsh Captain, to review the Strength of the Enemy, this brave Officer gallantly reported, that "There were enough to be killed, enough to be taken Prisoners, and enough to run away."

THE Field of Battle was in a Plain between *Agincourt* and *Rousserville*, in *Picardy*, about three Marches distant from the famous Spot of *Cressy*; and *Henry* was now to acquire as much Glory at the former Place, as his Great Uncle, the *Black Prince*, had done at the latter. The French Army was commanded by the Constable *D'Albret*, who committed an inexcusable Fault on this Occasion, in chusing for the Field of Battle a narrow Ground, flanked on one Side by a Rivulet, and on the other by a large Wood: He divided his Army into three Bodies; the first of which he commanded himself, with the Dukes of *Orleans*, and *Bourbon*, the Earls of *Eu*, *Vendome*, and other of the Nobility: The Duke of *Alençon*, a Prince of the Blood, commanded the second Body:

And

And the Earl of *Marle* was at the Head of the third. A. D. 1415.
The King of *England*, in drawing up his Army, could make but two Lines on Account of the small Number of his Troops: *Edward Duke of York* commanded the first, assisted by the Lords *Beaumont, Willoughby, and Fanhope*: The King headed the second Line, with a gold Crown on his Helmet for a Crest, attended by his Brother *Humphry Duke of Gloucester, John Lord Mowbray Earl Marshal, Richard de Vere Earl of Oxford, and Michael de la Poole Earl of Suffolk*: The small Body which formed the Rear being commanded by *Thomas Beaufort Earl of Dorset*. The King posted 400 Lances behind the Wood, on the Left of the Field of Battle; and lodged 200 Archers in a low Meadow, fenced with Bushes on the Right: Besides, as the Strength of the Enemy consisted in their Cavalry, and his own Strength lay in his Infantry, he ordered Piles or Stakes to be fixed in the Ground, pointed at both Ends, six or seven Feet long, to keep off the *French* Horse, and secure his own Foot; which Stratagem was afterwards practised by the Prince of *Orange*, and his Stakes called *Chevaux de Frize*, or the *Dutch* Horse.

THE *Englisb* Soldiers were animated by their King, who appeared with all the Magnificence of a royal Warrior; and after paying his Devotion to Heaven, admonished his Troops to place all their Trust in God: But the *French* Princes too presumptuously depended upon themselves. However, they were afraid to begin the Engagement: Whereupon, *Henry* said to his Officers, with a cheerful Countenance, " Since these Men have " blocked up our Passage, let us proceed, and break " through them in the Name of the holy Trinity." He then ordered Sir *Thomas Erpingham*, who acted as Field-Marshal, to give the Signal of Battle, which he did by throwing up his Truncheon into the Air; and the whole Army, with a mighty Shout, advanced towards their Enemy. The *Englisb* Archers, both in Front and Flank, sorely distressed the *French* Cavalry, who were put in Confusion, when the *Englisb* threw away their Bows, and fell upon their Enemies Sword in Hand. After two

animated

Attacks,

A. D. Attacks, the first Line of the *French* was defeated, the
1415. Constable killed, and most of the Princes and Generals
made Prisoners. The *French* were then ready with their
second Line; and the *English* retired to rally in the Rear
of their King, who now brought up his second Line, and
presented himself to the Enemy with an undaunted Coun-
tenance. The King fought on Foot, rushing upon his
Enemies like a Lion in Pursuit of his Prey: His great
Valour exposed him to imminent Danger: He was
stunned with a Battle-Ax; but recovered, and defended
the Body of his Brother the Duke of Gloucester, who was
knocked down. This bold Action so much exposed the
King, that at length he received so great a Blow on the
Head, that he fell on his Knees: His Guards advanced,
and protected him: The whole Army beheld his Danger,
and his Courage: His Example invigorated them, and
they made so violent a Push that the *French* were obliged
to give Way before it. The Duke of Alenon perceived
the Day was lost, and determined to lose his Life. He
sought Henry, and soon found him. The brave Alenon
slew the Duke of York by the King's Side, and then at-
tacked the King. They were both easily distinguished;
and the Duke discharged so violent a Blow at the King,
as to cleave off one half of the Gold Crown on his Hel-
met: The King in Return struck the Duke to the Ground,
where he was killed by the Soldiers, though the King
endeavoured to save his Life. The whole second Line of
the *French* was now dispersed, and pursued by the *Eng-*
lish, who took many Prisoners, and killed more. The
third Line retreated without fighting, and left Henry en-
tire Master of the Field of Battle. But, as an Alarm was
given that the *French* had plundered the *English* Camp,
and were returning to the Fight, the *English* were or-
dered to kill all their Prisoners, whose Number was equal
to the Victors. It was a cruel but necessary Slaughter;
and the *English* Soldiers had too much Humanity to exe-
cute it; upon which, a Band of Ruffians perpetrated
the bloody Order. The Marshal de Louvigny, and the
Duke of Bretagne, with Forces almost equal to those of
the *English*, were advanced very near the Field of Battle,
when

when they received the News of the *French* Defeat, and A.D. also retired. *Henry* then found himself victorious, and 1415. his first Care was to return God Thanks for so unexpected a Victory, publickly acknowledging it was entirely owing to the Favour of Heaven; after which, he ordered the Battle to be called the Battle of *Agincourt*; and returned to *Masconcelles*, where he had encamped the foregoing Night.

THIS memorable Victory, so glorious to *England*, and so fatal to *France*, was obtained on the 25th of October 1415. The Troops were drawn up as soon as it was light: But the Battle was not begun till about ten in the Morning, and continued till almost five in the Afternoon. The *French* had upwards of 10,000 Men killed in the Battle; 8000 of them being Noblemen and Gentlemen; among whom were the Constable *D'Albret*, the Dukes of *Alenson*, *Brabant* and *Bar*, the Archbishop of *Sens*, with the Flower of the Nobility: The Prisoners taken in the Battle amounted to 14000, who were all put to Death, except the Dukes of *Orleans* and *Bourbon*, with 1600 other Persons of Distinction: But many Prisoners were also taken after the Battle. The Loss of the *English* was inconsiderable, amounting at most to no more than 400 Men; but the Duke of *York*, the young Earl of *Suffolk*, and the brave *David Gam*, were among the Slain. Thus *Henry*, like *Hannibal*, revenged himself upon the Enemies of his deceased Father; and the Fathers of both recommended this Revenge to their Sons. *Scipio*, when he landed on the *African* Shore, lifted up his Eyes and Hands towards Heaven, beseeching the Gods to favour his Enterprize: And *Henry*, who was as successful against the *French*, as this illustrious *Roman* was against the *Carthaginians*, behaved with the same Piety after Victory, as *Scipio* did before. The Battle of *Arbella* could not give *Alexander* more Glory, than *Henry* received from that of *Agincourt*; and *Cæsar*, though he got more Power, won less Honour at *Pharsalia*: For *Cæsar* advantaged himself by the Labours and Exploits of all the *Romans*; the *Scipio's*, *Emilius*, *Marcellus*, *Marius*, *Sylla*, and even *Pompey*, fought for him; so that all which was performed in 600 Years, was the

350 A NEW HISTORY

A.D. the Fruits of one Hours Victory at *Pharsalia*: But *Henry*
1415. was the Founder of his own Fortune; and, to cast a
Shade over the above mentioned Heroes of Antiquity,
may be more properly said, to have worthily imitated the
Glory, and trod in the Steps of his Great Uncle, who
obtained immortal Honour at *Cressy*.

HENRY continued his March to *Calais*, where he
embarked his Troops and Prisoners for *England*, on the
16th of *November*; they landed at *Dover*, and proceeded
to *London*, where the King was received with all the Ho-
nours that a grateful Nation could pay to the Restorer of
English Glory. *France*, on his Departure, was torn a-
sunder by the Revival of her own intestine Commotions;
and *Henry* laid aside his military Affairs for near eighteen
Months; leaving the *French* to destroy each other, and
betaking himself entirely to Negociation, which afforded
him the Prospect of less doubtful Advantages.

A.D. THE Emperor *Sigismond*, and the Earl of *Holland*, came
1416. to the *English* Court, to mediate a Truce between *Henry*
and *France*: But, instead of ratifying the Treaty agreed
upon, the *French* undertook to retake *Harfleur*; which the
Constable *d'Armagnac* besieged by Land, while the Vis-
count of *Narbonne* blocked it up by Sea. But the
Earl of *Dorset* defended the Town, till *Henry* sent his
Fleet, of 400 Sail, with 20,000 Men, commanded by
his Brother the Duke of *Bedford*, to relieve it: Who de-
feated the *French* Admiral, and obliged the Constable to
raise the Siege. Soon after, the King went over to *Ca-*
lais, to meet the Duke of *Burgundy*, with whom he had
an Interview; when the Duke engaged to assist him in ob-
taining the Crown of *France*; for he chose rather to see
it under a foreign Dominion, than governed by his Ene-
mies.

A.D. *HENRY* returned to *England*; but was now so strong-
1417. ly determined to renew the War against *France*, that,
though the Parliament granted him a large Subsidy, he
mortgaged his Crown to the Bishop of *Winchester*, his Uncle,
for 100,000 Marks; as also Part of his Jewels to the
City of *London* for 10,000*l.* and the Remainder to private
Persons. He appointed his Brother the Duke of *Gloce-*

ter Regent, and sailed from *Portsmouth*; landing, on A. D. the First of *August*, at *Beville in Normandy*, with 25,000 ^{1417.} Men. The Duke of *Burgundy*, at the same Time, invested *Paris*; which gave *Henry* an Opportunity of reducing *Caen*, and several other Places: While *Isabella Queen of France*, who had been banished from the Court of her Husband, joined the Duke of *Burgundy*; which increased the Troubles in *France*, so as never more to be appeased.

THE King of *England* had reduced all the strong Places in *Normandy*, except *Cherburg and Roan*: But, as the French Factions prevented their King from sending any Army to oppose *Henry*, those Places also surrendered to him; whereby all *Normandy* fell again under the Dominion of *England*, two hundred and fifteen Years after it had been taken from King *John* by *Philip Augustus of France*. A. D. ^{1418.}

THE Duke of *Burgundy* now presided again at the Head of the French Administration; and several Negotiations were set on Foot with *Henry*, who sent Part of his Army into *Picardy*, where they took *Dieppe and Montreuil*. In the mean Time, the Duke of *Burgundy* became reconciled to the Dauphin, and they agreed jointly to oppose the King of *England*; who, in Return, took *Pontoise*, which opened him a Way to the very Gates of *Paris*. But the Duke of *Burgundy* being assassinated by the Dauphin, the French Factions were revived, and *Henry* claimed the whole Dominions of *France*; in which he was encouraged by Queen *Isabella*, and the new Duke of *Burgundy*, who enjoyed the Post held by his Father; and, A.D. being Master of the Person of King *Charles* the 6th, was ^{1420.} looked upon as Regent, in which Quality he made a Truce with *Henry*. This Truce was afterwards confirmed by a Treaty of Peace concluded at *Troye*, on the 25th of *May*, whereby it was agreed “That *Henry* should marry the Princess *Catherine*: That after the Death of King *Charles*, the Crown of *France* should remain to the King of *England* and his Heirs; as also that he should be Regent of the Kingdom, during the Infirmitiy of *Charles*: That when *Henry* should come to the Crown of *France*, *Normandy* and all his other Conquests should come to the Crown:

A.D. 1420. Crown: That, *Henry* should preserve the Privileges of the *French*; and when he, or his Heirs, should come to the Crown of *France*, the two Kingdoms of *France* and *England* should be for ever united under one Prince, without subjecting the one to the other; but the Laws and Liberties of each Kingdom should be preserved distinct and inviolable,"

UPON the Conclusion of this Treaty, the King of *England* was married to the Princess of *France*; when the two Courts set out for *Paris*, where the two Kings, and the two Queens, made their public Entry. The States of *France* ratified the Peace of *Troye*, by swearing to observe it; though they thought it very unjust, and consequently there could be but little Reliance on Oaths, which they considered as involuntary; so that they afterwards broke the Treaty of *Troye*, with as little Ceremony as their Ancestors broke the Treaty of *Bretigny*.

A.D. 1421. THE Dauphin was pronounced, by the *French* Council, unworthy of the Crown, and banished the Realm; but one Half of the Nation adhered to him as the right Heir to the Kingdom; he appealed to God and his Sword from what had been transacted against him; and still assumed the Title of Regent. But *Henry*, having settled his Affairs in *France*, in so glorious a Manner for himself and his Nation, returned into *England* with his Queen, who was crowned at *Westminster*. He left his Brother the Duke of *Clarence* to command his Troops in *France*: But the Duke was soon afterwards killed in a Battle at *Anjou*, which he fought against the Earl of *Buchan*, who assisted the Dauphin with a Body of *Scotch* Auxiliaries, defeated the *English* Forces, killed 1500, and took many Prisoners, on the Third of April.

THE Parliament of *England* readily confirmed the Treaty of *Troye*; but, in a Petition to the King, they told him, that the Conquest of *France* proved the Ruin of *England*; however, they granted him a Subsidy for prosecuting the War against the Dauphin. *James* the *Scotch* Prince was detained in *England*, where he had been a Prisoner fifteen Years; though he was now King of *Scotland*: But *Henry* returned to *France*, and took *James* with him, in Hopes that

that his Authority would oblige the Scotch Auxiliaries to A. D.
return Home; in which he was deceived. 1421.

HENRY brought a fresh Army into France, consisting A. D.
of 30,000 Men, and threw a Reinforcement into Paris, 1422.
where the Duke of Exeter was blocked up by the Forces
of the Dauphin. Henry took Meaux, and some other
Places: Several small Engagements happened in several
Parts of the Kingdom: But the Dauphin avoided a ge-
neral Battle, and retained all the Provinces beyond the
Loire at his Devotion. Henry marched towards the *Loire* in
Hopes of obliging the Dauphin to fight: But the King was
seized with a pleuretic Fever on the Road; and the Dauphin
retired to Bourges; upon which, Henry was carried
to Vincennes, where he ordered his Brother the Duke of
Bedford, and some of his Nobility, into his Bed-Chamber,
when he told them, that his Death was approaching;
that he had acquired Glory enough in his Life; but that
the Event of the unfinished War, and the Infancy of his
Son, gave him much Uneasiness; which he recommended
to their Care and Protection; particularly that they would
not conclude a Peace without securing the Sovereignty of
Normandy to the Crown of England. He desired the
Duke of Bedford, would take upon himself the Adminis-
tration of Affairs in France, and that the Duke of Gloucester
might be Protector of England: After which, he asked
the Physicians how long they thought he had to live? He
was told not above two Hours: But this terrible Truth gave
him no Manner of Concern; for after facing Death with
all the Spirit and Courage of a Hero in the Field, he
now met its Advances with all the Fortitude and Resig-
nation of a Christian on his Bed. He then made his
Confession, and ordered his Chaplain to read the seven
penitential Psalms; but when they came to these Words,
Build thou the Walls of Jerusalem, he interrupted them,
and declared, "That it was his Intention, if the Almighty
"had prolonged his Life, to have restored Peace to
"France, and to have made War upon the Infidels, for
"the Recovery of Jerusalem:" Which was what his
Father also intended a little before he died. He then
ordered them to proceed; and the Moment they had fi-
nished

A. D. nished their Devotion, this great Prince expired on the
1422. 31st of *August*, in the thirty-fourth Year of his Age, after
a triumphant Reign of nine Years, five Months, and
eleven Days. His Body was put into a Chariot, drawn
by four Horses, and carried to *Calais* with great Funeral
Pomp, from whence it was conveyed to *England*, and in-
terred in *Westminster Abbey*, with a Ceremony suitable to
the Grandeur of so illustrious a Prince, and to the Esteem
conceived of him by his Subjects.

THUS died *Henry the Fifth*, in the Height of Glory,
and the Prime of Life; like *Alexander*, great in Fame,
though short in Years. His Stature was tall and majestic;
though he was somewhat too slender, and long necked:
However, he was strong, and active: His Hair black,
and his Eyes exceeding lively.

HE was prudent in Council, bold in undertaking, and
resolute in executing. Historians have not been satisfied
with comparing him to *Alexander*, and *Cæsar*; but have
ranked him above these great Men. He revived military
Discipline in *England*, which was almost entirely neg-
lected since the Reign of his Great Grandfather *Edward*
the Third. He constantly forebore to infringe the Liber-
ties and Privileges of the People, who granted him Sub-
sidies without asking; by which it appears, what great
Matters a moderate Prince may do, without grieving his
Subjects with Taxations. He signalized his Valour on
many Occasions; but the Victory of *Agincourt* gives him
immortal Reputation as a Hero: While his Negotiations
with the Dauphin, and the Duke of *Burgundy*, at the
same Time, shewed him no less a skilful Politician. If
he occasioned the Loss of many Lives by his Ambition,
in obtaining the Crown of *France*; it should be remem-
bered, that he had not only the Precedent of *Edward*
the Third to encourage him, but was spirited up to this
War even by his own Clergy; so that it was undertaken
more by their Policy than his Ambition. Though he
was magnificent in his Court, he was frugal in his Re-
venue, which amounted only to 56,000*l.* a Year, or
about 168,000*l.* of the present Money. He is said to
have been punctual in his Devotions, sincere in his Piety,
and,

and hypocritical in his Religion: But this comes from an *English* Author, who has drawn the Character of *Henry* as if he was a *French* Writer; while a *Frenchman* pays to this royal Favourite of the *English* Nation all the Glory that can be ascribed to him by an *Englishman*. However, it has been acknowledged, that it was not *Henry*, but the Parliament and Government of *England* who inflicted the shameful Hardships that the *Lollards* suffered.

THE only Issue of *Henry* by his Queen, *Catharine of Valois*, was *Henry of Windsor*; who was in his Cradle, when his Father was laid in the Grave, with whom perished the Glory of *England*! *Catharine* his Widow afterwards married *Owen Tudor*, a Native of *Wales*, a Descendent from the ancient *British* Kings, and the handsomest Man of his Time; by whom she had a Son named *Edmund*, the Father of *Henry the Seventh*, who united the Families of *Lancaster* and *York*, ascended the Throne of *England* in 1485, and left it to his Posterity.

ON *Candlemas-Day*, in 1415, seven Dolphins were discovered playing in the River *Thames*, and four of them were taken: But this glorious Reign was full of too many noble Actions Abroad, to let Historians think of recounting any reputed Miracles at Home.

Oh, *England!* *Monmouth Harry* crowns thy Fame;
Of all thy Sons, the most illustrious Name.
Behold a Prince by youthful Follies led;
But from the King those wanton Follies fled:
With all the Blaze of Majesty he shone,
Adding superior Lustre to the Throne.
Infolent France his mighty Vengeance wakes;
And, Lion-like, his glorious Stride he takes:
Swift as an Eagle on the rapid Wing:
Himself the Soldier, Leader, Chief, and King.

Great Son of *Mars!* Before thy dreadful Lance,
Fled all the Pow'r, the Pride, and Hopes of *France*.
That happy Day when Victory was thine,
And *Ajincourt* saw all thy Glory shine,
How very terrible didst thou appear?
How very graceful in the Front of War?

Thy

Thy little Band thy own Example fir'd;
 Each Soldier, like an Hero, was inspir'd:
 As such they fought, as such they conquer'd too,
 And all the *Gallie* Legions did subdue.

Wonder of War! Around thee Thousands die;
 Thousands yield to thee, from thee Thousands fly:
 But *Alenson*, alone, should *Fame* record,
 Who nobly fell by thy victorious Sword.

Genius of *France*, thy mighty Victor own;
 Yield him thy Lillies, give him up thy Crown:
 For, see, he takes thy Princes to his Arms,
 And Love's soft Flame the Rage of War disarms:
 Till, once again, great *Harry* takes the Field:
 But *Death*, all conqu'ring, makes this Conqu'ror
 yield.

Like *Skelton's* * lofty Oak, he tow'r'd sublime;
 Flourish'd, and fell, the Wonder of his Time.
 No Prince in War a greater Fame acquir'd;
 In Peace not one was ever more admir'd.
 One Spot alone defiles his glorious Reign;
 'Twas *Cobham's* Death, by Papal Fury slain;
 And other Martyrs all that Rage withstood,
 Sealing Religion with their dearest Blood.

XV. HENRY VI, surnamed of Windsor, the thirty fifth King of England, the fifteenth from the Norman Conquest, and the third of the House of Lancaster.

UNDER arbitrary Power, skilfully managed, the People, though oppressed at Home, are protected from their Enemies Abroad. They groan under heavy Taxes; but are brought to think they enjoy something for them, as Fame, Victories, and an Enlargement of their Dominions. If they are injured by Taxes from

* The largest Tree in *England*, at *Skelton*, near *Sherwbury*.

above; they are kept from hurting one another below: They are poor, but contented: They have no domestic Troubles and Dissentions: And if they have foreign Armies to engage with, they are in no great Danger of feeling the Calamities of a civil War. This was the State of the *English* People during the Reigns of *Henry the Fourth* and *Fifth*: The latter conquered a Kingdom, made a Prisoner of a King, and left all his Power to an Infant, who lost every Thing that his Father had won Abroad, or his Grandfather acquired at Home; for his Reign was an Instance of the Impertinence of Fortune, and of the Instability of human Affairs.

HENRY the Sixth was born at *Windsor*, on the 6th A. D. of December 1421; so that he was only nine Months old 1422. when his Father died: But the noble Qualities of his Uncles, *John Duke of Bedford*, and *Humphry Duke of Gloucester*, gave the *English* Hopes of a happy Minority. The young Prince was proclaimed King of *England*, and Heir of *France*: His Uncles were determined to maintain what his Father had so gloriously established. But, as *Charles the Sixth* died at *Paris* on the 20th of *October* 1422, the Face of Affairs was entirely changed in *France*. The Duke of *Bedford* ordered *Henry* to be proclaimed King of *France*; and took himself the Title of Regent: But the Dauphin, who resided at *Bourges*, was also proclaimed King, and crowned at *Poitiers*; because the City of *Rheims*, where the Coronation of the Kings of *France* was usually performed, was in the Hands of the *English*. Thus *Henry the Sixth*, and *Charles the Seventh*, assumed, both at the same Time, the Title of King of *France*, and disputed with each other the Possession of the Throne thirty Years.

CHARLES the Seventh was in the twentieth Year of his Age, and had many Provinces beyond the *Loire* under his Obedience, with many able Generals to command his Forces. The Duke of *Bedford* was the most accomplished Prince in *Europe*, and seemed born to be a King, though Providence had ranked him among Subjects: He had with him in *France*, the Duke of *Somerset*, the Earls of *Warwick*, *Salisbury*, and *Arundel*, with the Lords *Talbot*,

A. D. *bot*, and *Faſtolf*, all eminent for their Valour and Experience in the Art of War.

THE Parliament of *England* nominated the Duke of *Bedford* *Protector of England*, *Defender of the Church*, and *first Counsellor to the King*, whilst he was in the Kingdom: But, in his Absence, the Protectorship was conferred on the Duke of *Glouceſter*. The Duke of *Exeter*, and his Brother *Henry Bishop of Winchester*, both Great-Uncles of the King, were appointed his Governors, to take Care of his Person and Education. But both the *French* and *English* Armies remained quiet in *France* after the Deaths of *Henry the Fifth* and *Charles the Sixth*: Though the Duke of *Bedford* was in Possession of *Paris*, who resolved to clear the Isle of *France* of his Enemies, and then to attack the Dauphin beyond the *Loire*.

A. D. A TREATY of Alliance, against King *Charles*, was concluded between the Dukes of *Bedford*, *Burgundy*, and *Bretagne*. The *English* took *Vertus*, *Sezanne*, *Epernay*, *Crevant*, and some other Places: But King *Charles* endeavoured to retake *Crevant*, by fending 10,000 Men to besiege it, commanded by the Marshal *de Severac*; who was met by the Earl of *Salisbury*, with 6000 Men, and defeated by the River *Yonne*, near *Crevant*. However, the Earl of *Anjou* defeated a Body of *English* Troops at *Gravelle* in *Maine*, commanded by *John de la Poole*, Brother of the Earl of *Suffolk*: And the Earl of *Buchan* brought a Reinforcement of 5000 Scotch Troops to King *Charles*, who chose out of them a Company of Guards: After which, several Places were taken and retaken on both Sides.

A. D. THE Duke of *Bedford*, at the Head of 14,000 Men, met the *French* Army, consisting of 20,000 Men, commanded by the Earl of *Douglas*, at *Verneuil*, near *Ivry*, on the Borders of *Normandy*; where a Battle ensued, on the 16th of *August*, in which the *English* were victorious, killing 5000 of their Enemies, and taking many Prisoners. The Earls of *Buchan* and *Douglas*, with several of the *French* Nobility, were among the Slain; and the young Duke of *Alençon* was among the Prisoners. The *English* then conquered the whole Province of *Maine*; and forced

forced King *Charles* beyond the *Loire*; where his Affairs A. D. were in so deplorable a Condition, that the *English* called 1424. him in Derision, *the King of Bourges.*

THE *English* now saw themselves near the End of a A. D. War, which had continued ten Years, and probably was 1425. going to terminate, according to their Wish, in securing the Crown of *France* to the Kings of *England*: But the Duke of *Gloucester*, in Right of his Wife *Jaqueline*, laid Claim to *Hainault*, *Holland*, *Zealand*, and *Frieland*; which were possessed by *John Duke of Brabant*, to whom *Jaqueline* was formerly married, and from whom she had been lately divorced. This Claim occasioned the Duke of *Gloucester* to invade *Hainault* with 5000 Men, instead of assisting the Duke of *Bedford* in the Reduction of *France*, where the *English* Army was drained by the great Number of Garrisons; so that the critical Moment for the Conquest of *France* was for ever lost to *England*; while the Duke of *Gloucester* was deprived both of his Wife and her Dominions, by the Duke of *Burgundy*. King *Charles*, in the mean Time, obtained the Friendship of the Duke of *Bretagne*, by making his Brother, *Artus Earl of Richmond*, Constable of *France*: And he also endeavoured to get reconciled to the Duke of *Burgundy*: Which, together with a Quarrel between the Duke of *Gloucester* and the Bishop of *Winchester*, obliged the Duke of *Bedford* to return to *England*, and rendered him incapable of maintaining his Ground in *France*.

THE King of *England* proclaimed War against the A. D. Duke of *Bretagne*; but *Richard de Beauchamp Earl of Warwick*, who commanded the *English* Forces in *France*, was unable to undertake any Thing; while the Constable *Richmond* entered *Normandy* in February, with 20,000 Men, where he took *Pontorson*, and some other Places: But he was defeated in his Attempt on *St. James de Beuvron*, and his Army disbanded for want of Money.

THE Duke of *Bedford* returned to *France* with a Reinforcement, retook *Pontorson*, and invaded *Bretagne*, at 1427. the Head of 20,000 Men; when he obliged the Duke of that Country to sue for Peace, and desert the Interest of King *Charles*.

A.D. THE English had now a great Superiority over the 1428. French; and, after taking some small Towns, invested Orleans, on the 12th of October. The Earl of *Salisbury* commanded the Besiegers; and the Place was defended by a numerous Garrison, with the best Officers of France. The Earl of *Salisbury* was killed by a Cannon Ball; and, after four Months, the Siege grew more important and difficult.

A.D. THE French intercepted a Convoy of Salt-Fish to the 1429. English Army; but they were defeated by *Faſtolff*, and the Action was called *The Battle of Herrings*. King Charles, who was at *Chinon* in *Anjou*, was extremely dejected upon the News of this Defeat, and thought of retiring into *Dauphine*: But a very extraordinary Accident gave a sudden Turn to the Face of his Affairs. A Country Girl, who was a Seamstress, or Spinster, called *Joan* or *Jeanette*, of *Arc*, a Village in *Domremy*, or *Dompren*, in *Lorraine*, pretended she had received express Orders from God, to raise the Siege of *Orleans*, and crown King Charles at *Rheims*. She was twenty-seven Years of Age, and was introduced to the King, who at first disregarded the Girl: But as the Clergy, who were sent to examine her, declared that her Mission was divine, the King became prepossessed in her Favour, and sent her at the Head of a Convoy to throw Succours into *Orleans*, which she fortunately effected. The French now looked upon her with Eyes of Admiration: She bore the Arms and Habit of a Man; headed the Besieged, took four of the Forts erected by the Besiegers, and obliged them to raise the Siege, after they had been seven Months before the Place. *Joan* shewed a Valour and Resolution so very uncommon in Persons of her Sex, that the English were seized with a Spirit of Fear and Amazement: While the French were inspired with a Courage almost intirely lost since the Battles of *Agincourt* and *Vernueil*. *Joan*, afterwards commonly called *La Pucelle*; or the Maid of *Orleans*, retook several Places from the English, made the Earl of *Suffolk* Prisoner, and persuaded King Charles to be crowned at *Rheims*. She suddenly attacked, and defeated, so great a General as the brave Lord *Talbot*, at *Patay*;

Patay; whose Troops were seized with a Panic, and A.D. made but a faint Resistance; being routed with the Loss ^{1429.} of 2000 Men, and *Talbot* himself was taken Prisoner.

THE Duke of *Bedford* was obliged to keep within the Walls of *Paris*, and send for King *Henry* to come and be crowned in that City: While many Places submitted to King *Charles*, who was crowned at *Rheims*, from whence the *English* Garrison were expelled by the Citizens. The Duke of *Bedford* received a Reinforcement from *England*, and assembled his Troops in *Picardy*: But he was unable to prevent the Progress of the *French*.

THIS fatal Revolution in *France*, occasioned great A.D. Murmurings in *England*; where King *Henry*, though only ^{1430.} eight Years of Age, was crowned at *London*, on the 6th of November 1429, and then sent to be crowned at *Paris*, where the Ceremony was perform'd on the 17th of December, 1430, by the Cardinal of *Winchester*. But *Joan of Arc* was taken Prisoner at *Compeigne* by the Earl of *Ligny*, the Duke of *Burgundy*'s General, who delivered her into the Hands of the *English*; and the Duke of *Bedford* ordered her to be tried at *Roan* for Witchcraft and Sorcery: When she was condemned by the Bishop of *Beauvais*, for Heresy and Schism, who ordered her to be burnt alive; which Sentence was executed in the old Market-Place at *Roan*, on the 30th of May 1431. A cruel Death for so great a Woman! The *French* ascribed all her wonderful Acts to the immediate Power of God; but the *English* attributed them to the Assistance of the Devil: However, if it was necessary to put her to Death, to glut the Vengeance of the *English* Nation, and restore the Courage of the *English* Troops, it was at best an unmanly Policy; For, being a Native of *Lorrain*, she was no Ways subject to the *English* Government; and, being taken in open War, could not legally be tried by their Courts, or put to Death by their Award; though the contrary was asserted in a Letter which the King of *England* wrote to the Duke of *Burgundy*, upon that Occasion. But if this Rule was established, every Prisoner of War would be in Danger of being condemned by his Enemies for forged Crimes, and sacrificed to their Malice. It is not probable,

A.D. ble, that she was either divinely inspired, or diabolically assisted: But it may well be presumed, that she was encouraged by some Persons at the French Court, to practise this Stratagem upon King Charles, and rouse him from the Indulgence of his Pleasures, to seek the Preservation of his Country.

A.D. KING Henry returned into England, leaving King Charles Master of the greatest Part of France; for those Successes which were conveyed to the French by the Maid of Orleans, continued after her Death. The Duke of Gloucester, on the Coronation of Henry, was appointed his first Counsellor; because, it was pretended, the Protectorship was inconsistent with the Dignity of a crowned Head: And when the King went over to France, the Duke was appointed Guardian of the Kingdom in his Absence. But the Duke of Bedford, who still managed the English Affairs in France, received little Assistance from England, when it was most wanted: For the Duke of Gloucester, and the Cardinal of Winchester, were always fomenting Quarrels about the King; while the Parliament and the People grew tired of an expensive War, since it prospered not as formerly.

It is certain, that England could get no Advantage by the Conquest of France; for the Retention of it would cost more than the Possession would furnish. Besides, as an Island, and a maritime State, it was impossible for the English to aim at such an Accession of Power upon the Continent: Which may be seen by the Venetians, who were much weaker when they commanded all Lombardy, than when they were contented only with their naval Power.

CHARLES the Seventh of France, like Edward the Second of England, gave himself up to Pleasures in the Arms of Agnes Sorrel his Mistress; leaving his most important Affairs to the Care of his Ministers and Generals: So that the Duke of Bedford might have recovered all his Losses in France, if he had been properly assisted from England. The Duchess of Bedford, who was Sister to the Duke of Burgundy, died on the 13th of November; which was a great Loss to the English, as it broke the Bonds of Union

Union between the Dukes of *Bedford* and *Burgundy*, threw A. D. the latter into the Scale of *France*, and ruined the Affairs 1432. of *England*.

THE Duke of *Orleans*, who continued a Prisoner in A. D. *England*, proposed Terms for a Peace: But, as he acted 1434. with little Sincerity, the War was continued; though very weakly; for, as both Kings were unable to keep great Armies on Foot, only small Bodies and Parties acted on either Side. It is surprising that *Henry* the Fifth should carry 50,000 Men into *France*; and that *Henry* the Sixth should not be able to send 20,000: But it is more amazing that *Charles* the Sixth of *France* could assemble an Army of 150,000 Men, and that *Charles* the Seventh could not raise the tenth Part of that Number!

THE Earl of *Arundel* was mortally wounded in an En- A. D. gagement: But the Lord *Talbot* brought a Reinforcement 1435. of 4000 Men from *England*, and took several Places. A Congress was held at *Arras* to negociate a Peace; when the *French* offered *Normandy* and *Guienne* to the King of *England*; provided he would quit the Title of King of *France*, and do Homage for those Provinces. The *Englisb* rejected this Proposal, and broke off the Conference: But this gave the Duke of *Burgundy* a Pretence to make a separate Treaty with King *Charles*; which was dishonourable to *France*; and fatal to *England*: For the Duke of *Burgundy*, though honoured with the Surname of *Good*, was the Man, who, for the Sake of Revenge, had ruined the former; and found no other Way to repair the Fault, but by a notorious Treachery to the latter.

THE Treaty of *Arras* portended the sudden Ruin of the *Englisb* Affairs in *France*; and this was compleated by the unhappy Death of the illustrious Duke of *Bedford*, who died at *Roan*, on the 14th of September, and was buried in the Church of *Notre Dame* in that City. He had all the Qualities of a great Prince, and a brave General. His own Enemies confessed his Worth: For when *Lewis* the Eleventh, Son of *Charles* the Seventh, was looking at his Tomb, he was advised to demolish that standing Monument of the Dishonour of *France*: But the King replied, " No; let the Ashes of a Prince rest in Peace!"

A. D. " who, if he was alive, would make the boldest of us
1435. " tremble; and I rather wish a more stately Monument
 " was erected to his Memory!"

A. D. *RICHARD PLANTAGENET* Duke of *York* was
1436. appointed Regent of *France*, in the Room of the Duke
 of *Bedford*. He was Son to *Richard Earl of Cambridge*,
 beheaded by *Henry the Fifth* at *Southampton*; and Grand-
 son to *Edmund de Langley*, Duke of *York*, the fifth Son of
Edward the Third. But the *English* lost *Paris*; and the
 Duke of *Gloucester* was obliged to bring a Reinforcement
 over for the Protection of *Calais*, which was besieged by
 the Duke of *Burgundy*, who was obliged to retire. Lord
Talbot recovered the *English* Glory for a while: He obliged
 the Duke of *Burgundy* to raise the Siege of *Crotoy*; reliev-
 ed *Meaux*; and overran *Normandy*. But it was easily seen,
 that the War would be eternal, if it was to continue till
 one of the two Kings had lost, one after another, the
 Places he possessed: Therefore, another Congress was
 held for concluding a Peace; in which King *Charles* offer-
 ed the same Terms as he had done at *Arras*, and the Con-
 ferences broke up as before.

A. D. THE King of *England* was now nineteen Years of Age:
1440. But he had none of the martial and active Genius of his
 Father. The Kingdom was divided between two Parties;
 one headed by the Duke of *Gloucester*; and the other by
 the Cardinal of *Winchester*, who had the superior Influ-
 ence: Their Dissentions were perpetual, and to this fa-
 tal Enmity, the unfortunate Success of the War in *France*
 may be ascribed. The Duke of *Orleans* was released,
 contrary to the express Will of *Henry the Fifth*: But the
 Time was ineffectually spent in concluding a Peace with
France: Though it was what both Nations extremely

A. D. wanted: However, a Truce was agreed upon, and the
1444. King of *England* married *Margaret the Daughter of Rene*,
 Duke of *Anjou*, titular King of *Sicily*, and Niece of the
 Queen of *France*.

As soon as *Margaret* was crowned Queen, she perceiv-
 ed the Weakness of the King, and ruled him with such
 an absolute Sway, that the Ruin of the Duke of *Glou-
 cester* was agreed upon, between her, the Cardinal of
Winchester,

Winchester, the Marquis of *Suffolk*, and the Archbishop of *A. D. York*. The Duchess of *Gloucester*, by the Artifices of ¹⁴⁴⁴⁻ these Ministers, had been shamefully convicted of Sorcery; for which she underwent a public Penance, and was confined in *Kenel-worth-Castle*: But as the Duke of *Glou-* ^{A. D.} *cester* was the presumptive Heir to the Crown, and the Fa- ¹⁴⁴⁷⁻ vourite of the People, he could not be destroyed in a legal Manner; so that he was seized at a Parliament held at *St. Edmundsbury*, on a base Pretence of conspiring to kill the King; and the Enemies of the Duke took Care that he should not prove his Innocence; for the next Day he was found dead in his Bed, without any Signs of Violence on his Body. However, the People were convinced that he was murdered: For he was either smothered between two Feather-beds, or suffered the same Fate with *Edward* the Second. He was called *the good Duke Humphry*, and was buried in the Conventional Church of *St. Alban's*, where his Body was preserved, and the Bones of this excellent Prince are to this Day scandalously suffered to be exposed, and handled by every Person; which is a Dishonour to his royal Line, and ought to be prevented. The King was not privy to the Death of his Uncle: But the Queen, and the Ministry, incurred the public Hatred for so infamous an Action; which gave the Duke of *York* an Opportunity of claiming the Crown; though he would never have done it, if there had been such a Competitor as the Duke of *Gloucester*.

THE Duke of *York*, in Right of his Mother, was the only Heir of the House of *Mortimer*, or *March*, descended from *Lionel*, third Son of *Edward* the Third, and elder Brother of *John of Gaunt*, whose Posterity was in Possession of the Throne. The People, greatly disaffected to the Queen and the Ministry, began to have it whispered among them, that the House of *Lancaster* had usurped the Throne, in Prejudice of the House of *York*: But the Court took from the Duke of *York* the Regency of *France*, and conferred it upon the Earl of *Somerset*. In the mean Time, Affairs were badly conducted in *France*; where the brave *Talbot*, now Earl of *Sherwbury*, still maintained his Character, without being able to dispossess the *French*,

A. D. who overran Normandy with 50,000 Men, defeated a
1447. Body of 5000 English at Fourmigny, and in 1450 became Masters of the whole Norman Province.

THE French afterwards reduced Guienne, which had been for 300 Years under the Dominion of the Kings of England. The Earl of Shrewsbury, though fourscore Years of Age, was sent with 7000 Men to recover that Duchy, and he reduced several Places: But, in 1453, he was defeated by 10,000 French before Castillon, where the English lost 2000 Men, and their glorious General, whose very Name was a Terror to the French. The Death of Talbot was an irretrievable Loss to England, which retained only Calais and Guisnes of all its Conquests in France. Thus, after thirty-eight Years War, wherein England was deprived of King Henry the Fifth, two of his Brothers, many of the best Nobility, and the bravest Officers, with a prodigious Number of common Soldiers, France recovered all her Provinces, which she afterwards retained: And England, by endeavouring to conquer that Kingdom, ruined herself!

HENRY, having lost his Possessions in France, was soon afterwards dispossessed of the Crown of England, and barbarously murdered. William de la Pole was created Duke of Suffolk: But the whole Kingdom rung with Complaints against this royal Favourite, who was as odious in this Reign as Michael de la Pole had been in the Reign of Richard the Second; and his Conduct, like that of Gaveston and the Spencers, under Edward the Second, plunged his Country into a civil War, which occasioned the Death both of him and th: King. The Queen was a Woman of great Spirit and Abilities: But the People complained, that she entirely governed the King and the Council; ruling, with insupportable Pride, a free Nation, used to be directed only by Law; and which had never suffered a despotic Power even in a native King, much less in a foreign Queen.

THE Loss of Normandy was attributed to the Duke of Suffolk, who was impeached by the Parliament in 1450, and committed to the Tower, from whence he was released by the Queen. He then reassumed his Office of Prime-

Prime-Minister, which was so highly resented by the A. D.
Commons, that they petitioned the King he might be 1452.
punished according to his Demerits. The King banished
the Duke for five Years, who was taken in his Passage to
France by an *English* Ship, and beheaded by the Captain
on the Side of a Cock-Boat, in Revenge for the Murder
of the Duke of Gloucester.

THE Death of the Duke of *Suffolk*, increased the Party
of the Duke of *York*, who was then in *Ireland*, where he
was sent to suppress a Rebellion. By his Instigation,
Jack Cade, an *Irishman*, assumed the Name of *John Mor-*
timer, of the House of *March*, executed in the Beginning
of this Reign. This was done with a View of sounding
the Inclinations of the People; and *Cade* drew together
great Numbers of Malecontents in *Kent*, under Pretence
of reforming the Government, and easing the People.
They encamped on *Black-Heath*, and entered *London*, in
the same Manner as the Rebels under *Wat Tyler* and *Jack*
Straw had done in the Reign of *Richard the Second*.
They beheaded the Lord *Say*, who was High-Treasurer,
and demanded a Reformation of Grievances: But a Quar-
rel happened between the Rebels and the Citizens of *Lon-*
don, which induced the Government to publish a general
Pardon; when *Cade* was deserted by his Followers, slain
as he was concealing himself at *Hothfield* in *Sussex*, and
the Rebellion was suppressed with the Execution of twen-
ty-six of his Accomplices; though in the *Hurling-Times*
of *Richard the Second*, 1500 were put to Death. A suf-
ficient Proof that *Henry* was a very merciful Prince.

THE Duke of *Somerset*, on his Return from *France*,
was committed to the Tower; from whence he was soon
released, and assumed at Court the Post enjoyed by the
Duke of *Suffolk*; though he was equally hated by the
People, for his bad Conduct in *Normandy*. The Duke
of *York* returned from *Ireland*; though the King ordered
the Militia of *Wales* to prevent his Landing, which gave
him an Opportunity of complaining against the Go-
vernment, and desiring a Reformation of the State. He
raised an Army in *Wales*, and encamped on *Burnt-Heatb*,
near *Dartford* in *Kent*, in 1452; where the King met

A. D. him with his Forces: But the Duke offered to dismiss his
1452. Troops, if the King would remove his evil Counsellors from his Person. The King agreed to this Proposal: But when the Duke disbanded his Men, he was seized as a Prisoner, and released on taking an Oath never to appear in Arms against the King; after which he retired to *Wigmore* in *Herefordshire*, where he concerted the Destruction of the whole House of *Lancaster*.

A. D. THE tedious War in *France* being ended, the Civil
1453. War was renewed in *England*. It was not now a Dispute between the King and Barons for a Redress of Grievances; but between the royal Houses of *Lancaster* and *York* for Sovereignty; the former of which had a red Rose for its Device, and the latter a white one: Both of them being famous for the vast Torrents of Blood shed upon their Account.

THE Crown was conferred upon *Henry* the Fourth for his Services to the Kingdom: Though *Roger* Earl of *March*, Grandfather to the present Duke of *York*, was declared by the Parliament presumptive Heir of the Crown, if *Richard* the Second died without Issue. It is true, the Parliament can limit the Succession, on extraordinary Occasions; and the House of *Lancaster*, by that Limitation, had enjoyed the Crown fifty Years, in Prejudice of the elder Branch of *March*, whose Right was now vested in the Duke of *York*, who could pretend to the Crown only on Supposition that the Parliament could not alter the Succession, or that they might alter it in Favour of one Family as well as another. But the Abuses and Disorders spread over the Kingdom, by the Queen and her Ministry, who made *Henry* appear only as the Shadow of a King, encouraged the Duke of *York* in his Ambition to obtain the Crown; who was assisted by several Noblemen, particularly the Earl of *Salisbury*, and his Son the Earl of *Warwick*, both of whom were universally esteemed by the People.

A. D. THE King was so far a Stranger to Politics, that he
1454. gave himself entirely up to Devotion; and, as he was troubled with a great Indisposition, the Duke of *York* prevailed upon the Parliament to appoint him *Protector of the*

the Realm, Defender of the Church, and first Counsellor of the A. D. King. But the King recovered, and the Duke of York lost^{1454.} his Authority; upon which he withdrew from Court, and levied an Army in *Wales*.

THE Duke of York advanced towards *London* with A. D. 3000 Men, and was met by the King with a much su-^{1455.} perior Force near *St. Alban's*, where a Battle ensued on the 23d of *May*. The Earl of *Warwick* begun the Attack for the Duke of York; being to *Henry the Sixth* what *Henry Hotspur* was to *Henry the Fourth*. The royal Army was defeated in a few Moments, with the Loss of 5000 Men: The King was wounded in the Neck with an Arrow; the Duke of *Somerset* was killed, with the Earls of *Northumberland*, and *Stafford*, the Lord *Clifford*, and several other Lords and Officers of Note, all firmly attached to the House of *Lancaster*: But the Duke of York lost only 600 Men.

THE King retired to a little House; where he fell into the Hands of the Duke of York, who treated him very respectfully, and conducted him to *London*; where the Parliament declared, "That the Duke of York, or any of " his Adherents, were not guilty of Rebellion in taking " Arms against the King, since it was necessary to free " his Person from Captivity." But he was now under as much Restraint as before; and the Duke of York was again made Protector, on Pretence that the King was indisposed.

THE Queen perceived that the Duke of York was as- A. D. piring to the Crown, and took the best Measures to op-^{1456.} pose his Ambition. He was again dismissed from the Protectorship, again retired into the Country, and again levied an Army. The French and Scotch took Advantage of these Quarrels to invade the Kingdom; but without any Success. These Invasions were attributed to the Indolence of the Ministry, who affronted the Earl of *Warwick*; upon which his Father, the Earl of *Salisbury*, raised an Army in *Yorkshire*, to demand Satisfaction for the Injury done to his Son; while the Duke of York was raising Forces in *Wales*.

370 A NEW HISTORY

A.D. THE Earl of *Salisbury* advanced as far as *Blore-beath*,
1458. near *Drayton* in *Sropshire*, at the Head of 5000 Men; where he was met by *James Tucker*, Lord *Audley*, with 10,000 Men; when a Battle ensued, on the 23^d of September, in which the Royalists were defeated, and 2400 Men slain, among whom were Lord *Audley*, and most of his principal Officers.

A.D. AFTER this Victory, the Earl of *Salisbury* joined the
1459. Duke of *York*, and their Forces encamped near *Ludlow*; where the King came up with them at the Head of a superior Army. The Duke of *York* again desired a Redress of Grievances introduced by the Ministry: But the King published a general Pardon to all the Adherents of the rebel Lords, that would lay down their Arms: Upon which the Soldiers disbanded, and left their Leaders to shift for themselves by Flight. The Duke of *York* embarked for *Ireland*, where he was well-beloved; and the Earl of *Salisbury*, with the Earl of *Warwick*, and the Earl of *March*, eldest Son of the Duke of *York*, retired to *Caerlais*, where the Earl of *Warwick* was Governor.

A.D. THE Parliament, who before had declared the Duke
1460. of *York*, and his Adherents, were not guilty of Rebellion for appearing in Arms against the King, now declared them guilty of High Treason. The Ministry put many of the *Yorkists* to Death; and this so much exasperated the People, that they encouraged the banished Lords to return: Upon which the Earls of *Salisbury* and *Warwick* landed at *Sandwich* with 1500 Men, where they were joined by 4000 conducted by Lord *Cobham*; and, as the Lords declared, that they intended only to secure the Liberties of the People, their Army was soon increased to 40,000 Men, who entered *London* without Opposition.

THE Flames of Civil War were now rekindled with additional Fury. The Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and several Bishops, declared for the Malecontents: While the Queen levied an Army at *Coventry*. The young Earl of *March*, who was now nineteen Years of Age, and the Earl of *Warwick*, marched against the Queen, with 25000 Men; who met them, with an equal Army, at *Northampton*,

Northampton, where a Battle ensued on the 9th of July. A. D. 1460.
The King remained in his Tent, during the Engagement, which was very fatal to the Royalists; who were defeated with the Loss of 10,000 Men slain on the Spot, among whom were the Duke of *Buckingham*, the Earl of *Sherwbury*, Lord *Beaumont*, Lord *Egremont*, and several Officers of Distinction. The unfortunate King fell once more into the Hands of the victorious Lords, who conducted him to *London*, and treated him with the same Respect as if he had been in his greatest Prosperity. But the Queen, with her Son the young Prince of *Wales*, fled into *Scotland*: At which Time, the Scotch Monarch, *James the Second*, invaded *England*, and besieged *Roxborough*, where he was killed, by the bursting of one of his own Cannon, and was succeeded by his Son *James the Third*, who was only seven Years of Age.

THE Duke of *York* returned from *Ireland*, imagining the Victory obtained by his Son, would readily procure him the Crown, which he formally claimed as Heir of the House of *Marc*: But the Parliament resolved, that *Henry* should enjoy the Crown during his Life, and the Duke of *York* be declared his Successor.

THE Duke of *York* was accordingly proclaimed Heir apparent to the Crown, and Protector of the Realm: But the Queen returned into *England*, and levied an Army of 20,000 Men in the North. The Duke of *York* marched against the Queen with only 5000 Men, ordering the Earl of *Marc* to follow him with the rest of his Army: But the Duke was defeated at *Wakefield*, and slain, valiantly fighting, with 3000 of his Men. The young Earl of *Rutland*, his second Son, not above twelve Years of Age, was cruelly killed by the Lord *Clifford*; and the Earl of *Salisbury*, who was taken Prisoner, was beheaded at *Pontefract*: After which, his Head, with that of the Duke of *York*, were placed on the Walls of *York* City. This Battle was fought on the last Day of December: and, though it seemed to have firmly restored the Affairs of the King and Queen, it served only to hasten their Destruction.

A.D. THE Earl of *March* now became Duke of *York*, and
1460. was resolved to lose his Life, or become King of *Eng-*
land: It was now impossible for any Medium to be ob-
served between the two contending Houses; and one of
them must necessarily be ruined, for the Establishment of
the other. This Prince was at the Head of 23,000 Men
at *Gloucester*, when his Father was slain at *Wakefield*, and
he was determined to revenge his Death. He marched
to *Shrewsbury*; while the Queen sent Part of her Army
against him, commanded by *Jasper Tudor* Earl of *Pem-*
broke, and *James Butler* Earl of *Ormond*; who met the
Duke near *Mortimer's Cross* in *Herefordshire*; but were de-
feated with the Loss of 3800 Men; when Sir *Owen Tudor*,
Father of the Earl of *Pembroke*, was taken Prisoner, and
beheaded, with several others, in Revenge for the Earl
of *Salisbury*.

A.D. IN the mean Time, the Queen led the other Part of her
1461. Army towards *London*, and was met by the Earl of *War-*
wick, on *Bernard's Heath* near *St. Alban's*, when a Battle
ensued, in which the Queen was victorious. The Earl
lost 2800 Men; but no Man of Note, except Sir *John Grey* of *Groby*, first Husband of *Elizabeth Woodville*, mar-
ried afterwards to King *Edward the Fourth*. The Queen
used her Victory with a Barbarity too common in civil
Wars, beheading several Persons of Distinction, particu-
larly the Lord *Bonvile*, and Sir *Thomas Kiriell*. She also
freed the King, whom the Earl of *Warwick* had brought
with him from *London*. But the Duke of *York* advanced
towards her, and was joined by the Earl of *Warwick's* scattered Troops; which obliged the Queen to return into
the North; while the Duke entered *London* in a triumphant
Manner on the 28th of *February*.

THE Earl of *Warwick*, and the other Friends of the
Duke of *York*, were determined immediately to seat him
on the Throne; pretending, that King *Henry* had vio-
lated the Agreement with the late Duke of *York*, and
thereby forfeited his Right to the Crown: Though, in
Fact, whatever was done in the Name of *Henry*, was
done by his enterprizing Queen, without the Content or
Know-

Knowledge of her pacific Husband. It was resolved, to A. D. proceed to an extraordinary Election, first by the People, 1461. and then by the Nobles. Accordingly the Earl of Warwick drew up his Army in *St. John's Fields*, in the Midst of Throngs of People, whom he asked, " if they would have *Henry of Lancaster* for King?" They answered No: Upon which, he asked, " if they would have the Duke of York for their King;" and they answered Yes; expressing their Consent with great Acclamations of Joy.

AFTER this popular Election, an Assembly was held at *Baynard's Castle*, of the Bishops, Lords, Gentlemen, and Magistrates, in and about *London*: Where the Duke of York appeared, and set forth his Title to the Crown, desiring it might be adjudged to him, which they declared to be his Right, and on the 5th of *March* he was proclaimed King, by the Name of *Edward the Fourth*.

THUS ended the Reign of *Henry the Sixth*, which had lasted thirty-eight Years and a half. He had many Virtues to render him amiable as a Man; but had no Qualifications worthy of a Prince. He was chaste, temperate, extremely religious, a Lover of Justice, and an Abhorrer of Cruelty.

THE Murder of the Duke of *Gloucester* was revenged by the Ruin of the whole House of *Lancaster*. *Henry* lived long enough to be the further Sport of Fortune, after he was dispossessed of his Crown; and *Edward* his Son, Prince of *Wales*, was in his eighth Year, at the Time of this Catastrophe, though *Rapin*, by Mistake, says he was in his nineteenth. The Father, in 1470, was restored to the Throne; expelled again in seven Months, and soon afterwards murdered by the Duke of *Gloucester*, who just before had also murdered the Son. During the Reign of this unfortunate Prince, the public Affairs seem transacted upon a Stage of Fortune, or Fate, rather than Prudence or Policy, trod between a headstrong People, ambitious Nobles, a Queen too apt to rule, and a King too apt to suffer.

IN 1429, an Act of Parliament was passed for regulating the Elections of Knights of the Shires; whereby every Man having a Freehold Estate of forty Shillings a Year, was intitled to a Vote; which continues to the present Time; whereas, before, the Knights were chosen by People of small Substance: So that the Freemen yielded up the Liberty of Election to the Freeholders. In 1438, a terrible Famine raged in *England*, which was followed by a Plague: But, in 1454, there was such Plenty of Corn, that a Quarter of Wheat was sold for a Shilling, being equal to two Shillings of the present Money.

Henry of Windsor in his Cradle lay,
When his great Father breath'd his Soul away.
But glorious *Bedford* guides the *Gallic War*;
And *Glo'ster* makes their Nephew's Throne his Care.
With *England's King*, all *England's Glory* fled;
And *Gallia's Lillies* rear'd again their Head.
Great Bedford shew'd what Valour could afford:
But *France* was sav'd, ev'n by a Woman's Sword!
The Maid of Orleans trod on *England's Fame*,
Appall'd its Host, and vanquish'd where she came:
But, seiz'd a Captive, her ungen'rrous Foes,
Disgrace the Heroine with shameful Woes:
Unparallell'd her Life, her Death severe;
To *France* gave Glory, and to *England* Fear.

In *Paris*, *Henry* wore the *Gallic Crown*;
But *Bedford* dy'd, the Guardian of the Throne:
Then *Talbot* fell amid the martial Toil;
And *England's Genius* loath'd the *Gallic Soil*.

By private Murder royal *Glo'ster* dies;
And *York* soon makes the *English Crown* his Prize.
Now the contending *ROSES* fill the Land;
With civil *Discord* fell in ev'ry Band:
Nobles and Peasants in one Carnage bleed,
And *Death* seems frighten'd at his horrid Deed.

In Fields, on Scaffolds, *England's* richest Blood,
Is drain'd away in one abhorrent Flood:
Such, as of old, the weeping *Romans* saw,
E'er young *Oætavius* gave the Empire Law:
Like him in Battle, and like him in Years,
Does *York* succeed, and *England's* King appears.
While hapless *Henry*, like an Exile strays,
Till bloody *Richard* ends his pious Days.

16 MA 64



The HOUSE of YORK, or the WHITE ROSE.

XVI. EDWARD IV, *the thirty-sixth King of England, the sixteenth from the Norman Conquest, and the first of the Line of York.*

THE succeeding Reigns had given a Kind of Sanction to the House of *Lancaster* in the Enjoyment of the Crown, in Prejudice of the hereditary Right, which was indisputably in the House of *York*: But all the Policy of *Henry the Fourth*, all the Victories of *Henry the Fifth*, and all the Sanctity of *Henry the Sixth*, were not able to fix the Crown in their Family.

VIRTUE, like a precious Stone, is best when it is plain sett: For it is remarked, that great Beauty, and noble Spirits, seldom meet together in Men: But there are some Exceptions; as in *Alcibiades*, *Augustus Cæsar*, *Titus Vespasian*, *Philip the Fair of France*, and *Edward the Fourth of England*, who were all high and great Spirits; yet the most beautiful Men of their Times.

A. D. *EDWARD* was in the twentieth Year of his Age, 1461. when he came to the Throne; which he claimed by Descent, and by Authority of Parliament. He was no sooner proclaimed King in *London*, than he made the necessary Preparations to pursue the Queen into the North, where

where she had assembled a numerous Army. *Edward, A. D.* being young and lively, trusted to his Courage and Fortune: While the Queen, who had all the Spirit of a *Zenobia*, was above Despair, and superior to Misfortune. King *Edward*, whose Army consisted of 47,000 Men, passed the River *Aire* at *Ferry-bridge* in *Yorkshire*, after some Skirmishes, in which Lord *Clifford* was slain, who had murdered the young Earl of *Rutland* at the Battle of *Wakefield*. The Queen, at the Head of 60,000 Men, advanced to meet *Edward*; and both Armies met, on *Palm-Sunday*, being the 29th of *March*, between *Caxton* and *Towton*, when a Battle ensued. The Earl of *Warwick* was considered as the Soul of *Edward's* Army; and the Duke of *Somerset* commanded the Queen's Forces. The Battle was obstinately fought on both Sides from Morning to Night: The Soldiers of each Army trusting more to their own Courage, than the Experience of their Generals. However, *Edward* was victorious, after 37,000 Men were killed in the Battle, the greater Part of which were *Lancastrians*, among whom were the Earls of *Northumberland* and *Westmoreland*, with the Lords *Dacres*, *Beaumont*, and *Gray*; *Thomas Courtney* Earl of *Devonshire* was taken Prisoner; and, though his Life was at first spared, he was afterwards beheaded, at *Pontefract*, together with the Earl of *Kyme*, whose Heads were fixed upon the Walls of *York*, in the Room of those of the late Duke of *York* and the Earl of *Salisbury*, which were taken down. King *Henry* and his Queen fled with the young Prince to *Edinburgh*, where they met with a favourable Reception from *Mary of Gueldres*, Mother of *James the Third*; and King *Edward* returned to *London*, where he was crowned, on the 29th of *June*, King of *England* and *France*.

THE Victory of *Towton* was decided by the Cross-bow, though Fire-arms were in Use; and it caused so great a Diminution among the military People of *England*, that if the Kingdom had been then invaded by *France* or *Scotland*, it might have been subdued, in its weak Condition, after so violent a Bleeding; in the same Manner as *France* had been subdued by *Henry the Fifth*. But

France

A. D. France was now governed by *Lewis* the Eleventh, who 1461. thought of nothing but making himself arbitrary in his own Country, and humbling his great Vassals, particularly the Dukes of *Burgundy* and *Bretagne*; which plunged France in a civil War, during the whole Course of his Reign: And it is remarkable that the Reigns of *Lewis* and *Edward* commenced in 1461, were equally affected with civil Wars, and both of them ended in 1483. Scotland was also disturbed by a divided Regency, during the Minority of its King: But his Mother, and the Earl of *Angus*, rejected a Truce proposed to them by *Edward*; because *Margaret* had surrendered *Berwick* to the Scots.

EDWARD called a Parliament at *Westminster*, which confirmed his Title, declared for the Revolution, approved of his Coronation, repealed all the Acts made in the late Reign against the House of *York*, and attainted King *Henry*, with his Queen, Son, and Adherents. King *Edward* created his Brother *George Duke of Clarence*, and his Brother *Richard Duke of Gloucester*, and conferred many Honours on his principal Assistants: But *John de Vere Earl of Oxford*, and *Aubrey* his eldest Son, were beheaded, for being on the *Lancastrian* Party; while the Duke of *Somerset* threw himself upon the King's Mercy, and obtained a Pardon.

A. D. 1463. QUEEN *Margaret* went into France, and procured an Aid of 500 Men, with which she returned to England; but they were made Prisoners in the Isle of *Lindisfarne*. However, the Queen raised an Army in Scotland, which increased upon her entering *Northumberland*, and lay entrenched on *Lyvel's Plain*, near *Hexham*; where they were met by the Lord *Montague*, Brother to the Earl of *Warwick*, with a Body of Forces sent against them by King *Edward*, and suddenly defeated. *Montague* obtained a complete Victory; taking the Duke of *Somerset*, who had again joined the Queen, the Lords *Ross*, *Hungerford*, and *Molyns*, Prisoners; whom he beheaded soon after the Battle: But *Henry*, *Margaret*, and the Prince their Son, fled again into Scotland.

EDWARD kept a strong Fleet at Sea to guard the Coasts; which prevented any farther Supplies from France for

for Margaret, who also found the French and Scotch con-^{A. D.} clude a Truce with her Enemy: This made Henry afraid 1463. of continuing in Scotland; and, preposterously imagining he might find some Friends among his old Subjects, he ventured into England, hoping he might conceal himself till he had an Opportunity of escaping into France. But unhappy Princes seldom meet with such faithful Friends, as King Charles the Second found one hundred and eighty-eight Years after: For Henry was seized by Sir James Harrington, whilst he was at Dinner, at Waddington-ball in Lancashire, who tied his Legs to the Stirrups, and conducted him to London, with the same Barbarity as his Predecessor Edward the Second was conveyed, by Sir John Maltravers, from Kenelworth to Berkley Castle, one hundred and thirty-six Years before.

THE unfortunate King was confined in the Tower: While his unhappy Queen, after great Difficulties, fled with her Son to *Rene of Anjou* her Father; and the Duke of Exeter led a miserable Life in Flanders. Such is the Instability of Fortune! A King who had been thirty-eight Years on a Throne; a Queen who had governed a Kingdom for nineteen Years; a Prince born to Royalty; and Noblemen who had enjoyed the highest Offices; were now deprived of all their Grandeur, to let human Pride see the Direction of divine Providence!

EDWARD was now peaceably seated on the Throne; and his Friends advised him to marry, that he might leave the Crown to his Posterity. Accordingly, he sent the Earl of Warwick to the Court of France, to demand *Bona of Savoy* in Marriage, who was Sister to the French Queen, and was then at the French Court. The Marriage, with much Difficulty, was at last concluded upon: But Edward defeated all the Labour of the Earl of Warwick, by accidentally falling in Love with *Elizabeth*, the Widow of Sir John Grey who was killed in the Battle of *Bernard's Heath*. Though the King was the handsomest Man in England, he could not prevail upon this Lady to prostitute herself in his Embraces; for she told him, that though she was unworthy to be his Queen, she was above being his Concubine: Upon which he offered her Marriage,

A. D. ^{1463.} marriage, and made a distressed Widow a happy Queen. But this little Event of Love, occasioned a bloody War: However, the Marriage occasioned the Birth of a Prince, who afterwards became the happy Instrument of uniting the House of York and Lancaster, and blessing England with a permanent Peace.

A. D. ^{1465.} THE King ennobled the Family of his Queen, by making her Father, Sir Richard Woodville, Earl of Rivers; and Sir Thomas Grey, her Son, was created Marquis of Dorset. But the Marriage offended the French Monarch, and the English Nobility; particularly the Earl of Warwick, who returned from his Embassy with a Heart full of Hatred and Revenge against the Prince whom he had raised to the Throne.

A. D. ^{1467.} EDWARD prolonged the Truce with Scotland for forty Years, and concluded a short Truce with France; because the Lancastrian Party, though humbled, were still very numerous in England. The Earl of Warwick was the proudest Nobleman in the Kingdom, and his natural Pride was still increased by the great Services he had done the King; whose Ingratitude made him resolve to dethrone him. For which Purpose, the Earl prevailed upon his Brothers, the Archbishop of York, and the Marquis of Montague, to engage in his Design: The Duke of Clarence, being dissatisfied with the King his Brother, also entered into the Conspiracy, and married Isabella, Daughter of the Earl of Warwick.

A. D. ^{1469.} THE Flame of civil War burst out again in Yorkshire, where a Sedition was raised by the Earl of Warwick and his Brothers, on Pretence that the Contributions for the Maintenance of a public Hospital had been misapplied. A Body of 15,000 Men assembled together, under the Command of Sir John Conyers, who marched towards London: But the King sent the Earl of Pembroke, with 16,000 Men, against the Rebels, who came up with them near Banbury in Oxfordshire, where a Battle ensued on the 26th of July; when the Earl of Pembroke was defeated with the Loss of 5000 Men, himself and his Brothers taken Prisoners by the Rebels, who beheaded them at Banbury.

THE People of *Northamptonshire*, following the Example of the *Yorkshiremen*, also assembled in great Numbers, under the Conduct of *Robert Hilliard*, who seized the Earl of *Rivers*, the Queen's Father, and beheaded him at *Northampton*. But the King was so far from suspecting the Duke of *Clarence* and the Earl of *Warwick* had any Concern in raising these Commotions, that he sent them a Commission to raise Troops in the North; who then declared themselves, and got these Troops to own them for their Heads.

THE Duke and Earl marched towards *Warwick*, and the King brought an Army against them. The Nobles interposed, and a Negotiation was set on Foot at *Wolney*, four Miles from *Warwick*: But as the King neglected to guard his Camp, the Earl suddenly attacked it in the Night, took the King Prisoner, and confined him in *Middleham Castle*; from whence he escaped, joined the Lord *Hastings* in *Lancashire*, and returned with some Troops to *London*.

THE King had an Interview with his Brother and the Earl of *Warwick* at *Westminster*; which ended in mutual Reproaches, and both Parties prepared for War: The King retiring to *Canterbury*, and the Duke to *Warwick*, to reassemble their disbanded Forces. *Edward* ordered the Lord *Wells* to be beheaded, because his Son had raised some Troops in *Lincolnshire*, who was determined to revenge the Death of his Father: But he was defeated and taken by the King, near *Stamford*, with the Loss of 10,000 Men, and afterwards beheaded. This Battle was fought on the 13th of *March*, and called the *Battle of Lose-coat Field*; because the Rebels threw off their Coats to run away the lighter. But it ruined the Affairs of the Duke of *Clarence* and the Earl of *Warwick*, who were obliged to fly into *France* for Security; where they were promised an Aid by the *French Monarch*, who also reconciled them to Queen *Margaret*, on Pretence of restoring King *Henry* to the Throne. The Prince of *Wales* was married to *Anne* the youngest Daughter to the Earl of *Warwick*; whereby the Brother of King *Edward* became Brother-in-law of the young Prince of *Lancaster*, and

A.D. and the Earl of *Warwick* became equally allied to both
1470. Houses.

WHILE such formidable Enemies were uniting their Strength and Interest Abroad, *Edward* abandoned himself to Voluptuousness and Sensuality at Home; which gave the Earl of *Warwick* an Opportunity of landing at *Dartmouth*, in *September*, with a Supply of Men and Money from *France*. The Earl was soon at the Head of 60,000 Men, and proclaimed *Henry* the Sixth for lawful King; publishing an Order for all his Subjects to take Arms, and expel the Usurper. King *Edward* also assembled a numerous Army at *Nottingham*; but as his Enemies were advancing, and, the Cry of *King Henry!* was sounded in his Camp, which was deserted by the Marquis of *Montague*, and the Van-Guard of his Army, he thought proper to fly to *Lynn* in *Norfolk*, to embark on board some Ships, with 800 of his Friends, and retire into *Holland*, which was subject to the Duke of *Burgundy*, who had married his Sister *Margaret*. The Duke of *Clarence*, and the Earl of *Warwick*, marched to *London*, which they entered in a triumphant Manner, and released King *Henry* out of the *Tower*, where he had been six Years a Prisoner, and was now restored to the Throne, on the 25th of *October*. Thus *Edward* had his Crown pulled off his Head by the Earl of *Warwick* who had placed it there; while *Henry* remounted the Throne, by the Assistance of him who had obliged him to descend from that Seat of Dignity. Wherefore, the Earl of *Warwick* was commonly called the *King-maker*.

A PARLIAMENT was called to confirm the new Revolution; which was only doing what *Edward* had done before: Though such a Confirmation was of no great Weight in an Affair effected by the military Power, and in which the parliamentary Authority could make no Alteration, at such a Juncture. In all the Contentions between the two Kings, the Parliaments acted with so much Constraint, and with so little Freedom, that their Conduct was regulated by the Prosperity or Adversity of the Prince: So that the Parliament, which, nine Years before, had declared *Henry* an Usurper, and annulled

all

all his Acts; now voted *Edward* a Traitor and Usurper of A. D. the Crown; annulling all the Statutes made in his Reign. 1470. The Crown was confirmed upon *Henry* the Sixth, and his Male Heirs; in Default of which, it was to descend to the Duke of *Clarence* and his Heirs; whereby a Kind of Salic-Law was introduced in *England*, by depriving the Daughters of the House of *Lancaster*, of a Right enjoyed by the Princesses of the Royal Family, ever since the *Norman Conquest*.

THE Duke of *Clarence* and the Earl of *Warwick* were declared Governors of the Kingdom; so that *Henry* was again considered only as the Shadow of a King. The Adherents of King *Edward* were declared Traitors; and as such *John Tiptoft* Earl of *Worcester* was beheaded on *Tower-Hill*: While *Edward* was solliciting Aid from the Duke of *Burgundy*, which he obtained with great Difficulty, though the Succour was little.

EDWARD, with four Ships, and 2000 Men, em-A. D. barked at *Flushing* in *Zealand*; and on the 14th of *March*, 1471. disembarked at *Ravenspur* in *Yorkshire*, where *Henry* the Fourth landed when he came to depose *Richard* the Second. He knew the People were inclined for him, but that the Magistrates were against him; which occasioned him to assume only the Title of Duke of *York*, and to pretend that he only wanted to obtain his private Estate which had been confiscated. This Artifice was attended with Success; it excited the Compassion of the People, and gave him an Opportunity of re-ascending the Throne. He marched into *York*, and his Moderation soon encreased his Army; which encouraged him to march towards *London*.

THE Duke of *Clarence*, and the Earl of *Warwick*, assembled Forces in different Parts, to oppose *Edward*: But the Duke had privately reconciled himself to his Brother, and deserted his Father-in-law, who was encamped near *Coventry*, where *Edward* approached towards him, and was joined by the Duke of *Clarence* with all his Party.

THE Earl of *Warwick* was joined by his Brother the Marquis of *Montague* with a Body of Men from the North: Upon which *Edward* proceeded towards *London*, where

A.D. where the People received him with Acclamations of Joy, 1471. on the 11th of April; and *Henry*, who had not found Means to escape, was again imprisoned in the Tower. The Earl of *Warwick* followed *Edward*, hoping the Citizens of *London* would refuse him Admittance: But, finding his Enemy Master of the Metropolis, he knew he would soon get Possession of the Kingdom, if not prevented by a Defeat in Battle; which the Earl was determined to hazard, preferring the Death of a Soldier, to the Disgrace of a Courtier.

IN this Resolution, the Earl of *Warwick* advanced from *St. Albans* towards *London*, and was met by King *Edward* at *Barnet*, on the 14th of April, being *Easter-Day*; when a terrible Battle was fought, which gave a decisive Blow to the *Lancastrian* Interest. The King had about 9000 Men, and the Earl about 8000: But, after a disputed Trial, from Morning till Noon, Victory inclined to King *Edward*; when the Earl of *Warwick*, with the Marquis of *Montague*, were slain valiantly fighting, with most of their Men: The Lords *Cromwell* and *Say*, being also slain on the Side of *Edward*, who immediately returned to *London*, and was triumphantly received.

THIS Victory put *Edward* in Possession of the Crown: While Queen *Margaret*, who was arrived from *France* in *Dersetshire*, with her Son, received the News of the Defeat and Death of the Earl of *Warwick*; which plunged her in very lamentable Circumstances. She took Sanctuary in the Abbey of *Beaulieu* in *Hampshire*, where she was joined by the Duke of *Somerset*, with the Earls of *Pembroke* and *Devonshire*, who had fled from *Barnet*, and prevailed upon her to put her Son at the Head of an Army; which they undertook to raise in the Western Countries, and in *Wales*.

THE Remainder of the Earl of *Warwick*'s Army having dispersed themselves, were re-assembled by the *Lancastrian* Lords in thirteen Days after the Battle of *Barnet*, with a considerable Body of new Forces. King *Edward* published a Proscription against Queen *Margaret*, her Son, and their principal Adherents: After which, he

he marched his Army against them into Gloucestershire, A. D. and overtook them at Tewksbury, where the Queen wanted to pass the Severn, and retire into Wales, till joined by the Earl of Pembroke. But King Edward, by his Expedition, prevented this Design; and the Queen was obliged to throw Intrenchments round a neighbouring Park; which King Edward on the 4th of May, attacked, forced, and defeated the Lancastrian Troops, who lost 3000 Men, among whom were the Earl of Devonshire, and Sir John Beaufort, Brother to the Duke of Somerset; Queen Margaret, the Prince of Wales, the Duke of Somerset, and the Grand Prior of St. John's being among the Prisoners. The young Prince was Brother to King Edward, and was asked, " why he was so rash to enter the Kingdom in Arms?" to which he replied, " he came to recover his Right, unjustly usurped." This bold Freedom occasioned his sudden Death: Edward struck him with his Gauntlet on the Mouth: After which, the Dukes of Clarence and Gloucester, the Earl of Dorset, and the Lord Hastings, stabbed him with their Daggers; whereby an amiable Prince was barbarously massacred, in the 18th Year of his Age. The Duke of Somerset, and the Grand Prior, were beheaded: But the Queen was confined in the Tower of London, as well as the King her Husband, where she remained a Prisoner four Years, when she was ransomed by her Father for 50,000 Crowns.

THIS was the twelfth Battle, since the Beginning of the Quarrel between the two Houses; and it firmly settled the Line of York on the Throne, till the Earl of Richmond, the only surviving Branch of the House of Lancaster, restored that Line, fourteen Years afterwards.

THOMAS NEVIL the natural Son of Lord Fauconbridge, raised a Commotion in Kent against King Edward. He was at the Head of 17000 Men, and attempted to surprize London: But he was deceived in his Hopes, when he submitted to Edward, who afterwards beheaded him.

KING Henry fell a Victim to the Ambition of his Queen, and was either murdered by the Duke of Gloucester in the Tower, or died with Grief, in the 50th Year

A.D. of his Age. *Philip de Comines* says, that King *Henry* was 1471. a very silly Man, and almost an Innocent. Sir *Francis Bacon* also says, that *Henry* was a simple Man; and that this Simplicity prevented the Pope from canonizing him for his Sanctity. *Habington* observes, that this poor King in so many Turns and Vicissitudes of Fortune, never met with one fully to his Advantage. And *Cambden* remarks that *Henry* was four Times taken Prisoner; being in the End deprived both of his Kingdom and Life. His Body was privately conveyed to the Monastery of *Chertsey* in *Surry*, and was afterwards carried to *Windſor*. However, the Sons of King *Edward* afterwards perished in a more miserable Manner than the Son of *Henry*, and by the same cruel Person, who waded to the Crown through a River of Blood, and was at last killed himself.

THE House of *Lancaster* was now reduced to two Persons only; *Margaret* Daughter to *John Duke of Somerset*, and *Henry Earl of Richmond* her Son. The Grandfather of this Lady was *John Earl of Somerset*, the only Son of *John of Gaunt* by *Catharine Swinford*, his third Wife: She had been married to *Edmund Tudor Earl of Richmond*, half-Brother to *Henry the VIth*: And her Son, who was now in the 14th Year of his Age, afterwards succeeded to the Crown.

THE Earl of *Pembroke* was Uncle to the Earl of *Richmond*, whom King *Edward* was desirous of getting into his Power: But *Pembroke* fled with his Nephew to *France*, and resided at *Vannes* in *Bretagne*: While *Edward* got the Lords Spiritual and Temporal to acknowledge Prince *Edward* his Son, as his apparent Successor.

A.D. 1472. THE Earl of *Oxford* was imprisoned in the Castle of *Hammes* near *Calais*; and the Archbishop of *York* was confined in the Castle of *Guifnes*: The one being Brother, and the other Brother-in-law, to the late Earl of *Warwick*. *Henry Holland*, Duke of *Exeter*, who married King *Edward's* Sister, but adhered to the *Lancastrian* Party, took Sanctuary in *Westminster Abbey* after the Battle of *Barnet*; and flying from thence this Year, was found dead upon the Coast of *Kent*. Besides, *Edward* punished many

many Persons of an inferior Rank, who had taken Arms A. D.
for the House of Lancaster.

1472.

As *Lewis* the XIth, King of *France*, had assisted *Margaret* A. D.
Queen of *England*, *Edward* embraced the first favourable 1475.
Opportunity of being revenged upon that Monarch, by
entering into an Alliance against him with the Duke of
Burgundy, for the Conquest of *France*. He obtained a
Subsidy from the Parliament; and borrowed Money
from his Subjects by Way of *Benevolence*, intimating that
private Persons had lent it him on their own Accord: Af-
ter which, he embarked his Army at *Sandwich*, consisting
of 50,000 Men, and arrived at *Calais* in *July*; leaving
the Prince of *Wales*, only five Years old, Guardian of
the Realm in his Absence. But *Edward* was deceived
by the Duke of *Burgundy*, and made Peace with *Lewis*,
by a Treaty concluded at *Amiens*, without opening the
Campaign: In Consequence of which, the Dauphin
was to marry *Elizabeth*, the eldest Daughter of *Edward*;
the French King was to pay *Edward* a yearly Pension of
50,000 Crowns during his Life; and *Edward* was to re-
lease Queen *Margaret*. The two Kings had an Interview
upon *Pequigny-Bridge*, who swore to observe the Treaty,
and parted well satisfied with each other; after which *Ed-
ward* returned with his Army to *England* in *September*.

EDWARD manifested a great Friendship for the A. D.
Duke of *Bretagne*, whom he desired to deliver up the 1476.
Earl of *Richmond* into his Hands; pretending, he intend-
ed to marry him to one of his Daughters, that the two
Houses might be united; which afterwards happened,
though the Duke of *Bretagne* took the Earl again into his
Protection, after he had delivered him up to the English
Ambassadors. Thus the young Earl was preserved by
Providence, to be the happy Instrument for establishing
the Peace of *England*.

KING *Edward* could never be thoroughly reconciled to
his Brother the Duke of *Clarence*, who was of a haughty A. D.
and ambitious Temper. The Duke of *Gloucester* aug- 1478.
mented this Dislike; and *Clarence*, in his Rage, intima-
ted that *Edward* was a Bastard, and consequently had no
Right to the Crown. This so exasperated the King,
that he was resolved to destroy his Brother, who was

A. D. accused of High Treason, and condemned to die by the
1478. Parliament. All the Favour the Duke of *Clarence* could obtain of his Brother, was to chuse the Manner of his Death; but he was privately drowned in a Butt of Malmsey, and it was industriously reported that he died of immoderate Grief in the Tower. The Duke of *Gloucester* is said to have personally assisted in the Murder of his Brother; But *Edward* was afterwards very sorry for his Death. One of the Charges exhibitted against the Duke, was, that he had asserted, the King made Use of Necromancy, to know the Future: Which Charge was never proved. But how idle and vicious was the Consideration of *Edward*, upon the imagined Prophecy, that *G.* should dispossess his Children of the Crown, to suffer it to influence him so far, as to consent to the Murder of *G.* or *George* Duke of *Clarence*, on a false Surmise that he was meant by the Prediction! Whereas it fell out to be *Gloucester*; to whose Tyranny he left his Children by this ridiculous Fancy, and such a profane extravagant Application of Sorceries, to which that Age was every where too much addicted.

A. D. THE French Monarch was fearful of meeting any Dis-
1479. turbance from the King of *England*; and not only bribed the English Courtiers to persuade *Edward* to pacific Measures, but also agreed to continue the annual Pension of 50,000 Crowns as long as the Truce should continue. At the same Time, *Edward* was so far from meditating War, that he abandoned himself entirely to his Pleasures, with Intention to pass the Residue of his Days in effeminate Sloth, while the King of *France* encouraged the King of *Scotland* to break the Truce with *England*.

A. D. JAMES the Third of *Scotland* was now at Age, and
1482. looked upon as a Tyrant by his People. He had put one of his Brothers to Death, and imprisoned the other, who escaped to *England*, and prevailed upon *Edward* to assist him with an Army to dethrone *James*. The English Monarch took this Opportunity of sending an Army against the King of *Scotland*, who had lately ravaged the English Borders. This Army consisted of 23000 Men, commanded by the Duke of *Gloucester*, who took

Berwick

Berwick and Edinburgh; the former of which was surrendered to the English, and the Peace was renewed. A.D. 1482.

EDWARD found he was deceived by the King of France ever since the Peace of Amiens, and made the necessary Preparations for renewing the War: But he was seized with a Fever, or, as some say, an Apoplexy, which put an End to his Life at Westminster, on the 9th of April, 1483, when he was in the forty-second Year of his Age, and the twenty-third of his Reign. Some Writers accuse the Duke of Gloucester of poisoning the King: Though Philip de Comines says he died with Grief and Vexation, to see himself treacherously treated by Lewis the XIth: But it is more probable that his Death was occasioned by a Surfeit; because he was accustomed to divert his Cares by eating and drinking to a great Excess. He was buried at Windsor, in the Collegiate Chapel begun by him, and finished by the Lord Reginald Bray.

KING Edward was so remarkable for the Beauty of his Person, the Nobleness of his Mein, the Freedom of his Air, and the Affability of his Carriage, that Comines says, he owed his Restoration principally to the Inclination which the Ladies bore for him. In his Youth he was remarkable for Courage and Activity; but afterwards for his Sloth and Luxury. His Liberality was great when he first ascended the Throne; and his Avarice was as great towards the latter End of his Reign: Besides, he has been taxed with Cruelty, Perjury, and Incontinence.

HE had three Sons and eight Daughters, by Elizabeth his Queen: But one Son and two Daughters, died in their Infancy. His surviving Children were Edward his Successor, and Richard Duke of York; Elizabeth, who was afterwards married to Henry the Seventh; Cecily, Anne, Bridget, Mary, and Catharine; the last of whom married William Courtney, Earl of Devonshire.

EDWARD had many Concubines; but especially three, of whom he said, "One was the merriest, the other the wittiest, and the third the holiest in the World." However, he had only two natural Children, and both by Elizabeth Lucy; the one being Arthur, afterwards

wards Viscount *L'Isle*; and the other *Elizabeth* Wife of Sir *Thomas Lumley*: Though the celebrated *Jane Shore* was his favourite Mistress, who was remarkable in this Reign for her Beauty, and in the next for her Misery.

In 1463, the Importation of Woollen Cloths, and most other Things manufactured in *England*, was prohibited. But, in 1468, the King made a Present of some Cotswold Sheep to the King of *Arragon*, which multiplied so much in *Spain*, that the fine Wool there, proved very detrimental to the Woollen-Trade of *England*. *Thomas Littleton*, Judge of the Common-Pleas, flourished in this Reign, who has been always looked upon as the Oracle of the *English* Law. In 1471 the Art of Printing was first brought into *England* by *William Caxton*, of *London*, Mercer. And, in 1478, a dreadful Plague swept off many Thousands of People.

York, with *White Roses*, and with Laurels crown'd,
Trod the *Lancastrian Red-Rose* to the Ground :
But *Edward's* Marriage, *Warwick* fills with Rage,
And War makes *England* once again its Stage.
Edward submits to his superior Fate,
And seeks Protection in a foreign State :
While Captive *Henry* re-ascends the Throne ;
A royal Pageant quickly tumbled down.

Edward returns; receives the Crown again ;
And martial *Warwick* is in Battle slain.
Henry's illustrious Queen, and royal Son,
Are *Edward's* Captives, by his Valour won :
The youthful Prince falls by the Victor's Rage ;
His Father's Murder stains the impious Age ;
While *Clarence* dies to fill the bloody Page. } }

Edward voluptuously in Peace reclines,
Till *France* provokes him, and in War he shines :
But e'er his Rage on *Gallia's* Shore was hurl'd,
Death snatch'd him from his Vengeance, and the
World.

XVII. EDWARD V, *the thirty-seventh King of England, the seventeenth from the Norman Conquest, and the second of the Line of York.*

HAD the Duke of *Clarence* lived, the Duke of *Gloucestera. D.* would never have thought of sacrificing the 1483. Children of King *Edward*, as he did, to his Ambition. After the Death of *Edward* the Fourth, his eldest Son was proclaimed King by the Name of *Edward* the Fifth; being then in the twelfth Year of his Age, and his Brother the Duke of *York* in his ninth. But as their Father, by bestowing many Honours on the Relations and Friends of their Mother, had created a Distinction between the *ancient* and the *new* Nobility; it occasioned a Division among the Courtiers, which subsisted after his Death, by the Artifices of his Brother the Duke of *Gloucester*; who thought of nothing but aspiring to the Crown; and like a rapacious Wolf, sat meditating the Murder of two innocent Lambs.

ANTHONY WOODVILLE, Earl of *Rivers*, was Brother to the Queen, and Guardian to the young King. Several others of his Family were of the new Nobility, and enjoyed most of the lucrative Posts; whereby they became possessed of all the executive Power in the Kingdom. But the Duke of *Gloucester* prevailed upon *Henry Stafford* Duke of *Buckingham*; the Lord *Hastings*, Lord High-Chamberlain; and the Lord *Stanley*, to oppose the *Woodville* Family, and get the Person of the young King into his Custody: In which he succeeded, and afterwards put the two first of those Noblemen to Death, reserving the last to deprive him of the Crown, which he most unjustly acquired.

THE young King was at *Ludlow* when his Father died; and the Duke of *Gloucester* was at *York*: But the latter prevailed upon the Earl of *Rivers* to bring the former

A. D. mer up to *London*, to be crowned without any considerable
1483. Attendance. This was only a Plot laid by the Duke of *Gloucester* and the Duke of *Buckingham* to get the King into their Hands; which they affected at *Stony-Stratford*, and put the Earl of *Rivers* under a close Arrest, together with the Lord *Grey*, half Brother to the King, Sir *Thomas Vaughan*, and Sir *Richard Haunſe*, who were confined in *Pontefract-Castle*, only to be put to Death in a public Manner: While the King was conducted to *London*, to share their Fate in a private Way.

THE Queen, with the Duke of *York*, took Sanctuary in the Precincts of *Westminster-Abbey*; and the Citizens of *London* imagined that the Duke of *Gloucester* intended to keep the King from his Coronation: But he had the Address to deceive them, though their Suspicions were true. The young King was lodged in the Palace belonging to the Bishop of *London*; where, on the 4th of *May*, he received the Oaths of Fidelity from the principal Nobility; and the Duke of *Gloucester* was made Protector of the King, and Kingdom; who also obliged the Queen to resign the Duke of *York* into his Hands, and sent him to accompany the King his Brother in the Tower, under the Pretence of preparing for the Coronation.

THE Protector was now able to reach the Fruit of his Ambition, by his Perfidy and Dissimulation. All the Places at Court were bestowed on his Creatures: The Duke of *Buckingham* prostituted himself to all his atrocious Purposes; but the Lords *Hastings* and *Stanley* had more Honour and Integrity; being strongly attached to the young King, though they opposed the Relations of the Queen. The Duke was offended at the Loyalty of *Hastings*, and ordered him to be beheaded in the Tower on the 13th of *June*; being the same Day that he ordered the Lords to be beheaded at *Pontefract*; who all suffered illegal Deaths, as they were never brought to any legal Trial. As Lord *Hastings* was greatly beloved by the People, the Duke of *Gloucester* apologized to the Lord Mayor for putting him to Death in this summary Manner; and pretended to the Magistrate that the Ambition of *Hastings* endangered the Safety of the Kingdom: Though that

that unhappy Lord was arrested in Council, on a Charge A.D.
of Sorcery, in Conjunction with the Queen and Jane 1483.
Shore, to take away the Life of the Protector, in wasting
his Flesh by degrees. The Archbishop of York, the
Bishop of Ely, and Lord Stanley, were confined Prisoners.
The Protector also arrested the beautiful and unhappy
Shore; once the happy Wife of a considerable Merchant,
next the adored Mistress of a powerful King, and afterwards
the fair Adulteress of the noble Hastings. She was
charged with Treason and Witchcraft; but her Punish-
ment ended in a Penance; for her only Crime was Incon-
tinence. The Protector would have taken her Life;
if he had not been afraid of incensing the Citizens: He
stript her of her little Fortune, and threw her into great
Necessity: However, she did not perish for Want, accord-
ing to the common Report; but was alive in the Reign
of Henry the Eighth.

THE Duke of Clarence lost his Life, for only hinting,
that his Brother Edward was a Bastard: But the Duke of
Gloucester to obtain his Crown, publickly endeavoured to
establish that Belief, as also that the Children of the late
King were illegitimate. The Duke of Buckingham was
employed to harrangue the Magistracy of London, to re-
ceive Richard for their King: The Mayor and many of
the Citizens were corrupted to his Interest; and though
only a few venal Voices approved of such a Measure,
Buckingham termed it an universal Consent. This was
looked upon as the Election of the People; because the
Protector was unwilling to trust his Cause to the Parlia-
ment, though he had influenced many of the Nobility.
To conclude this solemn Farce, the Lord-Mayor and
Aldermen were introduced to the Protector; when an Of-
fer of the Succession was tendered to him, and he was de-
sired to accept of the Crown; which he had at first hypo-
critically declined, and afterwards most infamously re-
ceived.

THE Protector ascended the Throne; and his two royal
Nephews were soon afterwards barbarously murdered in
the Tower, by Miles Forest and John Digton, who were
employed to execute that black Purpose by Sir James Tyr.
rel,

A. D. *rel.*, the base Instrument of *Richard*. The two Ruffians
1483. are said to have entered the Apartment where the two
Princes lay, and smother them in their Bed-Cloaths,
while they were asleep: After which, they were buried
under a Stair-Case in the Tower; where their Bones were
discovered 191 Years afterwards; when, by Order of King
Charles the Second, they were removed to *Westminster-*
Abbey, and interred among the many Remains of depart-
ed Royalty. But Providence has a watchful Eye over
such horrid Treason, and seldom fails to punish such
wicked Traitors. Perhaps the Vices of the *English* Na-
tion, which at this Time were very great, occasioned
Heaven to send *Richard* as a Scourge for the Sins of the
People: But the Tyrant, and his Tool *Buckingham*, with
the Murderers of the young Princes, afterwards paid for
their Crimes.

EDWARD the Fifth to Empire born and bred,
Ne'er wore the Crown that grac'd his Father's Head.
Monster of Nature! bloody *Glo'ster* tries
To mount the Throne, by whom young Edward dies:
Nor him alone, another Nephew falls;
Whose cruel End for speedy Vengeance calls.
Hastings is slain: Richard the Crown obtains;
And the *Protector*, an Usurper, reigns.
Blest Princes! England still your Names reveres;
And o'er your Urn still pours a Mother's Tears:
Your friendless Youth, and your unhappy Fate,
Make us the Tyranny, and Tyrant hate.

XVIII. RICHARD III. surnamed Crook-back'd, the thirty eighth King of England, the eighteenth from the Norman Conquest, and the third of the Line of York.

THE Murder of Princes is generally fatal to their Murderers, or to the Countries where they govern. Thus the Destruction of *Mustapha*, by his Father *Solyman*, had like to have caused the Ruin of the Turkish Empire: And the Death of *Crispus*, by his Father *Constantine the Great*, was followed by the violent Death of the Father. The Destruction of *Demetrius*, Son to *Philip the Second of Macedon*, turned also upon the Father, who died of Repentance. The Murder of *Arthur Duke of Bretagne*, by his Uncle *John King of England*, was attended with its Punishment on the Uncle, who likewise died of Grief: And the Murders of his two Nephews by *Richard the Third*, were followed by the violent Death of the Uncle.

THE Duke of *Gloucester* was proclaimed King on the A. D. 20th of June, by the Name of *Richard the Third*: But 1483. he delayed the Ceremony of his Coronation till the 6th of July, when it was performed with great Solemnity, at *Westminster*. He was now in the 32^d Year of his Age; and, as he had ascended the Throne by Injustice and Violence, he was determined to keep Possession of it by Murder and Dissimulation. Therefore he caused his two Nephews to be destroyed in the Tower; and endeavoured to win the Friendship of foreign Princes, to preclude *Henry Earl of Richmond*, the only surviving Branch of the *Lancastrian Family*, from obtaining their Assistance.

As *Edward the Fourth* was involved in great Trouble by the Disrespect he had shewn to the Earl of *Warwick*; so *Richard the Third* was thrown into great Perplexity by flighting the Duke of *Buckingham*: For both these Kings obtained the Crown by the Assistance of those Noblemen,

A.D. men, whose Resentment was so great that they endeavoured to dethrone the ungrateful Princes: But both
1483. Lords perished in their Attempts. When *Richard* was Protector, he promised *Buckingham* to restore him to the Moiety of the *Hereford* Estate, which he claimed as the Great-Grandson of *Anne*, one of the Coheiresses of *Humphry Bohun* Earl of *Hereford* and *Northampton*, the Wife of *Thomas of Woodstock*, Earl of *Gloucester*, Son of *Edward the Third*: But when *Richard* became King, he refused to comply with his Promise, because the *Hereford* Estate was annexed to the Crown by *Henry the IVth*. The Duke of *Buckingham* was proud, ambitious, and revengeful: He was in a Manner Master of *Wales*, and the adjoining Countries, by the Posts and Governments given him in those Parts: So that he had it in his Power, and soon took upon him to raise an Insurrection.

FULL of these sinister Thoughts, the Duke retired to his Castle of *Brecknock*, where Doctor *Morton* Bishop of *Ely* was Prisoner under his Custody; with whom he formed the Project of assisting *Henry Earl of Richmond*, restoring the House of *Lancaster* to the Throne, and marrying that Prince to *Elizabeth* eldest Daughter of *Edward the IVth*; whereby all the Seeds of the Civil Wars would be destroyed in the Union of the two Houses. This Scheme was imparted to *Elizabeth* Widow of *Edward the IVth*, and *Margaret* the Mother of the Earl of *Richmond*, who concurred in the Plot; in which several Lords and Gentlemen also readily engaged.

THE Earl of *Richmond* was then at *Vannes* in *Bretagne*, where his Mother sent him Intelligence of what had happened in *England*, desiring he would speedily land in *Wales*. The Earl was a Kind of Prisoner to the Duke of *Bretagne*: But he communicated the Secret to him, and the Duke promised him Assistance; because the violent Actions of *Richard* had rendered him odious to all the Princes of *Europe*.

THE Duke of *Buckingham* was acquainted by the Earl, of what pass'd in *Bretagne*, which soon put all the Conspirators in Motion. The King suspected a Conspiracy, and sent for *Buckingham* to Court, who refused to go, and took

took up Arms. He collected his Forces in *Wales*, and A.D. began to march towards the Western Counties: But 1483. the *Severn* rose with such an Inundation that he was unable to pass that River, and his Army dispersed; leaving the Duke only with a single Servant.

In this melancholy Condition, the Duke retired into *Shropshire*, and secured himself in the House of *Ralph Banister*; who had been his Servant, and received many Favours from his Master. But the King issued out a Proclamation against the Duke, promising a Reward of 1000*l.* to any Person who should bring him to Justice: Which induced *Banister* villainously to betray his Master, who was seized by the Sheriff, and beheaded at *Brewerbury*, without any legal Process, though he was of the Blood-Royal. However, the Destruction of *Buckingham*, though it impeded, was far from ruining the Cause of *Richmond*.

THE Earl of *Richmond* sailed from *St. Maloe's*, on the 12th of October, with 5000 Men and 40 Ships, furnished by the Duke of *Bretagne*: But the Fleet was dispersed, and the Earl obliged to return to *Bretagne*, where he was joined by many of his persecuted Friends from *England*. In the mean Time, *Richard* sacrificed several Persons to his Vengeance; particularly Sir *Thomas St. Leger* his Brother-in-law, who married his Sister *Anne*, Widow to the Duke of *Exeter*. But, to avoid the usual Formalities of Law, he commissioned Sir *Ralph Ashton* to exercise the Office of Vice Constable, with Power to execute upon the Spot, all Persons guilty, or suspected of High Treason; and *Ashton* went into the Western Countries, where he signalized his Zeal by such bloody Executions, as were formerly practised by *Tresilian*, and afterwards by *Jeffries*.

THE Parliament declared the Issue of *Edward the IVth* A.D. illegitimate, confirmed the irregular Election of *Richard*, 1484. and attainted the Earl of *Richmond* with all his Adherents. *Sir William Collingburn* was executed as a Traitor for writing the following satirical Dystic on the King and his Favourites, the Viscount *Lovel*, Sir *Richard Ratcliffe*, and Sir *William Catesby*:

" The

A.D.
1484.

“ The Rat, the Cat, and Livel the Dog,
“ Rule all England under a Hog.”

RICHARD also attempted to get the Earl of *Richmond* surrendered up by the Duke of *Bretagne*; and renewed the Truce with *Scotland*: But the Earl of *Richmond* escaped into *France*, where he was honourably entertained by *Charles* the Eighth, and received Assurances of Assistance from several Lords in *England*. About this Time *Richard* discovered that the Projects in Favour of the Earl of *Richmond*, were founded upon his Promise to marry *Elizabeth*: He therefore resolved to marry that Princess himself, though she was his own Niece, and notwithstanding he had a Wife already. To accomplish this End, he artfully prevailed upon the Widow of *Edward* the Fourth to quit her Sanctuary, and put her Daughters under his Protection: He then caused the Death of his Queen; whose Fate would have been more worthy of Pity, if she had not married the Murderer of the Prince of *Wales* her first Husband, Son of *Henry* the Sixth: After which, he immediately made his Addresses to the Princess *Elizabeth*, who answered him in such a Manner as shewed her Abhorrence of such an Union.

A.D. 1485. *RICHARD* had fitted out a Fleet to oppose the Passage of the Earl of *Richmond*, if he endeavoured to make another Descent: But, imagining he could obtain no farther Assistance from *Bretagne*, he laid up his Ships, which encouraged the Earl of *Richmond* to think of renewing his Invasion. The Earl procured an Aid of 2000 wretched Troops, some Money, and a few Ships from *France*; with which he set sail from *Harfleur*, on the 31st of *July*, and landed at *Milford-haven* in *Pembroke*sire on the 6th of *August*. He immediately began his March through *Wales* towards *Shrewsbury*, without Opposition; being joined in his March by Sir *Rice ap Thomas*, and other Gentlemen, with a considerable Body of *Welshmen*; who chearfully espoused his Cause, because the Earl was of *Welsh Extraction*, and of one of the most ancient Families of the Country.

THE Earl of *Richmond* arrived at *Shrewsbury* without A. D. any Molestation, where he was joined by Sir *George Talbot* 1485. with 2000 Men. The King levied an Army, and was posted at *Nottingham*: But finding the Earl was marching to *London*, he resolved to expect him upon his Route between *Leicester* and *Coventry*, to give him Battle. The Earl was equally desirous of fighting, and marched directly towards the King, many of whose Officers deserted to his Rival.

THE Earl was at *Tamworth*, and the King at *Leicester*: They advanced to meet each other, and both Armies met at *Bosworth*, on the 22^d of *August*, being the Day famous for the Battle which decided the Quarrel of the two contending Houses. The King had 13000 Men, commanded by himself, and the Duke of *Norfolk*: But the Earl had only 5000 commanded by himself, and the Earl of *Oxford*. The Battle began with a Shower of Arrows. Immediately, upon this, the Lord *Stanley* and his Brother joined the Earl of *Richmond* with fresh Troops enough to make his Army little inferior to that of the Enemy; which gave the Earl of *Richmond* the Victory, after a Dispute of two Hours, wherein he was engaged Hand to Hand with *Richard*. The King found the Day was lost, rushed in the Midst of his Enemies, and died bravely with his Sword in his Hand; which was the only glorious Action of his Reign. The Earl of *Richmond* lost but 100 Men, of whom Sir *William Brandon*, his Standard-Bearer, was the only Person of Note. But the King had 1000 Men slain with himself, among whom were the Duke of *Norfolk*, and Lord *Forest*: The Earl of *Surry*, Son of the Duke of *Norfolk*, was taken Prisoner, and afterwards released; but *Catesby*, and some others, were executed at *Leicester*.

RICHARD died with his Crown on his Head, which was found by a Soldier, and immediately placed upon the Earl of *Richmond*'s Head, by his Father-in-law the Lord *Stanley*; who congratulated him upon his Victory, and saluted him King: From which Time, *Henry* acted as a Sovereign. The Body of *Richard* was found entirely naked, covered with Blood and Dirt: In which Condi-

Condition it was thrown across a Horse, and carried to *Leicester*, where it was interred without any Ceremony; and his Stone-Coffin was afterwards made a Drinking-Trough for Horses at a public Inn.

Thus perished *Richard the Third*, after an infamous Reign of two Years, and in the 34th Year of his Age. He was surnamed *Crook-backed*, because he was so in reality; and one of his Arms was almost withered. His Ambition prompted him to all the Excesses of Treachery and Cruelty. He had a solid Judgment, and a valiant Heart. Perhaps, like *Augustus Cæsar*, he might have ruled his People like a good Sovereign, after paving his Way to Empire like a Tyrant. It is certain he made several salutary Laws: But Sir *Francis Bacon* says, “ They were but the Brocage of an Usurper, thereby to win the Hearts of the People, as being conscious to himself that the true Obligations of Sovereignty failed in him.”

THE Battle of *Bosworth* was the thirteenth during the Civil-Wars between the Houses of *York* and *Lancaster*, which continued thirty Years, and destroyed most of the Nobility, with near 150,000 common *Englishmen*. *Richard* left only one natural Son at his Death: whereby the *Anjouvin* Race of Kings, surnamed *Plantagenet*, or *Broom-stalk*, expired; after fourteen Monarchs of that Line had sat on the *English* Throne 330 Years.

*England's third Richard Royalty prophanes,
And by accumulated Murder reigns.
Pernicious Thirst of Pow'r! The Lives of Kings,
And Princes, seem to *Richard* trivial Things,
Compar'd to his Ambition! See the Fate
Of Tyrants, where fair Freedom keeps her Seat.
Soon *Buckingham* revolts: But, as he tries
To succour *England*, miserably dies.*

*Yet *Richmond Henry*, the *Lancastrian* Heir,
Appears to *England* like its Morning-Star.
In *Bosworth's* fatal Field lies *Richard* low,
And *Henry* wears the Crown upon his Brow.*

Thus

Thus ends the Lineage of *Plantagenet* ;
Their Race of Glory, and Dishonour sett :
Heroes or Tyrants as the Age appear'd,
No more lamented, and no longer fear'd.
Another Line, resplendent, fills the Throne :
The Arts and Muses make the Reign their own.
Soon *Civil Discord* quits the peaceful Plains ;
Soon Joy and Plenty bless the happy Swains :
Secure their Herds may graze, their Flocks may feed,
While Peace and Plenty dance around the Mead.

The END of the FIRST VOLUME.



16 MA 64



BOOKS Printed for, and Sold by J. NEWBE-
RY at the Bible and Sun in St. Paul's
Church-Yard, London.

I. TRAVELS through Turkey in Asia; the Holy-Land, Arabia, Egypt, and other Parts of the World; giving a particular and faithful Account of what is most remarkable in the Manners, Religion, Polity, Antiquities, and Natural History of those Countries: With a curious Description of Jerusalem, as it now appears, and other Places mentioned in the Holy Scriptures.

By CHARLES THOMSON, Esq;

Interspersed with Remarks of several other modern Travellers; illustrated with Notes, Historical, Geographical, and Miscellaneous, by the Editor, and adorned with Maps and Prints. In two Pocket Volumes. Price Six Shillings bound in Calf, the Maps neatly coloured.

N. B. This Book (which is not only an agreeable Companion for Ladies and Gentlemen, but is likewise very necessary for every Family, as it will illustrate and explain various Passages in the Old and New Testament) is adorned with the following Maps and Prints. viz. 1. A View of Smyrna. 2. St. John's Grotto, and the Chapel of the Hermitage in the Island of Patmos. 3. A View of Balbeck, and its Temple. 4. A Map of the Terrestrial Paradise, according to Mr. Huet and others. 5. A Map of the Holy-Land. 6. A View of the City of Jerusalem as it now appears. 7. A Plan of the City and Country about Jerusalem. 8. The Church of the Holy Sepulchre. 9. A Map of Egypt. 10. A View of the Pyramids, the Sphinx, and some Egyptian-Mummies. 11. Views of Mount Sinai, Tabor, Carmel, Horeb; the Rock of Meribah-Kadash, and the Hill of Moses.

II. A POCKET DICTIONARY or complete ENGLISH EXPOSITOR: Shewing readily the Part of Speech to which each Word belongs; its true Meaning, when not self-evident; its various Senses, if more than one, placed in proper Order; and the Language from whence it is derived, pointed out immediately after the Explication.

Also, the Technical Terms are clearly explained; every Word is so accented, that there can be no Uncertainty as to the Pronunciation.

And the Names of the Cities and principal Towns, their Distance from *London*, their Market Days, and Fairs, according to the NEW STYLE, are alphabetically interspersed; with other useful Articles.

To render this Book complete, many modern Words are introduced, which are not to be found in other Dictionaries; and to make it more concise and portable, such Words are omitted, as being neither properly *English*, nor ever used by good Authors, would only serve to mislead and embarrass the Learner.

A Work entirely new, and designed for the YOUTH of both Sexes, the LADIES and PERSONS in BUSINESS.

To which is prefixed an INTRODUCTION, containing an History of the *English* Language, with a compendious Grammar: And a Recommendation of the Manuscript Copy, in a LETTER from Dr. BEVIS to the Publisher. Price bound three Shillings.

Mέγας Βιβλίον, μέγας Καχεών.

III. The Gentleman, Tradesman, and Traveller's POCKET LIBRARY: Containing, 1. A short System of Geography. 2. The political History of *Europe*. 3. A View of the Constitution of *Great-Britain*. 4. A List of the House of Peers. 5. Of Superscriptions and Form of Address. 6. A List of the Places at Court, and their respective Salaries. 7. A Description of *England*. 8. The most remarkable Curiosities in *Great-Britain* and *Ireland*. 9. A Description of *London*, with a List of the Companies. 10. The Passage of Letters to and from the General and Penny-Post-Office. 11. Rates of Hackney-Coachers, Chairmen, Carmen, and Watermen. 12. The History

History and Rationale of the Stocks or public Funds.
13. Forms of Receipts, Notes, inland and foreign Bills
of Exchange, &c. 14. Law Forms of general Use.
15. The Weight and Value of Foreign Gold and Silver
Coins. 16. Of the Knowledge of Mankind. 17. The
Prices of the different Works of Bricklayers, Masons,
Carpenters, Joiners, Carvers, Plumbers, Slaters, Paint-
ers, Plaisterers, Paviors, and Smiths. 18. Of the Ma-
nagement of Horses, particularly when on a Journey,
and Receipts for curing the Diseases to which they are
subject. 19. A List of the Stage-Coaches and Carriers
in Great-Britain. 20. Directions for those who travel in-
to foreign Countries, with Dialogues in several European
Languages for their Use. 21. Some Account of the prin-
cipal Curiosities in Europe, Asia, Africa, and America.
By a GENTLEMAN of the BANK of England. To which
are added, correct TABLES for the Use of all who are
concerned in Trade and Business. By J. BARROW, Au-
thor of *Navigatio Britannica*. Illustrated with SIX MAPS,
by E. Bowen, Geographer to HIS MAJESTY.

IV. THE NEW TESTAMENT adapted to
the CAPACITIES of CHILDREN. To which is added an
Historical Account of the Lives, Actions, Travels, Suf-
ferings, and Death of the APOSTLES and EVANGELISTS,
viz. St. Peter, St. Paul, St. James the Great, St. John,
St. Andrew, St. Philip, St. Thomas, St. Bartholomew,
St. Matthew, St. James the Less, St. Simon, St. Jude,
St. Matthias, St. Barnabas, St. Mark, St. Luke, St.
Stephen. Neatly bound in Red, Price Two Shillings
and Six-Pence, adorned with Cuts, designed by the cele-
brated Raphael, and engraved by Mr. Walker. With a
Preface setting forth the Nature and Necessity of the Work.

BOOKS Printed for and Sold by W. OWEN,
at Homer's Head near Temple-Bar, in
Fleet-street, London.

I. SEVERAL DISCOURSES preached at
the Temple Church, by *Thomas Sherlock*, D. D.
late Master of the Temple, now Lord Bishop of London.
In two Volumes Octavo, Price bound 10*s.*

II. THE DREAMER. Beautifully printed in one
Volume Octavo. Price bound 6*s.* with the Translation
of the Latin Epistle.

III. AN INTRODUCTION of the ENGLISH LANGUAGE
and LEARNING. In three Parts.

Part I. A SPELLING-BOOK of ARTS and SCIENCES;
containing Alphabets of all the Words in the following
Sciences; viz. Theology, Ethics, Grammar, Rhetoric,
Logic, Poetry, Mythology, Philosophy, Geography,
Astronomy, Arithmetic, Algebra, Geometry, Mathematics,
Mechanics, Anatomy, Physic, Chemistry, Pharmacy,
Botany, Jurisprudence, and Heraldry. Disposed
in a Method entirely new; with the Rules of true Pro-
nunciation and Spelling.

Part II. THE RUDIMENTS of ENGLISH GRAMMAR.
With the Rules of Orthography, Construction, Empha-
sis, and a just Elocution.

Part III. LESSONS ON ALL THE ABOVE-MENTIONED
SCIENCES; containing a particular Description of each,
by Way of Exercise, or PRAXIS, to enable the Scholar
to read justly and judiciously on any Subject whatsoever.
With a Preface, shewing, that nothing short of the Me-
thod here can be sufficient for a Plan of Genuine *English*
Education. By BENJAMIN MARTIN. Neatly printed
in a Pocket Volume, addressed to the Masters of English
Schools, and Tutors of Youth in private Families in
Great-Britain and Ireland. Price bound in Calf 2*s.* 6*d.*
or in Sheep 2*s.*

IV. A DISSERTATION on the USE of SEA-WATER
in the Diseases of the Glands; particularly, the Scurvy,
Jaundice,

Jaundice, King's Evil, Leprosy, and the Glandular Consumption. Translated from the Latin of R. RUSSELL, M. D. The second Edition, revised, and carefully corrected by an eminent Physician. Price bound 2s. 6d.

V. A LADY'S RELIGION, in Two LETTERS to the Honourable Lady HOWARD. The third Edition. By a Divine of the Church of ENGLAND. To which is added, a LETTER to a LADY, on the Death of her Husband, by the Editor. Neatly printed in a Pocket Volume, Price bound 1s. 6d.

VI. The THEORY of agreeable SENSATIONS: In which, after the Laws observed by Nature, in the Distribution of Pleasure are discovered, the Principles of Natural Theology and Moral Philosophy are established. To which is subjoined, relative to the same Subject, a Dissertation on Harmony of Style. Price bound 2s.

VII. The HISTORY of the Life and Adventures of Mr. ANDERSON, compiled from his own Papers, containing his strange Varieties of Fortune in *Europe* and *America*. The second Edition, neatly printed in a Pocket Volume. Price bound 3s.

VIII. The TEMPLE BEAU, or the TOWN COQUETS. A Novel. By a Person of Quality. Price bound 2s. 6d.

IX. The THEORY of the MOTION of the APSIDES in general, and of the APSIDES of the Moon's ORBIT in particular. Translated into *English*, and carefully revised and corrected by Mr. EMERSON. Illustrated with Figures. Price 1s. 6d.

X. A New UNIVERSAL COLLECTION of Voyages and Travels. Consisting of the most esteemed Relations which have been hitherto published in all Languages. Containing every Thing remarkable in the various Parts of the known World. Also the Customs and Manners of the several Inhabitants. Illustrated with MAPS, PLANS, and other COPPER PLATES, neatly engraved. In three Volumes. Price bound 10s. 6d.

XI. The

XI. The REMARKABLE and ENTERTAINING HISTORY of the twenty-three Years Captivity and Adventures, among the Moors in *Barbary*, of THOMAS PELLOW, of *Penryn*, in the County of *Cornwall*, who was taken by the *Sallee Rovers*, and carried into Slavery to *Mequinez*, at eleven Years of Age. Price 3*s.*

XII. WINTER-EVENINGS ENTERTAINMENT: Consisting of the best Novels and Histories that could be collected from the best Writers of various Countries; among which is the celebrated History of *Theagenes* and *Chariclea*, allowed by all good Judges, to be the most entertaining and best calculated Novel ever published; and is a very proper Supplement to Dr. *Croxall's Collection*. Neatly printed, in Two Pocket Volumes. Price bound Six Shillings.

XIII. MOTIVES and INCENTIVES to the Love of GOD, pathetically discoursed of in such a Manner, as may excite the warmest Devotion, and most fervent Love towards GOD. In a Letter from the Hon. ROBERT BOYLE to a young Gentleman, for whom he had a great Value. Price 2*s. 6d.*

XIV. The LIFE, AMOURS, and ADVENTURES of OWEN TUDOR, Prince of *Wales*, who married CATHARINE Princess of *France*, and Widow to our Great King HENRY the Vth. Price 2*s.* bound.

A WARNING-PIECE against the Crime of Murder; or, an Account of many extraordinary and most providential Discoveries of secret Murders. From whence it will appear, that however secretly they are committed, Providence will interpose, and bring them to Light and Punishment.

16 MA 64

XV. Just published (Price only 2*s. 6d.* bound) earnestly recommended to all Families, (being very proper to be read at this Time, as so many of late Years have been tempted to commit this horrid Crime, upon the Supposition of their being able to do it so secretly, that it should never come to Light.)

